





# CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 08

*Drunk Tiger*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

**Drunken Tiger**

(醉虎)

# Synopsis

---

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 701: The Three-in-One Strength

---

"Nice to see you, Demon General!" Lin Changjiang smiled.

Although the distances between the 3 knights remained unchanged relatively, actually, all of them were moving rapidly in the air. The Demon General always stayed ahead of the super demon corps.

"Three-in-One Strength!" The Demon General uttered a muffled voice through the air holes on its mask. It carried the bizarre sense of metal resonance. Commoners might feel disgusting when they heard this sound.

"We could only use three-in-one tactic to deal with Demon General!" Lin Changjiang said.

The other two human knights remained silent as they just stared at Demon General.

"I've not imagined that I could fall into your trap once again after the event in Nein City. I really wonder how did you know I would raid Upton City."

"It's simple. Your plan is exposed to us through our moles in Three-eye Association! What could be promised by demons could also be increased 10 times by us." Lin Changjiang explained calmly.

After hearing this, Demon General slightly narrowed his eyes. Whereas, after only 2 seconds, Demon General had burst out laughing, "I was almost fooled!"

"Really? Are you sure that I don't know that my lie would be seen through by you right away?" Lin Changjiang's eyes were filled with profound and mysterious brilliance.

The red light flickered in Demon General's eyes, "I admit that I have indeed belittled you this time!"

"It's the second time for you to belittle us!"

"Lin Changjiang..." Demon General's voice instantly became icy while the red light in his eyes turned dangerous at once, "One day, I will chop off all the males' heads in your clans and string them together as my collection. All the females in your clans will be my slaves and playthings. Don't you humans hate clans of Three-eye Association? I will have all the females in your clans give birth to my descendants and have their offsprings as the new clans of Three-eye Association. Hahahaha..."

After hearing this, Lin Changjiang threw a solemn look as he said, "It depends on whether you can survive today!"

"Let's see who survives today!" The Demon General instantly accelerated as he launched the severe battle...

...

The super demon corps moved too fast to be caught up by airships even against the wind. However, it was a piece of cake for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie arrived at the initial battlefield and saw a lot of burning corpses of demon fighters and many other corpses that looked bizarre. After counting it silently, Zhang Tie estimated that at least 5,000-6,000 demon fighters were killed here.

When he met those who had not completely died, Zhang Tie released his palm bolts to end their lives quickly.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was wearing a special band-waist which was filled with about 1,000 palm bolts. Hanging on Zhang Tie's body, they formed a special armor.

It was the most efficient way to kill those iron-armored demons between LV 9 to LV 12. Within 100 m, Zhang Tie could definitely hit over 20 targets per second. This was really a sharp weapon on the battlefield.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't know that all the powerhouses above battle spirits in the super demon corps were busy with their

own affairs.

After passing over that battlefield, within 5 minutes, Zhang Tie had already caught up with the tail of the super demon corps.

'God helps me.' Zhang Tie exclaimed inside after realizing that no powerhouses of super demon corps had paid attention to him. It was more like a customized chance for him.

'Fruit of source, here I come!'

After exclaiming inside, Zhang Tie kept releasing his palm bolts and exploded more than 20 iron-armored demons in a split second. Before the other iron-armored demons in the end of the formation realized what happened, Zhang Tie immediately rushed into the formation of the super demon corps and started his cool massacre.

At this moment, the moving speed of the super demon corps was mainly determined by LV 9 iron-armored demons. Although they moved faster than commoners, they were crawling as slowly as tortoises in Zhang Tie's knight's consciousness. When Zhang Tie was LV 9, he could already easily kill a small team of iron-armored demons, not to mention now.

With the terrifying speed and the destruction of his palm bolts, Zhang Tie felt as overwhelming as a baby shark breaking in a swarm of tadpoles. Wherever he went, all the iron-armored demons within 200 sq m were his targets.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was more like an unrivaled firepower output platform. In that case, even a knight could not match Zhang Tie's efficiency in diminishing iron-armored demons.

After activating his skill "mental arithmetic by abacus", Zhang Tie targeted at iron-armored demons on his left and right sides at the same time while palm bolts flew off his two hands at the same time, making him a terrifying humanoid battery.

During the 2 minutes, Zhang Tie shocked all the others, either demons or humans. None of them could imagine such a freak.



During the 2 minutes, Zhang Tie kept rushing forward as he kept releasing his palm bolts. He would release 7-16 palm bolts per second from each hand. As a result, wherever he passed by was always accompanied by the cracking sounds of crackers...

Mainly, Zhang Tie would kill each target with only one palm bolt. If he failed to do that, it indicated that the target was above LV 12; he would then never waste his time and energy to release the 2nd palm bolt towards the same target; instead, he would get rid of that target as fast as possible. After that, he would continue to kill those weaker ones below LV 12 within 200 sq m.

What an extremely wretched and terrifying tactic!

In usual days, Zhang Tie would never have such a chance. He might have already been chased away awkwardly by any demon powerhouse above battle spirit before he got close to the super demon corps. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie caught the God-given opportunity and created an amazing meritorious deed.

Only in 2 minutes, Zhang Tie had already released all the 1,000-odd palm bolts. Almost 1,000 iron-armored demons fell on the ground. The tail of the super demon corps was severely destroyed. Certainly, Zhang Tie was followed by a big tail, which was composed of LV 13-14 demon powerhouses. Nevertheless, Zhang Tie just ignored them. As they could not catch up with Zhang Tie, they could only growl towards Zhang Tie's back with furious looks...

At the sight of this, everybody else was shocked inside, even human and demon knights...

'Who's that guy?'

At the sight of this, Demon General, who was surrounded by 3 human knights, was instantly driven mad that he even wanted to dive down there and tore Zhang Tie into pieces.

By contrast, noticing Zhang Tie's excellent performance, the Lan

elder was also extremely stunned.

'Zhang Tie...'

A name flashed across Lan elder's mind. As the 3 human powerhouses were in a three-in-one state, their knights' consciousness were closely connected with each other. Therefore, Lin Changjiang and that knight from Norman Empire also knew that the human elite on the ground was Zhang Tie.

'Selnes Eagle?'

'Yes!'

Zhang Tie attacked the super demon corps together with 10 human knights across Blackson Humans Corridor and killed over 1,000 enemies individually, namely 1/100 of the entire battle force of the super demon corps. After this battle, Zhang Tie had become a legendary person while his name was well-known across the Blackson Humans Corridor.

After using up his palm bolts, Zhang Tie started to release his Iron-blood punches like shells. As a result, some LV 13 demon powerhouses were killed by him in an extremely arbitrary way. Additionally, all the iron-armored demons within 30 steps were exterminated by the off-hand battle qi of his Iron-blood Fist, one punch for one demon.

After his palm bolts, Zhang Tie's Iron-blood Fist made him eye-catching on the battlefield once again...

At the sight of Zhang Tie's performance, all the knights from Norman Empire widened their eyes.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt pretty satisfied. He even had a feeling of sacrificing himself. The more demons could he kill this time, the fewer humans would be killed in the future.

In such a rising, dauntless battle consciousness, Zhang Tie's Iron-blood Fist evolved once again.

...

Another 1,000 airships appeared in the northeast sky. Following the wind, they were accelerating towards the remaining super demon corps. As if they had long predicted that the super demon corps would rush in that direction, great batches of combustible gel bombs were dropped from the airships, causing a secondary severe casualty to the super demon corps.

With a boom, the battle qi cloud formed by the 4 knights exploded. As a result, the 3 human knights looked a bit pale. Lin Changjiang's mouth corners maintained blood stains. The Demon General's armor was also damaged to a certain degree.

The Demon General's eyes looked pretty grim under his helmet.

"You forced me to do that!"

A bunch of light rose from Demon General's back and formed the complex, geometrical halos. Closely after that, an invisible shockwave spread over the entire battlefield from the halos...

"Three-in-one strength!" Lin Changjiang exclaimed as a firm look flashed across his eyes at once. After that, he rapidly took out a vial of rufous medicament and drunk it. The other two human knights also quickly took out vials of medicament or pills and drunk them. Meanwhile, they all looked solemn...

All the human knights had been shocked by that shockwave. Therefore, they immediately drunk or ate some rare medicament or pills to sharply increase their battle force...

...

Zhang Tie didn't know what happened in the sky. He could only sense a bizarre and invisible strength covering the entire battlefield. If he did not have the knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie could never sense such a change.

Closely after that shock wave, all the demon fighters facing Zhang Tie had their battle-qi totems risen up. Meanwhile, there

was a bizarre rune on each one's back. As a result, each demon fighter's speed increased by at least 30% in a split second.

Zhang Tie immediately felt a sharply increasing stress.

'What's happening?' Zhang Tie was also shocked...

"Kill him!" A merciless order drifted from the sky.

Before Zhang Tie figured out what was happening, the two colliding "meteors" had finished their battle. A human knight flashed away while spurting out fresh blood. The demon knight who had fought the human knight also had a bizarre rune on his back. He straightly flew towards Zhang Tie with a strong killing qi. Zhang Tie instantly felt that he was locked by a powerful spiritual energy...

'Demon Knight? F\*ck...'

Zhang Tie instantly turned around and escaped at the maximum speed...

The battle situation changed abruptly. The two human knights who were wrestled by a number battle-spirit demons rose up and headed for supporting other human knights, leaving the demons on the ground to the airships. No matter how great the three-in-one strength was, it could never enable those below knights to fly. However, the human knights in the sky were mired in a dangerous situation.

After a few minutes, Elder Muray, who had scared the sh\*t out of the wing demons, felt the abnormal situation here as he hurriedly flew towards here from the north. Before he joined the sharp battle qi clouds had he heard Lan elder's sound.

"Brother Muray, hurry, Zhang Tie is being chased by a Demon Knight in the southeast direction..."

'What? Zhang Tie...'

After glancing over the battlefield, Elder Muray instantly flew

towards the southeast.

...

Zhang Tie had not felt such a feeling for a long time. Last time, this feeling appeared in the Wild Wolf Valley, when he was hunted by 3 wild wolves. However, this time, he was tightly locked by a Demon Knight with its spiritual energy.

In this state, Zhang Tie felt like a rabbit being chased by a falcon. Although being in a dilemma, he felt pretty calm inside.

The map about this region that he formed when he flew over this region in the incarnation of thunder hawk a couple of days ago appeared in Zhang Tie's mind at this moment. Zhang Tie started to rack his mind so as to seek for the chance to escape...

# Chapter 702: In the Deep Underground

---

Zhang Tie didn't know that Elder Muray had rushed towards him. He just exerted his full effort to run with the effect of senior rapid moving skill and Kuafu Bloodline. Additionally, he even triggered his "mental arithmetic by abacus". When he sensed the chaser's movements and strikes with knight's consciousness, he kept seeking for the most proper road to escape.

Any other LV 12 great battle master or powerhouse such as battle general or battle demon would have long died hundreds of times in Zhang Tie's case. However, Zhang Tie still escaped crazily.

That demon knight flew over 50 m above the ground while its powerful battle qi booms constantly exploded in all directions near Zhang Tie like meteors. Although being embarrassed, Zhang Tie could always dodge from its strikes.

In the eyes of that demon knight, Zhang Tie was more like an oily flea with eyes on his back. The demon knight could not attack him.

Actually, The knight's flight speed was directly proportional to its height. The higher, the faster. At this moment, Zhang Tie calculated the knight's flight speed calmly. He could make full use of the conflict between the knight's height and speed. If that demon knight wanted to catch up with him, it had to stay over 200 m above the ground; however, in that height, the demon knight's strike posed no threat to him; if that demon knight wanted to launch effective strikes to him, it had to descend its height and speed. As a result, it would lose its advantage in speed, sparing time for him to respond.

Additionally, the knight was affected by its flight inertia. Previously, his agility was not influenced too much by such an inertia; however, in front of Zhang Tie, its flight inertia was amplified numerous times by Zhang Tie's extremely swift movements. As a result, its flight feature became a shortcoming.

When he sensed that he was going to be caught up by that demon knight, Zhang Tie would mystically change his direction, enlarging the distance between him and the demon knight.

Although Zhang Tie was embarrassed in this process; that demon knight was also driven mad as it kept roaring.

That demon knight had also attempted to catch Zhang Tie on the ground; however, the moment it landed had the demon knight realized that it had no advantage on speed and agility compared to that guy who was escaping crazily.

The longer it chased after Zhang Tie, the more shocked was that demon knight. Gradually, it made its decision to kill Zhang Tie.

In the beginning, the demon knight was following the Demon General's order to kill Zhang Tie; however, at this moment, it had become its strong desire and firm target to kill Zhang Tie. The demon knight didn't know about Zhang Tie's level; in his opinion, Zhang Tie should be a battle spirit or an exceptionally gifted 5-star battle demon. However, it could do no harm to such a person at all. 'Such a human, who could match a knight in certain aspects before promoting to a knight, would be unrivaled once he promoted to a knight. If such a person is not killed at this moment, he would cause much greater destructions or disasters to demons in the future.'

'He has to die today.' The demon knight made up its mind.

Zhang Tie also felt the demon knight's firm killing intent and faster-attacking speed. Heart pounding, he accelerated a bit faster.

The mountain peak was close as he could already hear the surging river. Zhang Tie became excited.

In a split second, Zhang Tie felt the air on his back was broken by numerous strands of powerful battle qi. The strike was as fast as a lightning bolt just like the javelins that Zhang Tie had ever thrown out. The powerful battle qi tossed towards Zhang Tie in the shape

of a huge net, leaving him nowhere to retreat. This strike almost covered dozens sq m.

With a roar, Zhang Tie instantly turned around and released over 300 punches towards one point of the huge net before finally making a crack on the fierce battle-qi net.

Only by such a counterattack, Zhang Tie consumed one-third of his entire battle qi in his qi sea.

After making a crack on the battle qi net, Zhang Tie instantly popped out of the crack in an impossibly twisted way by huddling up his body as a ball.

With a sound "boom...", everything within 100 sq m near Zhang Tie was sent flying in all directions, including that hill where Zhang Tie was in just now and the mud and rocks on the ground. The ground quivered a short time while half of the hill was moved away.

Although that strike didn't hit Zhang Tie, its aftermath and the shattered mud and broken stones caused numerous holes on Zhang Tie's warrior's costume in a split second. If Zhang Tie's body was not as firm as a stone, those high-speed broken stones would have penetrated through his body. Even though, Zhang Tie still felt salty in the mouth as he almost spurted out a mouthful of blood.

Zhang Tie didn't spurt out the blood; instead, he swallowed it back. Closely after that, he stomped onto the ground, stretched out his limbs and straightly flew off the hill like a glider based on the pneumatic effect of the surrounding airflow while being covered by the flying dust. He directly accelerated towards the surging river.

With such a battle-qi net strike, the demon knight was almost confident to kill a 5-star battle spirit; however, it was out of his imagination that his opponent could dodge away from his strike in such a mystical method; meanwhile, he even gained a greater momentum. Therefore, the demon knight became more afraid of



Zhang Tie; furthermore, his killing intent rocketed.

Right then, shrill sonic booms sounded behind Zhang Tie and the demon knight...

After hearing the booms, Zhang Tie was surprised inside as he knew that Elder Muray was coming. However, he still dared not postpone; instead, he continued to rush forward.

It would take Elder Muray at least 2 minutes to arrive here. However, it would take the demon knight less than 2 seconds to kill Zhang Tie. Therefore, Zhang Tie dared not rely on Elder Muray for the time being.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had rushed to the riverside.

The surging river was over 200 m in width with snowwhite ripples. The source of the river was the melted snow water on the snowpeak of the Kalay Mountain Range in the distance. It diverted into a pitch-dark mountain cave which was over 200 m in width in the lower reach. The mountain cave was devouring the surging river like an opening of the bloody mouth.

Zhang Tie didn't know where would this river lead to; he presumed that it should converge into a subterranean stream. Because there wasn't another river within 200 sq m.

As long as it was in the water, Zhang Tie would survive himself.

The moment Zhang Tie dove into the river had the demon knight launched a strike towards the point where he entered the water.

Zhang Tie instantly felt that the surrounding water flow became as firm as a steel plate while a great stress pushed towards him. If Zhang Tie didn't move, he would have been squeezed into a flesh paste.

Thankfully, Zhang Tie's diving ability had already reached a terrifying degree. His sensing ability in changing water flows was almost above that of his knight's consciousness. The moment he found the change of the water flows had he slid dozens of meters

away in the water like a slippery loach.

With a shock in the water, dozens of meters high sprays rose from the water. Feeling breathless, Zhang Tie realized that his innards had been injured once again.

With the effect of the waterproof body, Zhang Tie's moving speed in water was even faster than that on the ground.

Zhang Tie showed his head above the water in the lower reach over 200 m away. Watching that demon knight who was still constantly exploding the river while suspending above the water, Zhang Tie erected his middle finger towards that demon knight before bursting out into laughter. 'Elder Muray is coming. I don't believe that this guy will dare to loiter here at the risk of his life.'

The fact was that Zhang Tie and the demon knight were both wrong.

Zhang Tie misestimated the demon knight's determination to kill him.

However, that demon knight had not imagined that Zhang Tie could have such a proficient diving skill. When Zhang Tie jumped into the river, the demon knight felt excited inside as he thought that Zhang Tie had no other choice but to jump into the river. As the density of water was greater than that of air, waves and shocks could be better transmitted in the water. As battle qi attack would be more destructive and influential in the water than that in the air, the demon knight kept striking the water like striking fishes with explosives, causing dozens of meters high snowwhite ripples.

When the demon knight caught sight of Zhang Tie who was over 200 m away and heard the increasingly closer shrill sonic booms on his back, it was shocked at once. However, after hesitating for a short while, he confirmed his determination and flew towards Zhang Tie immediately.

Zhang Tie was really scared by the demon knight's choice. He

then instantly dove back into the water and slid away. The demon knight also followed him in as it gazed at Zhang Tie tightly and moved even swifter than fish.

The alleged knights could walk upstairs and downstairs in the air, would not drown in the water and would not burn in the fire.

Until then did Zhang Tie know how terrifying were knights in the water.

The moment the demon knight entered the water had it isolated the water by its waterproof battle qi. With his great strength, only by kicking his feet and drawing his arms had he accelerated towards Zhang Tie.

Realizing that he was closely followed by that demon knight, Zhang Tie became flurried.

If it was on the bank, Zhang Tie couldn't match him; however, as it was in the water, Zhang Tie didn't believe that anyone else could match him in this world. Because Zhang Tie was not afraid of cold at all. Besides, he could get fresh air from Castle of Black Iron at any time. That was to say, he could stay as long as he wanted in the water.

Zhang Tie swam in the water, keeping him in the vision of that knight yet out of the striking distance of it. He kept moving towards the pitch-dark mountain cave in the hinterland.

At this moment, the demon knight thought, 'As a knight, I could never lose the battle to a weaker human in the water.'

After entering the hinterland, the surging river became more torrential. There was a huge bottomless swirl beneath the mountain hinterland, which devoured the entire river into the underground space. Being dauntless, Zhang Tie straightly dove into the swirl, closely followed by that demon knight...

...

It was a wonderful underground world. Being pushed by the

torrential water flow, Zhang Tie felt like falling into an underground maze being composed of water and secret tunnels. After activating his dark vision, Zhang Tie saw clearly numerous underground karst caves, which contained smaller ones which rooted in the deep underground space...

Zhang Tie was led into a subterranean stream which further led him into a deeper underground space...

...

A couple of minutes later, Elder Muray arrived at the spot where Zhang Tie and that demon knight dove in the water.

Watching this river, Elder Muray also directly jumped into it...

...

Over 10 hours later, before dawn, Elder Muray finally flew out of the water and landed on the river bank in the distance, with a splash at the entrance of the mountain cave. However, he was dry all over.

Over the past 10 hours, Elder Muray had searched over hundreds of miles underground, yet got no trace of Zhang Tie at all. Finally, he had to admit that Zhang Tie and that demon knight had disappeared. The underground waterway was as complex as an extremely large maze. As long as someone got lost inside, it would be much more difficult to find him than finding a needle out of the sea. Even if Elder Muray re-grouped all the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace here, they might still not find Zhang Tie in one year.

Elder Muray just watched the surging river with a sophisticated look. Finally, he let out a helpless sigh and he stomped onto the ground before flying towards the north...

...

After Elder Muray left the river, Zhang Tie felt a bit fear, which didn't come from the demon knight who was closely chasing after

him but from the water flow on his side. Zhang Tie didn't know where he was while the water flow beside him was sucked into an underground swirl whose diameter was over 10 miles by a great suction towards the bottomless underground abyss in a speed of above hundreds of miles per hour along with him...

'F\*ck, it's a big trouble!'

Zhang Tie looked back and found the demon knight was still closely chasing after him with a strong killing intent. Zhang Tie also saw a flurried look in its eyes. If that demon knight turned around and intended to return at this moment, Zhang Tie even doubted whether it would be able to find the way back...

Facing such an unknown underground world, even demons would have a bit fear.

# Chapter 703: An Unknown World

---

Under such a great underground suction, Zhang Tie and that demon knight were flushed into the bottomless abyss along with the terrifying huge swirl. In such a sheer terror, even that demon knight could barely balance his body. It could not attack Zhang Tie in such a situation. If not having been granted a super great anti-resistant ability by a great number of iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie might have been collapsed in the great suction and pressure of the terrifying swirl.

In such a scene, Zhang Tie felt that he and the demon knight were just two trivial insects who were flushed into a huge toilet seat.

Zhang Tie had never imagined that he could come to such a bizarre place after casually choosing an exit from the numerous underwater turnoffs and karst caves.

The water flow flushed downwards at a high speed. Zhang Tie estimated that he moved at least 300 miles per hours in the water flow.

After being sucked in the swirl, Zhang Tie experienced a cliff-like drop like a waterfall. Closely after that, he was involved in another maze-like subterranean river course and continued to flush downwards, followed by another cliff-like drop. The demon knight was still gazing at Zhang Tie tightly from 100 m away. As it had already followed Zhang Tie in such a deep unknown space, if it lost its target and its own life, it would be a great tragedy.

Zhang Tie also sensed the demon knight's killing intent; however, he ignored it. As for Zhang Tie, he could always survive in the water with Castle of Black Iron as an auxiliary cheat wherever he was taken by the water flow.

100 m was a safe distance that Zhang Tie purposefully kept with the demon knight. If it was narrower than that distance, Zhang Tie

would be attacked by the demon knight. Even in water, a knight's battle force was still very destructive. As long as the demon knight pointed towards Zhang Tie with its finger, a strand of battle qi like a bolt of a strong crossbow would penetrate through dozens of meters in the water towards him. If Zhang Tie was hit, he would spurt out blood for sure.

Although Zhang Tie's safe distance was 100 m, the actual distance between him and the demon knight was smaller than that in underwater turnoffs and curves. Therefore, 3 hours later, after making some turns in the torrents and entering some turnoffs, that demon knight finally faced a tragedy. The moment Zhang Tie entered a curve had he disappeared in front of the demon knight. Two underwater turnoffs appeared in front of the demon knight. After hesitating for 0.1 seconds, the demon knight chose the left one while balancing his body; then...

Then, he found he lost his target forever.

Zhang Tie could hear the roar of the demon knight faintly. He knew that the demon knight had lost its target. So what? In such a case, Zhang Tie preferred to not be the landmark by reappearing in the vision of the demon knight at the risk of his own life.

Zhang Tie faintly let out a sigh as he felt a bit regretful.

'But if that demon knight is suffocated here, it's also worthwhile for me.' Zhang Tie thought.

...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie heard the sound similar to that of the waterfall. Before he responded, he had been ejected out of a cave by a torrent and fell in the air...

In a split second, Zhang Tie saw the glow in the sky and the vast shimmering water, thousands of meters away under his feet.

Zhang Tie then descended at an extremely high speed along with the water flow. Heart racing, Zhang Tie started to worry about the

situation under the water. If there were stones under the water, he would be severely wounded at least, if not dead.

With a sound "bang", Zhang Tie punched towards a nearby cliff as fast as a lightning bolt. With the reactive thrust, he got rid of the torrent. At the same time, he stretched out his limbs for the greatest resistance in the air flow. When he was about 100 m above the water, Zhang Tie let out a sigh, 'Thankfully, it's bottomless here.'

Before entering the water, Zhang Tie immediately launched dozens of punches towards the water. With the reactive thrust, he abruptly slowed down. Closely after a "splash", he dove into the water.

...

After over 10 seconds, Zhang Tie showed his head above the water, 1,000 m away from where he entered the water. Hearing the distant splashes, Zhang Tie started to look around with widely opened eyes.

This was an underground ocean. According to the falling time and speed, Zhang Tie knew that this underground ocean was at least 1,000 miles beneath the ground's surface.

Zhang Tie had long known that there was an ocean beneath the ground. However, it was his first time to see a real one.

This was a very vast underground space. At least Zhang Tie had not seen its border when he fell off.

Taking a broad view, Zhang Tie saw some splendid waterfall falling off the dome of this underground space within dozens of miles. Zhang Tie himself was spurt out of the waterfall on his side, which was over 10 miles above the water. After falling on the water, the torrents aroused a large area of sprays, which covered 1 sq km. Being tainted by the glow in the sky, the white sprays also became red, which looked fantastic. If above ground, such a



fabulous scenery would definitely become eye-catching.

The glow originated from the stones that distributed on the rocks at the dome of the space. The highest place of this space was about dozens of kilometers away from the ground surface, which looked like a huge bubble. Zhang Tie predicted that those red stones were a special fluorescent stone or crystal. Those stones were distributed in evident mineral veins and irregular stripes like fabulous huge natural luminous zones embedded in the wall.

It was between 20 and 30 degrees Celcius here. The air was not muddy here; instead, it was very refreshing. Additionally, the underground ocean was composed of fresh, translucent water. Some odd-looking fish were swimming in the water. Right now, Zhang Tie caught sight of many thumb-sized little fish whose heads were luminous and some bizarre aquatic plants like waterweeds.

'Whether that demon knight had also fallen inside here?' Zhang Tie wondered as he looked around vigilantly before diving into the water...

The moment he dove into the water had he seen some little luminous fish swarming up out of curiosity. They weren't afraid of Zhang Tie at all. Neither did Zhang Tie care about them; instead, he just slid faster towards the far.

When Zhang Tie fell in the water, he saw a broad land over 40 miles away. Before that demon knight appeared, Zhang Tie wanted to take a look at the land first.

It only took Zhang Tie 7-8 minutes to arrive there. Coming out of the ocean, Zhang Tie walked onto that land and the beach one step after another.

Besides fine gravels, there were also many plants on the land, some of which were huge fungi in the shape of an umbrella; some were like huge palm trees which were as high as 100 m; some were grey ferns. Additionally, there were numerous purple grasses that

Zhang Tie had never seen before.

As the red luminous zones were not evenly distributed, some places were brighter, some were darker; some were even pitch-dark due to the terrain. The entire space formed a very splendid, three-dimensional light and shadow zone. In brighter places, plants would grow better; by contrast, there were fewer plants in darker places. Some places were empty.

After a few minutes, with a cracking sound, Zhang Tie broke a rotten leaf and fell into a pit. Zhang Tie was so scared that he even thought that he fell into a trap. However, after realizing that it was just a natural pit, Zhang Tie mocked himself. Lowering his head, he kicked away that dried leaf and moved out of the pit.

Zhang Tie then became meticulous. After a few more steps, he found another pit. With a smile, Zhang Tie strode over from aside...

After a short while, Zhang Tie stopped as he frowned. He realized that the two pits were too symmetrical. It looked a bit familiar...

Zhang Tie then turned back and looked at the two pits carefully as his frowns grew deeper. After moving a few steps back, Zhang Tie waved his hand while his iron-blood battle qi flew over the near ground like a tender razor. As a result, the thick rotten leaves and dust were blown away, exposing the real look of the two pits.

A huge skull appeared on the ground. Zhang Tie realized that the two pits were just the eye sockets on the skull.

Given the look of the skull, Zhang Tie predicted that it had existed here at least hundreds of thousands of years. Although only a small part of the skull was exposed above the ground, the two eye sockets were completely like the baby's bathtubs.

Zhang Tie drew in a mouth of breath as his trains of thoughts seemed to have been frozen. Because he realized that the skull belonged to a giant instead of a wild beast.

Zhang Tie then quickly moved away from the nearby rotten leaves and mud using his iron-blood battle qi. Finally, he saw a looming, small half of a giant skeleton as high as 20 m...

Giants were usually taken as legends by humans before the Catastrophe when their ideology was limited in a narrow space. Giants were usually carved on frescos. However, actually, giants indeed existed. The giants' skeletons were indisputable evidences. Even before the Catastrophe, humans had discovered giants' skeletons across the world. As the existence of giants would overthrow the authorized history about humans fabricated by demons and enable humans to re-evaluate themselves in pursuit of their own halos, all the giants' skeletons and discovery experiences before the Catastrophe were covered along with the truth of human history. Those bribed experts, authorities, alleged biologists, historians, media and governments would emphasize that no giants existed in this world and everything about giants were lies and legends.

However, that was real. After the Catastrophe, the truths were gradually exposed while more and more evidences were acknowledged by the humans. By then, humans discovered that their history was unimaginably brilliant. Many things that were labeled as legends and myths by the main-stream society before the Catastrophe indeed existed...

Before Zhang Tie came to this world, a giant' skull had been discovered in the iron ore area outside Blackhot City. At that time, all the humans in the entire Blackhot City rushed to see the giant's skull. It even shocked Andaman Alliance. Zhang Tie was told by his natural science teacher in the No. 7 National Middle School. When the teacher talked about this, he even sighed with full of emotions. Later on, that giant's skull was purchased by a mysterious figure and carried away by an airship after lying there for a couple of days. From then on, nobody across Blackhot City saw the giant's skull any longer.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could see a giant's skeleton here. Such a complete giant's skeleton which represented the real history being hidden by demons would be worth at least 1 million gold coins as the most expensive collection above the ground...

# Chapter 704: Tower of Time

---

As a man who was too frugal to eat a bowl of rice brew made by his own family at the cost of 3 copper coins, how could Zhang Tie let go such a giant's skeleton which was worth at least 1 million gold coins? Otherwise, Zhang Tie would not even forgive himself. No matter how rich he was, he would never be such wasteful.

Therefore, after taking a round rapidly and finding nobody was in the neighborhood, Zhang Tie started to excavate the complete giant's skeleton which was as long as 20 m out of the soft soil in the shadow of the woods at the fastest speed.

Although the greater part of the giant skeleton was buried in the soil, as long as Zhang Tie moved away from the layer of mud, he would see the original skeleton which was radiating white luster.

The giant's bones were as dense in texture as that of white marble. As long as he slightly moved some mud away from above, Zhang Tie would see the faint metallic luster.

Zhang Tie moved as fast as a steam excavator. However, it still took Zhang Tie 2 hours to finish the excavation of the complete skeleton.

Watching the complete giant's skeleton in a huge pit, Zhang Tie was dumbfounded. Even though it was just lying there, it was still almost as tall as Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie could not imagine how powerful it would be when it was alive. It would be even more terrifying if the giant could cultivate.

In legends, humans once lived in the same age with giants. Giants were also a branch of humans. There were many Hua stories about giants.

In far-ancient times, there was a big flood. Hua emperor ordered one hundred human clans to regulate rivers and watercourses. There was a giant couple called Pufu. Although they received the

order to deal with the flood and drain rivers and watercourses, due to their laziness, they were punished to stand still. Without any food to eat, they could only drink dew until the river turned clear. Due to such a "tender punishment", the giant couple finally succumbed to Hua emperor and started to do labor work diligently...

After that, another Hua emperor came to the world who ruled the whole world. At that time, 12 giants appeared in Tao river's bank. The Hua emperor liked them and had people build 12 gold statues for each of them.

Later on, 2 more giants played major roles in the history of Hua people.

One was called Weng Zhong. After surrendering to Hua people, this giant became the general of Hua clan. He assisted Hua people to conquer all the alien clans and was well-known across the world. Due to his braveness on the battlefield, Hua clan even built a statue for him to commemorate him. In many Hua regions, Weng Zhong referred to bulky copper or stony statues.

The second giant who left his name in the history of Hua people was called Wu Ba. This giant once assisted a Hua man Wang Mang to usurp the throne. He was the best general of Wang Mang. Due to his bulky figure, everybody would like to call him Big Wu Ba. Even today, Hua people would say the term "Big Wu Ba" which was derived from this giant.

Giants were deeply related to Hua people.

...

After recalling those stories about giants in Hua people, Zhang Tie put his hands on the huge skull of the giant's skeleton and penetrated his spiritual energy into it. Closely after that, he moved it into Castle of Black Iron.

With 1 million gold coins as a reward, Zhang Tie felt pretty good.

He refilled the huge pit and cleaned all the traces before returning to Castle of Black Iron. After that, he flew out of Castle of Black Iron in the incarnation of a little black beetle and started to discover this region..

After activating the senior hiding rune, Zhang Tie straightly flew 100 m high along the coastline.

Although the thunder hawk could fly higher and faster, it would be too eye-catching for an animal above the ground to appear in such an underground space. It would definitely arouse the attention of the demon knight if he came here. Therefore, the little black beetle was much safer. Although the beetle could not match the thunder hawk in speed, it was also very swift.

The land in the underground ocean seemed to be a huge island with mountain ranges on it. The entire island looked pretty vast. It was as broad as tens of thousands of sq km. After flying for 2 hours, Zhang Tie found that he was still in a small corner of the island.

When Zhang Tie wanted to fly towards the middle of the island, he saw a figure flying over 500 m above his head.

Zhang Tie was shocked inside, 'It's the demon knight. It's also flushed over here. It seemed that the demon knight fell off from the other cave.'

Although the demon knight was flying high, it kept its eyes closely on the ground so as to seek for Zhang Tie's trace.

Zhang Tie hushed, 'Thankfully, I've already incarnated into a beetle. If I kept loitering over there in my original body, I might have been caught by that demon knight.' However, Zhang Tie knew that this demon knight was not sure whether Zhang Tie was also flushed over here. 'Due to the complex underground watercourses, I might be flushed to other places.'

'At this moment, I'm invisible while the enemy is visible. This

seems to be an opportunity to launch an attack.'

A glimmer of hope rose in Zhang Tie's heart once again. Zhang Tie just stayed 1 mile away from the demon knight.

Because the demon knight was seeking for Zhang Tie's trace on the ground, he didn't fly too fast. Therefore, Zhang Tie could follow him up.

4-5 hours later, after finding no trace of Zhang Tie on the coastline and in the ocean, the demon knight abandoned his mind as it turned around and flew towards a mountain which was as high as 5,000-6,000 m on the side of this island, closely followed by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie found that the demon knight almost fell off when it flew over the mountain range. Therefore, he instantly followed up it at a speed several times faster than that of before.

Watching the demon knight hurriedly disappearing on the back of the mountain range, Zhang Tie immediately rushed towards there.

...

When he flew over that mountain range, Zhang Tie finally knew why that demon knight almost fell off just now. Even Zhang Tie himself had forgotten to flap his wings and almost fallen off when he saw the item in the distance.

On the plain behind the mountain range in the middle of this island, Zhang Tie saw an extremely magnificent pyramid which almost made him suffocated.

That pyramid was larger than any other pyramid that Zhang Tie had ever seen or heard. It was about 3,000 m in height. It was more like a mountain peak than a building. If not flying over this mountain range, Zhang Tie could never see such a pyramid.

The pyramid was completely made of crystals. Even being more than dozens of km away from it, Zhang Tie could still see the color



and texture of the crystals.

A huge pyramid completely made of crystals. Such a pyramid could never be made in this age, even through the concerted efforts of all the human countries across Blackson Humans Corridor. The technique that required to build such a huge pyramid had been out of the limit that humans could reach in this age.

A term occurred to Zhang Tie's mind——Pre-historical cultural relics.

How could such a marvelous pre-historical cultural relics exist in the underground space?

After being stunned for a second, Zhang Tie hurriedly sped up towards that pyramid.

Compared to Zhang Tie, that demon knight almost exerted its full strength that he used to suck nipples to fly towards that pyramid, which really shocked Zhang Tie.

...

When Zhang Tie was 20 miles away from that pyramid, Zhang Tie sensed a powerful energy enshrouding the space. If he cultivated in such an atmosphere, he would light his surging points much faster than before.

The closer he was to the pyramid, the more evident the energy field of the huge crystal pyramid would be. With the effect of that energy field, the plants nearby the pyramid grew much better than those in other places. The palm-tree like trees and the fungi on the ground were too huge. Those trees were 200-300 m high while those fungi were completely like booths.

Besides those plants, there were more animals. It seemed that those animals had also sensed that this place was special...

At this moment, a loud boom drifted from the front. At the same time, Zhang Tie saw some huge odd-looking birds [whose wings

were as long as 3 m] smashed into minced flesh and sprayed over.

All the animals seemed to have been used to the long-term tranquility. After hearing such a loud boom, all the animals were so flurried that they instantly escaped in all directions. Batches of colorful little birds flew off the woods and escaped to the distance; some small beasts were escaping everywhere in the 2-m high brushwood.

The moment Zhang Tie saw those small animals had Zhang Tie known that there were no fierce animals or magical beasts here. Otherwise, there would never be so many small animals here.

Those odd-looking birds might be the fiercest animals here. After feeling that their territorial airspace was violated by the demon knight, they wanted to warn the demon knight; pitifully, the front two birds were instantly killed.

Before Zhang Tie reached the pyramid had he heard the demon knight's extremely blatant laughter.

"Ha...ha...ha...thanks, Demon God...it's the legendary tower of time...it's the tower of time. Bingo...Everything in this tower of time belongs to me...belongs to me..."

Zhang Tie moved closer and found that this pyramid was not made of crystals at all; instead, it was completely a super huge, ink-colored piece of crystal. There were even some complex runes in the crystal which enabled the crystal to display a bizarre color...

Zhang Tie was so shocked that he almost turned stonified...

There were also two giants' skeletons below the stairs towards the entrance in the middle of the pyramid.

The two giants' skeletons were also well preserved as they shined a metallic luster. They were sitting on two huge chairs made of crystals below the stairs like two dignified concierge gods. Each of them was supporting a terrifying battle sword which was as high as 10 m like two huge pillars rooted in the ground. After throwing a

glance at them, Zhang Tie knew that they were at least weighed tons.

If there wasn't that demon knight, Zhang Tie even wanted to land here and take a look at this place carefully. Everything here was too shocking.

"Open..." The demon knight's roar drifted into Zhang Tie's ears from the middle of the pyramid.

"This opportunity could not be met in 1,000 years. The first one entering it would get this opportunity. Never let that demon knight in..."

Heller, who used to be silent, warned Zhang Tie at this moment.

Zhang Tie then flew forward. He found the demon knight was trying to push open the 40-m high gate while withstanding it forcefully.

The knight's physical strength was unrivaled; however, no matter how much strength it exerted while raising its battle qi, he only gradually opened a narrow crack of the gate while a powerful, milky light pillar leaked out of the crack. There seemed to be another splendid world behind the gate...

Watching that crack, the demon knight was driven so excited that it kept exclaiming. Meanwhile, it exerted all the strength that he used to suck its mommy's nipples...

Gradually, the crack expanded, 1 cm, 2 cm...

The demon knight almost became mad as it kept roaring...

However...

Before the demon knight responded, Zhang Tie had already flown inside through the 2 cm crack.

The gate suddenly became heavier. Finally, it did not move no matter how much strength the demon knight used. The demon knight then became flurried. Closely after that, the gate closed up

tightly just like joking with him.

'What's wrong?'

The demon knight was driven infuriated. Gradually, he became hopeless; finally, he was driven as resentful as a grumbling woman.

With a growl, the demon knight exerted its full strength to launch a punch onto the gate.

However, its strike became completely ineffective just like how a mosquito wanted to push down a huge tree. It didn't even shake off any dust...

"No..." An extremely miserable shriek sounded outside the pyramid.

At this moment, the demon knight was like a beggar who had expended all of his money to buy a lottery ticket. When the beggar found that he hit the jackpot of 10 million gold coins, he went to ask for the reward while dreaming about living in an empire. Pitifully, those workers told him strictly that the computers in the lottery center were attacked by hackers last night and the winning numbers were changed temporarily by the hackers. Therefore, the beggar's lottery became ineffective. How the beggar felt at that moment was coincidentally how the demon knight felt.

The most terrifying thing was not to have nothing; what was more terrifying was that you lost what you were going to get right away.

...

Watching the huge crystal gate being closed, the little black beetle returned to Castle of Black Iron. Zhang Tie himself then walked out of Castle of Black Iron.

It was a distant and deep crystal tunnel. Breathing the vigorous energy in the tunnel, Zhang Tie felt comfortable all over while each of his pores became relaxed.

Walking in the tunnel, Zhang Tie looked around and found no crack on the walls. The tunnel was covered with the light shadow of crystals which contained running runes. Zhang Tie's shadow was reflected in all directions of the crystal tunnel. Zhang Tie felt like walking in a kaleidoscope.

Zhang Tie chatted with Heller when he was walking inside.

"Heller, will that guy break in?" Zhang Tie asked as he looked back.

"No, only one person is allowed at one time. Additionally, that demon knight cannot destroy this place."

"How do you know that?"

Heller's chuckles drifted from Zhang Tie's mind sea. Zhang Tie knew it was Heller's answer; therefore, he didn't ask him anymore. Whereas, another question occurred to his mind.

"Umm, I heard the demon knight shouting 'tower of time', what's that?"

Heller became silent in Zhang Tie's mind sea for a couple of seconds before replying, "In a far distant age, powerhouses of clans cultivated here. Have you heard an ancient saying that has been spread for thousands of years—humans are afraid of time; yet time is afraid of the pyramid!"

"Yup, I've heard it when I was in Blackhot City. But is there any relation between it and this pyramid?"

"That old saying exists because of this pyramid!"

"What do you mean?"

"You will know it when you leave out of here, castle lord. There's a time barrier in front, the great time and space torsion which would cut off the links between you, Castle of Black Iron and me. But, don't worry, castle lord. Everything will recover back to normal when you come out of here. Until then, enjoy your time

here!"

Zhang Tie didn't know what was a time barrier. He only saw a bright yet not dazzling light film in front of the tunnel as was told by Heller. Without any hesitation, he just walked in...

# Chapter 705: Being Accompanied by Lonely Stars

---

After penetrating through that light film, Zhang Tie came to a huge space which was like the size of a football field. He was in the geometrical center of gravity of the magnificent crystal pyramid.

After hearing the sound, Zhang Tie looked back and found the gate that he entered through had disappeared and turned into a huge piece of crystal. The entire space was sealed from outside, leaving Zhang Tie alone inside.

'What happened?' Zhang Tie became surprised while numerous runes appeared in those crystals and started to run fantastically. The runes ran faster and faster. In a couple of seconds, Zhang Tie, although with his knight's consciousness, had found that he could not identify those runes. After a few more seconds, those runes turned into the light.

The countless light was running in the crystals. The entire space was gradually wrapped in a layer of a light cocoon. Inside the light cocoon, the crystals gradually became obscure while a brilliant river of stars appeared above Zhang Tie's head...

Zhang Tie was completely stunned by such an exotic scenery.

However, before Zhang Tie asked the question, he had received a group of spiritual messages from this space.

——The tower of time starts. The time torsion in this space is the standard difference between the rotation time and the revolution time of this planet. That is to say, one year in this space is equal to one day outside.

——After half-monthly phase change period, namely 15 years in this space, 15 days outside, the time torsion value would recover zero, when the tower of time will enter silent energy storage period once again.

——During this period, the vital aura value filling this space will naturally maintain all the daily demands for the incomer and prevent the incomer's living cells from aging.

——If you want to leave in advance, you can rotate the time ball on the ground in the anti-clockwise direction.

——After 60 standard years outside, this tower of time will restart.

Zhang Tie finally understood the meaning of "tower of time". When this tower opened, it would enable the incomer to cultivate 15 years in this space without eating or drinking. However, it was only equal to 15 days of outside.

After closing his eyes, Zhang Tie then sensed an extremely pure, tender, delicate and vigorous energy filling this space. Being immersed in such a natural energy, each cell in Zhang Tie's body was in a very cozy state. Almost one day had passed since the dawn of September 1st. After experiencing the high-intensity battle with demons and being chased by a demon knight, Zhang Tie also was a bit fatigued and hungry. However, at this moment, the exhaustion and hunger were gradually disappearing.

Even fine dust could enter human's blood and body through skin cells, not to mention the life energy here.

After thinking through it, Zhang Tie instantly felt relieved.

The alleged golden time ball was on the ground in the distance which was as high as Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie walked over there while the entire space was resounding with Zhang Tie's clear footsteps. The feeling could only be described with one word——peace.

After coming to the front of the time ball, Zhang Tie found it was a complexed rune or an alchemist's structure made of an unidentified metal. The entire time ball was slowly rotating on the ground in a clockwise manner. Zhang Tie noticed the circles of



scales outside the ball, which seemed to represent the time elapse of this space.

A whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind as Zhang Tie injected some spiritual energy inside the ball. As was predicted by him, he indeed got a precise time since the tower of time started and how much time was left in this tower.

Besides the precise time, this time ball also contained a line.

——Ants gather to seek for survival while the powerful ones are accompanied by loneliness and the stars.

After reading the line for a short while, Zhang Tie looked more decisive.

Besides this time ball, Zhang Tie also saw some square crystal platforms in this huge space. One of the square crystal platforms looked like a bed with nothing on it. Some platforms looked like an operating platform very much. Strangely, those platforms reminded Zhang Tie of someone fabricating various pills and medicaments and cast tools on them. If he had made full preparations, Zhang Tie could have brought many useful items inside and forged his own skills here.

Thinking of skills, Zhang Tie instantly had an idea. He then closed his eyes and hurriedly attempted to activate a trouble-reappearance situation in his mind sea by running his spiritual energy.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had appeared on the sea beach of Hidden Dragon Island while the poor little sea snake was swimming towards Zhang Tie forcefully and wanting to bite Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie smiled. Because he ate the trouble-reappearance fruit which naturally contained the trouble-reappearance situation. Therefore, the trouble-reappearance situation was not influenced inside this space. Otherwise, he could only constantly light that

stick of spiritual feather and store the ammo to light surging points instead of promoting to new levels inside this space.

Zhang Tie pointed at that small sea-snake using one finger while the entire trouble-reappearance situation disappeared in light dots.

After opening his eyes, Zhang Tie took a round in the space. Closely after that, he walked to the stony platform and started to polish that stick of spiritual feature in his Shrine.

From then on, Zhang Tie entered his deep meditation.

After 2 days, Zhang Tie's cultivation rhythm was fixed in the tower of time.

Each day, he would spend 12 hours to polish the stick of spiritual feather in the Shrine, 5 hours to read the endless great wild true words and cultivate the mysterious methods in the "Great Wilderness Sutra", 2 hours to enter trouble-reappearance situation and 2 hours to forge his battle skills in the vast space of the tower of time, where he could release his battle-qi and battle skills in the most violent and shocking way. As to the remaining 3 hours, he would sleep.

Actually, besides sleeping, he almost used all the time to cultivate.

In the tower of time, being nourished by the pure life aura energy of pyramid, Zhang Tie wouldn't feel thirsty or hungry. He didn't need to go to the toilet either. Besides sleeping, he could always maintain a very vigorous state. Additionally, Zhang Tie found that the quality of his sleep was really unimaginable. Only after 3 hours of rest, he could recover his spiritual energy and physical strength completely just like sleeping more than 10 hours outside.

As to the 2 hours in the trouble-reappearance situation each day, Zhang Tie would determine the next surging points to light, read mysterious books in the Secret Knowledge Pavilion or Breaking Heavens Library or take a walk on the seaside to listen to the sea

waves and the waving tree leaves...

Being blessed by the great energy of the crystals, he could light surging points two more times faster than that before. On the 4th day since he came in here, Zhang Tie had already lit the 146th surging point with his great spiritual energy...

From then on, Zhang Tie gradually made progress towards LV 13 battle monster at the speed of lighting 1 surging point per 4 days...

In such a cultivation, Zhang Tie almost forgot about time...

...

After 350 days, sitting on the crystal bed with crossed legs, Zhang Tie opened his eyes as he had just lit the 233rd surging point...

The moment he lit the surging point had he felt his qi sea vibrating while the entire qi sea expanded two more times. At the same time, the battle qi rolled in his qi sea and gradually became more condensed. After filling the entire qi sea, his battle qi overflowed his qi sea and covered his whole body. By then, Zhang Tie could release battle qi attack from every part of his body. Additionally, his battle force rose to a new high. Once he was promoted to LV 14, his battle qi would condense and form a powerful protective battle qi outside his body.

Not only that, when the battle qi rolled all over his body, Zhang Tie felt his eyes turning cold abruptly and as comfortable as being covered with two pieces of ice cubes. By contrast, his ears felt warm like being wrapped in a hot-water bag. After sustaining this feeling about half an hour, Zhang Tie felt that he had gained a great improvement in his visual sense and auditory sense. Undoubtedly, this was the reward gifted by the King Roc Sutra when he promoted to LV 13.

Having the experience in incarnating into a thunder hawk, Zhang Tie knew it clearly how sharp visual sense did a thunder hawk have. However, at this moment, he found that his visual

sense became even sharper than a thunder hawk. His visual sense got a qualitative improvement on the basis of dark vision...

Zhang Tie picked up himself from the ground and moved his limbs. At the same time, all of his muscles cracked once again.

Zhang Tie shot out a punch, which was more like a bloody, fierce tiger than a mass of battle qi. The tiger roared as it flashed over 50 steps of distance and disappeared on the mysterious crystal wall of the tower of time...

Zhang Tie didn't become disappointed about that. Even the knight's strike towards the tower of time was like a tickle, not to mention Zhang Tie himself.

Zhang Tie's iron-blood fist officially entered the realm of turning battle qi into real shape as was featured in LV 13. This realm was described as "punches are tigers which can sweep over an army of thousands of soldiers" in the mysterious book "Iron-blood Fist".

...

Zhang Tie entered the shadow demon cell once again. This time, Zhang Tie found that Master Abyan turned much clumsier than last time. Not only that, Master Abyan even looked hilarious. Without activating a senior rapidly moving rune, Zhang Tie just collided with Master Abyan face to face based on Kuafu bloodline and his great battle force. Only after a bit more than 10 minutes, Abyan had been torn into pieces by a flock of bloody, fierce tigers...

Watching Abyan struggling in front of his iron-blood fist, Zhang Tie felt Abyan became aged for the first time.

The trouble-reappearance situation then broke into light dots...

...

After banging the gate for almost one day, the demon knight finally panted wearily. Being driven extremely mad, the demon knight could not think through how the gate of the tower of time closed after almost being pushed open. It tried its best to think

about the possible reasons. Closing its eyes, it racked its mind to recall all the details...

After a long while, the demon knight seemed to get something with his super great spiritual energy and memory. When it was forcefully pushing open the gate, an insect seemed rapidly drilling into the gate through the crack. However, it didn't pay attention to that insect due to the great excitement...

When the demon knight remembered the rules to access the tower of time, it gritted its teeth.

'What? I was defeated by an insect?'

The demon knight roared which could be heard within dozens of squares miles...

From then on, all the plants and animals in this underground space were in trouble...

# Chapter 706: Promoting to a Knight

---

As Zhang Tie had eaten too many fruits, he was cultivating at an unprecedented high speed.

To promote to LV 14 from LV 13, it required him to light 144 surging points. This process took Zhang Tie almost 580 days.

If he did not have a trouble-reappearance situation, Zhang Tie even wondered whether he could stand such a tough cultivation in such an isolated space. He might have been driven mad in less than 1 year.

However, during the past 584 days, Zhang Tie learned to sing songs. He always hummed songs alone.

Previously, Zhang Tie didn't know how to sing songs. Nobody taught him either. He could only whistle at most or hum one or two lines. As there were music books in Breaking Heavens Library, Zhang Tie read some and learned to sing songs. He could even identify music scores.

The imitating bloodline granted him an excellent talent in learning music which originated from humans' far-ancient ancestors; plus Zhang Tie's precise control about his singing skills and his long-lasting qi, he could dwarf all the human singers before the Catastrophe. When he heard his own song, Zhang Tie was so excited that he almost burst into tears. Zhang Tie had never imagined that he could sing so well.

After that, Zhang Tie always killed time by singing songs in the tower of time.

Zhang Tie found that singing songs was the simplest way to make the singer and others forget about loneliness which was least limited to tools and conditions. As long as he input his emotions and feelings, he found that he could release his loneliness, express his ideas, entertain himself and others by singing songs.

Zhang Tie smoothly gained his protective battle qi before promoting to LV 14. Additionally, his defensive ability was also intensified by the "King Roc Sutra". He also gained a complete fulfillment on his "Soul Capture Skill".

Zhang Tie promoted to LV 14 while singing songs. After that, he put all the demons and Master Abyan that he had killed into the same trouble-reappearance situation and mistreated them fiercely. This time, he felt the battle rather insipid. He could not seek any pleasure with them. Therefore, Zhang Tie remembered that huge deep-sea monster. He finally found back some feeling of freshness by fighting that huge deep-sea monster which had been killed by Stars and Moons Sword Sage in the trouble-reappearance situation.

However, such a battle became boring once again after a few months when Zhang Tie promoted to 2-star battle monster.

As he had realized a complete fulfillment of his "Soul Capture Skill", Zhang Tie found two more secret books from Secret Knowledge Pavilion when he was free. At this moment, Zhang Tie was tapping his interests rather than cultivating in such a lonely space.

The two secret books were both about how to release hidden weapons. They were not advanced secret books. Due to limited destructive force, hidden weapons were devalued by humans. Therefore, the two secret books were placed on the 5th floor of the secret knowledge pavilion, one was called "Nets Above and Snares Below", the other was called "One Thousand Hands and One Thousand Fingers". The two secret books were not too attractive to commoners. However, for Zhang Tie, the two secret books could raise his original advantages to the utmost. After combining with his strength and his extremely precise throwing skill, Zhang Tie grew stronger. This was how Zhang Tie chose to cultivate himself. He chose those secret books that could raise his advantages to the utmost instead of just choosing advanced secret books.

It was a distant and lonely journey from LV 14 battle monster to LV 15 battle spirit. Zhang Tie spent 2 years and 7 months on this process...

It was a tougher test about Zhang Tie's will and soul from LV 15 battle spirit to a knight. During this process, Zhang Tie almost couldn't stand to move closer to the time ball.

——Ants gather to seek for survival while powerful ones accompany with loneliness and stars.

Each time Zhang Tie read this would he grit his teeth and stick to his cultivation. Due to his persistence, Zhang Tie completed the most important metamorphosis in his life from inside to outside.

After tiding over the toughest 2 years of test, Zhang Tie felt that he had completely become purified inside. He felt like experiencing a sacred baptism as he started to sense a beautiful loneliness and silence under the stars. At the same time, he had a strong, brilliant life experience and recognition about his existence, which surpassed all the subjective senses and the bond in time and space. In such an experience, Zhang Tie knew that he could be free wherever he was and whatever he was doing...

Zhang Tie knew that this experience was the foundation for him to be a real powerhouse.

From then on, Zhang Tie completely forgot about time. He just cultivated, cultivated and cultivated...

Not knowing how long had passed, after lighting the 987th surging point calmly, Zhang Tie watched the 987 burning surging points. He found that those burning surging points had linked with each other and formed a marvelous chakra. A seed rune of "King Roc Sutra" then flew out of his Shrine from the chakra and displayed an image of a golden roc king who stretched out its huge wings...

Zhang Tie's qi sea and the Shrine surging point exploded at the



same time like how the universe came into being and turned into a void universe. Closely after that, his battle qi turned into solid and became a hot sun whose bright rays endlessly provided a powerful knight's battle qi for him...

At this moment, surging waves aroused in his mind sea, from where a bright moon rose up. The All-spirits Pagoda was above the bright moon. The moonlight cast off, breaking the qi sea at once.

Sunlight surging upward while moonlight pouring down. The two lights converged in Zhang Tie's chest, where the Chakra's core rested. Closely after that, the entire Chakra started to rotate like a machine that absorbed the sheer terror in the universe. At the same time, the overwhelming strength entered Zhang Tie's body. Zhang Tie gradually floated up as he radiated strong luster. Meanwhile, each of the cells in his body started to change qualitatively...

...

On September 1st, the battle of Upton City shocked the entire Blackson Humans Corridor...

On that day, 10 human knights from Norman Empire, Jinyun Country and Qilan Country, the three powerful human countries in the south and the north of Blackson Humans Corridor, raided the super demon corps outside Upton City. Assisted by over 10,000 human battle airships, the entire battlefield lasted over 1,000 miles from outside Upton City to the north after over 20 hours of fierce battle. The powerful super demon corps suffered a loss for the first time...

In this battle, one demon knight disappeared, one demon knight was heavily wounded. The entire corps suffered a loss of over 20,000 members. As a result, they had to evacuate towards the north...

The news that the allied forces of three human countries heavily mauled the super demon corps spread to the entire Blackson

Humans Corridor at once.

On the same day, another elite force of the major clans of Jinyun Country led by knights raided Angus Clan of Free Commercial Federation. Angus Clan's status as the member of Three-eye Association was exposed. The entire clan was exterminated. When everyone was shocked by the real status of Angus Clan, they also admired the wealth being plundered away by Angus Clan. It was said that the wealth of Angus Clan filled more than 50 airships...

After the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations was broken through by demons, humans finally won a battle in the north of the Blackson Humans Corridor through the battle of Nein City and the battle of Upton City. After drawing out a hidden force of Three-eye Association in the south of Blackson Humans Corridor, demons' aggressive momentum seemed to curb temporarily. Many humans saw the beach of hope.

However, through this battle, the Demon General's three-in-one strength also shocked everyone. As a result, one of the ten human knights was killed, two were heavily injured. Being blessed by the Demon General's three-in-one strength, although the super demon corps paid a price for this battle, the super demon corps still slid away from the thick airship encirclement of the three human countries.

...

September 11th, 10 days after the battle of Upton City, Huaiyuan Palace, Jinyun Country...

Elders of Huaiyuan Palace were sitting on cattail hassocks with solemn looks in the magnificent palace.

"Do you have any news about Zhang Tie?"

"No news yet! We've had Zhang Yang contact him. But there's still no response from Zhang Tie on Elder Muyuan's side..."

All the elders then let out a sigh inside while bending their

brows.

Right then, they heard a noise outside the palace.

After seeing Zhang Tie being chased by a demon knight and disappearing into the river, Elder Muray was feeling pretty bad. Therefore, after hearing the noise outside the palace, he roared, "Zhang Shun, who's outside there. Shut up!"

"Elder...there...there's some abnormal phenomena outside the palace. At the sight of the abnormal phenomena, the apprentices couldn't help but exclaim, "A shadowy figure appeared in front of the elders while his words were full of amazement."

"What abnormal phenomena?"

"Erm...please take a look outside, honorable elders!"

After exchanging glances with each other, all the elders walked out of the palace. Some deacons were watching the sky while widely opening their mouths. After looking up, the elders were left too stunned to utter any word.

Millions of fowls were hovering in the sky in the shape of a huge circular ring. They were twittering joyfully and circling around the sun. New birds joined them.

Even the elders had never seen or heard such a bizarre scene. What a great strength was behind those birds!

"Ah, elders, look!" A disciple abruptly shouted as he pointed at the pool outside the palace.

There were some golden fish and some precious golden huge turtles in the pool. However, at this moment, all the golden fish had shrunk to the bottom of the water and did not dare to move, they seemed to be scared of something. Being different from the tortoise, golden huge turtles were always high spirited and mighty. It was rare to see golden huge turtles bury their head and limbs in their shells. What was happening?

'Numerous birds are hovering in the sky while aquatic living beings are hiding at the bottom of the pool, what does this indicate?' The elders of Huaiyuan Palace exchanged glances with each other before revealing a shocking look at the same time...

The same shocking scene happened in all the places where birds and aquatic living beings existed, such as; Qilan Country, Norman Empire, Ice and Snow Wilderness, Taixia Country, even the entire Western Continent.

...

After accomplishing his cultivation, Zhang Tie yawned as he fell asleep. He woke up 3 days later...

After waking up, Zhang Tie continued to cultivate as usual like nothing had ever happened. Being different from before, Zhang Tie kept stabilizing and consolidating his realm with the time that was once used to light surging points. Gradually, the sunlight in his body grew more brilliant while the moonlight grew denser. Besides, the Chakra's rotation gradually became stabilized and more powerful like a huge millstone...

# Chapter 707: Off the Tower

---

After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie's cultivation pattern didn't change essentially in the tower of time. From one perspective, Zhang Tie just jumped out of a deep well and could see the outside world more clearly. The sky at the bottom of the well was not the entire world. It was more like a window. This world was much bigger than that Zhang Tie could imagine. The well mouth was not the highest point in this world; instead, it was just equal to the distance from the bottom of the well to the ground. The ground was called Black Iron Age. All those who could stand in this age by feet steadily had climbed out of the well. Those people had a common name——Black Iron Knights! They could control their own fates and the fates of others who were still in the well in this age.

However, that was just a beginning. From the ground outside of the well mouth, black iron knights could overlook all the living beings in the well who were still trying their best to jump and climb out of the well. Besides, black iron knights could also look to the distance. Naturally, they would look up at peaks in the far. Each peak represented the climax of the powerful civilization that had ever existed on the ground. The highest peak even deepened into the clouds and broke the heavens into the immortal nation that was built among the mysterious stars by gods.

Zhang Tie didn't overlook; neither did he look up. He chose to look at the front horizontally. After looking at a peak in the distance, Zhang Tie, who had just climbed out of the well mouth, slowly adjusted his breaths as he gradually straightened up his body. Closely after that, he walked towards one peak in his vision firmly step by step. Compared to the distance from the bottom of the well to its mouth, the following trip was longer and more difficult.

Those levels below knights could be divided by the number of

surging points being lit; however, above knights, each peak represented the Chakra of a new element and domain. It was pretty complex to form a new Chakra, which was over 100 times harder than lighting all the surging points. Many black iron knights were limited to this rank in their whole lives for hundreds of years because they could not form the 2nd Chakra.

...

5 years elapsed...

One day, when Zhang Tie woke up, he found one exit on the crystal wall which had been enclosed for 15 days. It was the entrance from where he came in 15 days ago. The runes on the crystal wall stopped running.

After blinking his eyes, Zhang Tie sat up from the crystal bed. Patting his a\*s, he walked towards the exit.

When he passed through that energy film, a whim occurred to his mind. Closely after that, he launched a punch towards the wall abruptly. The room then reverberated with a muffled thunder while vibrating for a second. At the same time, the runes in the crystal wall radiated strong luster and offset Zhang Tie's terrifying strength after quite a while.

Zhang Tie looked around before yawning and stretched out his limbs. Closely after that, he walked in that crystal aisle once again which looked like a kaleidoscope.

After coming to the crystal gate of the tower of time which was dozens of meters in height, Zhang Tie stretched out one hand and slightly pushed it open.

After Zhang Tie walked out of the tower of time, the crystal gate closed automatically. It would take 60 years to open the crystal gate again.

...

Nothing changed in this underground space. It was still how it

looked 15 years ago...two weeks ago. Standing at the entrance of the tower of time, Zhang Tie watched the mountain range in the distance and the glow at the top of the space. He then felt that he returned to the real world. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt refreshing once again. Like sprouted seeds and butterflies breaking out of cocoons, he faced this real and living world once again.

A long-lost smile reappeared in Zhang Tie's face.

'Previously, I slept 3 years in Castle of Black Iron like 1 day; recently, I lived 15 years in the tower of time which were equal to 15 days of outside. What a wonderful world!'

Being excited, Zhang Tie straightly sang a song loudly. With special tones of ancient Hua language, his song was fervent and passionate about how he felt at this moment. The underground space was like a big theater which could spread Zhang Tie's song into all directions...

...

In the underground ocean, the demon knight who was extremely infuriated was wrestling with a huge monster in the ocean.

Over the past two weeks, almost all the animals had been killed by this demon knight. Therefore, it transferred its battle field to the ocean. 3 days ago, it met a huge monster in the ocean.

That huge monster was a bizarre long, narrow fish longer than 50 m. It was covered with thickened-scales. Besides, it had a pair of bulged icy blue eyes and sharp teeth. With a strong killing qi, the water arrow being shot out of its mouth could reach over 1000 m away and penetrate through metals and stones. Additionally, its scales were very defensive. Common strikes could never hurt it. Moreover, this monster could move swiftly in the ocean. It was very smart. Even the demon knight could not catch up with it in the ocean. As long as it was in the disadvantageous situation, it would escape away by drilling into its narrow cave. Meanwhile, it would release rank poison, making the demon knight helpless.

After wrestling with this huge monster for 3 days, that demon knight still failed to kill it.

In the beginning, the demon knight just wanted to beat this monster; when it found this monster was very tricky who could release a rank poison to corrode its protective battle qi, another whim occurred to the demon knight's mind.

'Such a magical beast must have lived in the underground space for many years. It must have a high level. Its flesh and blood must contain a very high energy of qi and blood. It is a great supplement for demon knights who were not choosy in food. Additionally, its toxins or poison gland was a rare raw material for Demon General's cultivation of his all-poisonous battle qi.' Thinking of this, the demon knight determined to kill this magical beast.

After concluding the former two days of experience, this demon knight prepared a new set of tactics today. If it went smoothly, this magical beast would not escape today.

Realizing that the monster had shot out over 100 water arrows towards him at a decreasing speed and power, the demon knight knew that the magical beast had almost exhausted its strength. The demon knight became thrilled inside as it estimated that the magical beast would slow down its speed when it escaped away. Right then, a song drifted over here...

" Wild geese come back welcomes the spring 1 ,"

"Younger sister has one person in mind yo 2 ."

"Yellow and green grasses on the hillside hai 3 ."

"Your younger sister is waiting for you here again yo..."

After hearing the song, the magical beast who was wrestling with the demon knight quivered all over before diving into the water and exerting its utmost effort to escape towards its nestle as fast as a lightning bolt...

The demon knight was also stunned. As it didn't know about



songs, it could not identify the quality of this song. It only knew that it was a special language of Hua people, the No. 1 enemy of demons. Additionally, it sensed a great strength in this song. Like thunders, the song bounced back from the dome. What was more amazing was that there was someone else in this space, who was even singing a song.

The demon knight instantly recalled the person that he chased two weeks ago. With narrow eyes, he straightly flew towards the source of the song like a meteor.

"Morning glory blooms in night yo 4 ,"

"Your elder brother has a little secret hai 5 ."

"Sunrise brightens the ground yo,"

"You shine in my eyes hai."

The song was the best navigation. Flying in the air, the demon knight gradually became amazed about the source of the song—tower of time.

...

Singing the song, Zhang Tie frankly looked up while the demon knight flew towards here like a meteor.

"Wild geese fly towards south yo, twitters miserable hai,"

"After deserting your responsibility field, you have fertilized household plot."

"White legs yo, watery holes 6 hai,"

"Why you still leave yo."

"Aya...yo...aya...yo,"

"Why you still leave yo..."

At the end of the ancient Hua song marked as "xintianyou", Zhang Tie raised his voice passionately.

Soon after he finished the discourse filler "yo" had the demon

knight arrived in front of the tower of time. Watching Zhang Tie standing in front of the tower of time safe and sound, the demon knight was pretty shocked.

The demon knight suspended over 20 m above Zhang Tie and overlooked Zhang Tie while radiating a cruel glow and a bit amazement.

"As you're lucky enough to be the first audience of my nice song, you should applaud!" Zhang Tie teased casually.

The demon knight didn't realize that Zhang Tie was teasing him; instead, it just looked around rapidly. After finding no abnormal situations in the surroundings and ensuring that Zhang Tie had nowhere to go, the demon knight jeered, "I will see where you go this time."

Zhang Tie just watched that demon knight calmly as he smiled, "Hmm, it should be my dialogue."

The demon knight ignored Zhang Tie. It was also afraid that Zhang Tie might play tricks once again. Therefore, it appeared in front of Zhang Tie in a split second and punched towards Zhang Tie's head at once...

After being flushed over here and being replaced by an insect from entering the tower of time, the demon knight was always furious these days. When it caught sight of Zhang Tie, it couldn't wait to mistreat Zhang Tie blatantly.

The demon knight had determined to have Zhang Tie watch himself being shattered one piece after another...

However, the demon knight's terrifying punch didn't hit Zhang Tie; instead, it was blocked by Zhang Tie's palm, causing a muffled loud sound. Whereas, Zhang Tie's palm remained unchanged.

Before that demon knight responded, Zhang Tie had already kicked onto its lower abdomen. Like a shell being shot out, the demon knight was sent flying backward 100 m. It didn't stop until

knocking down some huge trees.

At this moment, Zhang Tie gradually floated in the air and stood still. After that, his eyes gradually turned icy while a strong qi covered his body...

After its protective battle qi was almost collapsed by Zhang Tie's punch, the demon knight widely opened its eyes...

"Boom..." Zhang Tie rushed towards that demon knight, causing a loud sonic sound in the air.

"No way..." The demon knight roared as it rushed towards Zhang Tie face-to-face once again.

The fierce collision between two knights started in the air...

...

# Chapter 708: The Battle of Knights

---

In the eyes of people below knights, the battle of knights was more like fierce collisions between two meteors. Actually, knights moved and attacked too fast to be captured by commoners' eyes. Therefore, many people thought that battle of knights was just constant collisions in the air. Whereas, in each split seconds, two knights had already moved and struck over 100 times.

After promoting to knights, movements and skills were abandoned first. In many battle skills, even if the cultivator had reached 15 LV, the movements and skills were still important in the battle. However, as long as the cultivator reached a knight, all the movements and skills would be nothing but laughingstocks.

When your opponent could smash you into bullsh\*t from 100 m away, who cared about your movements and skills?

The battle of knights would return to the combat between the most basic battle elements, namely; strength, speed, defensive power, power of battle qi and off-hand striking distance, senses and the sensitive control of the relative relationship between space and time from knights' heart. Due to differences in such elements, knights' battle pattern and style were different. As a result, knights with different battle styles would lead to fiercer and more mystical collisions.

Knights didn't fight on the ground. Because knights thought that they could suppress the ground and gain faster speed and wider moving space from the air. When on the ground, they could only move horizontally or upwards. Additionally, there was a disadvantage on the ground. Even though others' battle qi could not hit them, the shattered gravels and broken objects might cause the secondary strike to them; therefore, knights only fought in the air.

Zhang Tie had never experienced such a battle or had such an

enlightenment before. However, the moment he started the battle with this demon knight had he grasped the essentials of the battle of knights.

The demon knight who chased after Zhang Tie was definitely the top one among the demon knights under the hand of the Demon General, who had rich battle experiences. 15 days ago, when this demon knight hurt the human knight and started to chase after Zhang Tie, it had become the first powerful opponent, the best sharpener and teacher of Zhang Tie after he promoted to a knight.

If Zhang Tie had promoted to a knight just now, honestly, he might not be able to defeat this trump card demon knight. However, it had been 5 years since Zhang Tie promoted to a knight. After 5 years of assiduous cultivation, Zhang Tie had completely consolidated his knight's Chakra. Therefore, he displayed his super powerful and steady battle force in this battle and gradually dominated the battle.

Because each knight's protective battle qi was as resistant as a natural armor, the first step for Zhang Tie to pose an essential harm to the demon knight was to break its protective battle qi. Even if the protective battle qi was broken temporarily, it would be gradually fixed from the demon knight's body. That was to say, each knight had a super great ability to resist strike by constantly recovering their protective battle qi. This also interpreted the sheer terror of knights. In such a case, the battle of knights could not be easily solved within a short period if not exerting their utmost effort; instead, knights would always wrestle with each other for a long time.

They had to fight in close quarters when entering the fiercest state or at the risk of their lives.

Knights could release long-distance strikes; however the most effective way was to fight in close quarters, in which case, knights would strike each other with naked punches, weapons, and battle qi. Fighting in close quarters would be more destructive to knights'

protective battle qi than pure long-distance strikes. Meanwhile, it posed a higher request to knights.

If knights were striking each other from a long distance, after one party's protective battle qi was broken, due to the long distance, the weaker party would have enough buffering time to recover his protective battle qi; however, when fighting in close quarters, if one party's protective battle qi was broken, the weaker party might face another dozens or hundreds of strikes on the same point before recovering his protective battle qi because of a transient negligence. The result would be very risky in a split second.

For knights, fighting in close quarters was like how commoners fought with bayonets.

The knight of Three-eye Association being killed by Zhang Tie outside Mocco City also defeated its opponent in close quarters.

After the battle really started, the battlefield of Zhang Tie and that demon knight soon moved to the woods from the tower of time. After destroying a wide area of forest, they flew over the mountain range and transferred to the underground ocean. Closely after that, they fought in close quarters.

The demon knight realized that Zhang Tie was learning to fight. As a knight, Zhang Tie's battle style was a bit immature at the beginning; however, Zhang Tie soon grew up in the battle. The demon knight clearly knew what did this mean.

"You're the one who entered the tower of time?" The demon knight immediately understood it while its eyes turned bloody.

However, there was one point that the demon knight had not thought through, 'How did he enter? Is there another gate of the tower of time?' However, no matter how it racked its mind, the demon knight never realized that Zhang Tie was that little black beetle who flew in the tower of time through the crack. Even though Zhang Tie was an animal controller and could control the

little beetle to ruin its good plan, the demon knight didn't believe that Zhang Tie could incarnate into a beetle, who, although might be able to change his look. However, although Zhang Tie was a new knight, his performance was utterly different from a newbie who had just promoted to a knight from aspects such as strength, speed, response and knight's consciousness.

Zhang Tie just accelerated his movements silently while the leaking battle qi boiled the sea level within 400-500 m.

After 20 minutes, Zhang Tie roared as he broke the defense of the demon knight's hands and retreated quickly. Within 0.01 seconds, he broke its protective battle qi using 20 punches. When the demon knight launched the final counter-attack towards Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie just bore it frankly with his own protective battle qi. At the same time, he broke through the demon knight's chest with one punch, exposing his punch from its back.

The demon knight's body exploded into pieces while its fleshes fell into the ocean...

Zhang Tie instantly grabbed its storage bag in the air...

# Chapter 709: A New Start

---

Standing in the void, Zhang Tie watched that demon knight's flesh falling into the ocean, gradually disappearing in the bloody ripples.

This was the terror of close combat of knights. If it was a long-distance combat, given the agility and maneuvering ability of knights in the air, Zhang Tie sensed that their battle might not come to an end for a whole day. However, facing such a bayonet-charge, the combat had come to an end in a few hours the moment the demon knight's protective battle qi was broken through. No matter how majestic was the demon knight before and how many difficulties had it experienced on the road towards a knight, all of its honors and brilliant bygones became bygones the moment its protective battle qi was broken through by Zhang Tie.

At the critical moment, the demon knight wanted to escape or just intended to enlarge the distance between them so that its protective battle qi could be fixed. But how could Zhang Tie allow that to happen?

As a combat between two species, mercy didn't exist.

'What if my protective battle qi was broken through by a demon knight one day?'

Through this battle experience, Zhang Tie realized the cruelty of the combat between knights. He had to consider about counter-measures in the critical situation. 'What if my opponent was the Demon General?' Zhang Tie had to consider it as it was related to his life during the critical situation.

The Chakra slowly rotated in Zhang Tie's body, which offset the gravity from the core of the planet, enabling Zhang Tie to suspend in the void.

Various thoughts occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. Those basic



elements in the combat of knights revolved in Zhang Tie's mind like burning lanterns. Each distinctive battle element would develop into different battle styles and be used to respond to different dangers. Zhang Tie felt that each whim was either right or wrong...

Finally, watching the clear ocean, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh as he forgot all the whims. 'As I've just promoted to a knight, in Knights' ranks, at this moment, I'm nothing. There's a long way to go and many things to learn in the future. Just take it easy.'

After thinking it through, Zhang Tie started to fly around this underground space to discover the situation. Since he came to this underground space, he had not made a complete investigation of this space yet.

After a few hours, Zhang Tie finally had a general recognition of this underground space.

The entire underground space was about 250,000 sq km. The entire underground ocean covered about 500 sq miles, 1/5 of the entire area of the underground space. In the big island where the tower of time rested, there were 13 waterfalls. All the water that flew into this space penetrated into the earth naturally. Some plants and woods in the island were severely destroyed while many animals had been killed. At the sight of the scene, Zhang Tie had already realized that who did it. 'What a mad!'

The entire underground space was like an isolated underground bubble, which had no exit at all.

After flying to the dome, Zhang Tie picked off some stones that were radiating glow. It was a special, pure ore. Given its luminosity, it might be a fluorite. However, it was not as icy as fluorite; instead, it touched a bit warm. Zhang Tie didn't know its name, neither did he know whether it was valuable or not. As there were so many such ores on the dome, with the great ability as a knight, Zhang Tie casually dug about 7-8 tons of them and threw

them into Castle of Black Iron.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie returned to Castle of Black Iron.

...

"Congratulations, castle lord, you've promoted to a knight!"

Watching Zhang Tie appearing in the palace of the palace tree, Heller greeted Zhang Tie as if he had long expected that Zhang Tie would come in.

The palace was actually a hollow on the palace tree. However, it was really a magnificent hollow. The entire palace tree was natural, which was full of exotic natural aesthetic feelings. The ground of the palace was paved with a layer of natural, crystal material which was similar to quartz. A string of exotic fruits like huge grapes hanging off the top of the half-round dome about dozens of meters. Of course, they were not grapes, but an exotic nestle of fireflies which were naturally carried by the palace tree. Fireflies drilled into the nestle and danced around the nestle while the string of huge grapes started to radiate tender light and brightened the entire palace like a string of huge crystal lamps.

No artificial traces such as right angle, squares, cubes and strictly symmetric geometric patterns could be seen in the entire palace tree. Everything here complied with natural rules. Everything here carried a harmonious, natural aesthetic perception. Even the front gate of the palace was in the shape of a tree leaf. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie felt a bit strange; however, the longer he looked around here, the more comfortable he would find everything here to be.

In the daytime, the fireflies didn't come out. Two sea-tortoise-sized cute beetles were cleaning all the wastes inside the palace tree with a terrifying appetite.

The few cabins had now become more than 300 rooms in the palace tree. All the houses were distinctive as they all distributed on the trunk and twigs of the palace tree. Bigger rooms were on the

trunk while smaller ones were on the twigs. However, due to different spatial locations, the rooms were not interconnected. The palace tree grew out those rooms naturally along with odd-looking types of furniture and utilities. Zhang Tie's big bed was a huge shell while Zhang Tie's costume room was a huge pumpkin that was completely hollowed out and was divided into some layers. All the rooms had different sceneries both inside and outside.

The palace tree rooted deep in the hinterland of the immortal mountain. Being crisscrossed, they formed an underground maze, there was also a tunnel towards the underground space.

There weren't any magnificent ornaments inside here. Everything here could only be seen in fairytales for kids, which was out of humans' imaginations. Each time Zhang Tie came back would he feel relaxed. If he built such a building in the shape of the palace tree in the outside world, he would arouse a great shock for sure.

The most marvelous thing was that this palace tree was alive as it could constantly grow out new rooms...

Zhang Tie felt that he had not come here for 15 years.

After greeting Heller, he threw a deep glance around before walking towards the small tree.

The small tree was in the middle of the palace while being tightly surrounded by pedal-shaped stairs, which indicated a sacred aesthetic.

Zhang Tie walked upstairs and came to the small tree.

As was imagined by him, due to the great time torsion, the connection between him and the small tree was cut off; although he had passed 15 years in the tower of time, he only got three leakless fruits on the small tree, one of which just became ripe today.

One iron-body fruit might come into being when he escaped from

the demon knight in the subterranean torrents.

The iron-armored demons' fruit of source had already grown ripe.

One trouble-reappearance fruit was also hanging over the small tree.

The fruit of brilliance of the 287 b\*stards of Three-eye Association in the hunting castle of Angus Clan also became ripe. At the sight of the fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie had felt the surging spiritual energy inside. Although the greater part of the 287 b\*stards were below LV 6, the total of their spiritual energy became very considerable.

There were two fruits of judgment, one contained medium "soul consolidating rune", the other contained medium "tracing rune".

Zhang Tie blinked his eyes twice as he thought that he had a blurry vision. After circling around the small tree, he didn't see any more fruits. 'These fruits should be formed before I promoted to a knight. But what about the later fruits? After promoting to the knight, I killed a demon knight. Why is there no fruit?'

Zhang Tie became hopeless when he found no more new fruits on the small tree.

"Sorry, castle lord, manjusaka karma fruit tree could not produce any fruit concerning the demon knight!" Heller's voice sounded.

Zhang Tie turned around and watched Heller, "But why? When I killed that knight of Three-eye Association last time, I was also rewarded with some kinds of fruits, including the rare fruit of bloodline."

"Any demon, once they became a knight, would follow some powerful rules. Each fruit of manjusaka fruit tree is the result of a rule. It confirms to the rules when there are fruits; it also confirms to the rules if no fruit is produced!" Heller watched Zhang Tie with a kind and wise look, "Manjusaka karma fruit tree won't create

rules; it only comply with and display rules!"

"What are the rules?"

"Castle lord, if you grew powerful enough that even the manjusaka karma fruit tree could not produce any fruit for you one day, you would know what are the rules!"

'If you grew powerful enough that even the manjusaka karma fruit tree could not produce any fruit for you...' Zhang Tie became stunned after hearing Heller's words. He had never heard this before. Therefore, the moment he heard this, Zhang Tie felt terrified inside.

"Of course, any existence has its own limit in strength. Nothing could break its limit in strength. A person could only raise an item as high as his height plus the length of his arm. There was no exception. Certainly, manjusaka karma fruit tree also has its limit. However, the limit is still far away from your current ability, castle lord. Therefore, castle lord, you don't need to worry about this problem for a long time. It's my great honor to see you reach that limit!" Heller explained respectfully.

"You mean I would not get any fruit no matter how many demon knights could I kill in the future?"

"You got that!"

Zhang Tie drew in a deep breath as he accepted this fact...

After that, Zhang Tie accepted another fact, namely, he felt the small tree could provide him less assistance abruptly.

The 3 leakless fruits soon integrated into that sun in the void of his qi ocean silently in the form of three strands of energy, making the battle-qi luster to radiate from the sun a bit brighter.

After eating the iron-body fruit, Zhang Tie didn't have any special feeling.

Zhang Tie knew that this was the necessary stage in the process

of his growth. After promoting to the knight, those things which had a remarkable effect on improving his battle force turned trivial. When he was in the school of Blackhot City, with 3 leakless fruits, he could light one surging point and become outstanding among his classmates.

Among those fruits, only iron-armored demons' fruit of source and that fruit of brilliance could remarkably increase Zhang Tie's battle force.

After eating the iron-armored demons' fruit of source, Zhang Tie felt that his energy, being triggered by his surging points, increased by  $\frac{1}{12}$  once again while his Chakra rotated in a more powerful way. After eating that fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie felt that his spiritual energy increased by almost  $\frac{1}{10}$ .

'It seems to be the last supper. Although I could still have a chance to take fruits of brilliance in the future, it's less effective to me. Because the base of my spiritual energy has been very huge at this moment, the spiritual energy being increased by the fruit of brilliance becomes relatively less. As for the other fruit of source, it depends. I've already eaten the fruits of source of wing demons and iron-armored demons, which are the most popular species of demons and the main arm of services among demons. Other demon species are relatively fewer in quantity. As for rare species such as shadow demon, I could barely eat their fruit of source. There might even not be 360 shadow demons in total in this world.'

With medium "soul consolidating rune" and medium "tracing rune", Zhang Tie gained a new high in the two skills.

The trouble-reappearance fruit also became useless. The trouble-reappearance situation was that Zhang Tie chased after demons outside Upton City. Over 1,000 demons existed in the trouble-reappearance fruit. Before Zhang Tie promoted to a knight, such a trouble-reappearance fruit would be very useful for Zhang Tie; however, after Zhang Tie promoted to the knight, the trouble-

reappearance fruit became useless to him.

"Knight" was a new platform, starting from which everything was new.

It took Zhang Tie 1 day to digest those fruits.

On the next day, Zhang Tie took a bath in Castle of Black Iron for the first time after staying in the tower of time for 15 years. After that, he laid in his huge bed and had a sound sleep. When he got up, he put on a set of clean warrior's clothes that he plundered from Upton City and left Castle of Black Iron in a refreshing way.

...

Zhang Tie then came to the tower of time.

He moved the two giants' skeletons, their weapons and the two huge crystal chairs into Castle of Black Iron completely. He put them outside the gate of the palace tree. The moment he put them there, the entire palace tree became majestic. Those items were much better than any ornaments.

As for the tower of time, although Zhang Tie dreamed to put it away in Castle of Black Iron, he finally gave it up after making attempts for a while. Even though he had become a knight, it was also out of his reach to move such a mountain-sized item.

After glancing at the marvelous crystal tower hundreds of times pitifully, Zhang Tie finally left this underground space.

There was no other exit in this underground space except for that cave behind the waterfall where he fell off. Therefore, Zhang Tie could only return to the cave while lifting against the current.

It was out of others' imagination to do this; even knights could barely overcome such turbulent current. Not every knight could accept such a challenge. However, it was easy for Zhang Tie who had just promoted to a knight.

Zhang Tie opened the tunnel leading to Castle of Black Iron in

front of him. As long as the speed of sucking water flow in Castle of Black Iron was greater than that of the water flow flushing downward, Zhang Tie could be easily pushed upward by the great thrust.

As Zhang Tie walked in the underground tunnel, he kept leaving marks that could only be identified by himself. When he came down here, he didn't have time to leave marks. As it was a watercourse at the beginning which was twisted and familiar in many places, even with knight's consciousness, he could still not remember it clearly. Therefore, when he returned, he had to leave marks. 'As the tower of time would open again after 6 decades, I might come here again then.'

After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie felt that he should go back to Huaiyuan Palace and clearly explain everything. 'As Huaiyuan Palace is benevolent to me, I should be grateful...'



# Chapter 710: A Shock

---

With a splash, Zhang Tie exposed his head out of the water. Watching the skyline and the surrounding ridges, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh, 'Wuh, finally came out of the water.'

That was a deep pool in the valley, right on one side of a river. There were flourish woods in the surroundings. A waterfall flushed off in the distance. A brook flew by this place. A subterranean river was under the deep pool. It was 8-9 o'clock in the morning when the sun had just risen up. The thin mist in the valley had not completely faded away.

Two small beasts like David's deer were drinking on the side of the deep pool. At the sight of the ripples caused by Zhang Tie, they hurriedly ran away.

As was imagined, after Zhang Tie rushed out of that huge underwater swirl and circled around the watercourse system which was as complex as a three-dimensional maze, he finally got lost although he racked his mind.

In that case, as long as he swam against the current and moved upwards, he would get closer to the ground. Therefore, after determining his mind, Zhang Tie rushed upwards along one watercourse.

On the halfway, the water flow converged into a new surging subterranean river and flew towards the south. Watching this, Zhang Tie became reassured. He just rushed as fast as a bolt along the flow. 2 days later, after seeing a new water flow above the subterranean river, Zhang Tie chose to move upwards once again. After repeating this a few times, he finally saw the sunlight under the water. Therefore, he accelerated towards the sunlight and finally exposed his head out of the deep pool.

The distance of this journey might match that when Zhang Tie went to Ice and Snow Wilderness by sea-route for the first time.

The scenery in the subterranean river was really fantastic.

With the protection of his protective battle qi, Zhang Tie was still dry all over even though he had traveled 2 days in the water.

After looking at the surroundings, Zhang Tie instantly flew out of the deep pool like a rocket before the Catastrophe. In a split second, he had already flown 3,000-4,000 m in height, from where he could see everything below his feet clearly.

At the sight of the undulating mountain range, Zhang Tie knew it was Kalay Mountain Range. However, its location should be the southern edge of Kalay Mountain Range. Therefore, Zhang Tie could see the plain and the outline of a city in the distance from here.

Zhang Tie bore the surrounding terrain in mind. Besides, he made marks all the way out of the underground space. If he wanted to return to that underground space, he only needed to follow his marks back.

After identifying the direction, Zhang Tie straightly flew towards the city in the distance.

As long as he was close to that city, Zhang Tie would be able to identify his precise location after referring to the urban map on the south of Kalay Mountain Range in his memory. After that, he would be able to choose the proper route to go back to Huaiyuan Palace...

Whereas, Zhang Tie didn't know that after he appeared in the sky for less than half a minute, his movement had been caught by a pair of bright and sharp eyes.

...

On the top of a bald mountain being covered with gravel and weeds over 10 miles away from Zhang Tie, there was a trivial rock. Two low bushes were on the side of the rock. A pair of sharp eyes were gazing tightly at Zhang Tie behind a high-powered military

anti-reflective telescope. Some soldiers in mountainous camouflage uniforms were hiding in a narrow space beneath that rock. They kept gnawing dried rations while gazing at Zhang Tie. They all looked a bit nervous and excited.

After staying here over 1 month, they felt bored every day. The appearance of Zhang Tie made them spirited at once.

This was the significance of these soldiers here. Even though they had not found anything useful over the past months, once they found it, they would enable human countries in the north of Kalay Mountain Range to make a response in advance.

After the human defense in Selnes Theater of Operations collapsed, especially after the battle of Upton City came to an end 2 weeks ago, many human countries close to the south of Kalay Mountain Range and Blackson Central Nations Federation had arranged a large number of scouts and observation posts in Kalay Mountain Range so that they could monitor the situation here around the clock. This observation post was a hidden post arranged by the Blackson Central Nations Federation in Kalay Mountain Range.

"Speed?"

The human soldier who was holding the telescope asked his partner who was gazing at the optical velometer.

"0.6 Mach!"

"Send the warning right away. An unidentified knight is breaking through D16 observation area and flying towards Barlin City at the speed of 0.6 Mach from the north..."

Another human soldier in the narrow observation post instantly took out a portable remote-sensing crystal communication device and sent out the message at once.

Closely after he sent out the message had Zhang Tie got rid of this observation area and turned into a blurry black spot.

"Knight!" The soldier holding the optical velometer swallowed his saliva and said excitedly, "I've not imagined that we could really discover a knight in the sky. It's my first time to see a knight!" After saying that, the soldier found that his team leader was still gazing at the telescope, "Boss, what are you looking at?"

The guy, who had just commanded the other scouts to send out the message in the observation post, moved his eyes away from the telescope as he let out a deep sigh, "I was watching whether that guy was flying towards us. If so, we have to escape in different directions! If we're lucky enough, one of us might survive."

"Ah? No way. That guy is so far away from us. How could he discover us?" The soldier who was holding the optical velometer asked out of amazement.

The team leader didn't say anything. He just pointed at a terrifying scar from his left face all the way to his neck and explained, "Last time, we were 5 miles away from the demon knight. When we gazed at him, we were sensed. That b\*stard flew towards us and attacked us from 100 m away like patting flies. As a result, only 1 of all the 24 scouts survived. That was me. I was almost buried alive..."

After hearing this, everybody in the observation post became shocked.

"This is...too exaggerating."

"Dawson, remember, unless you could promote to a knight one day, run away as far as possible when you see a demon knight flying towards you, no matter whether you're a regimental commander, division head, army commander or corps general. Never think that demon knight could not discover you; never think that you could survive a demon knight's punch. Small figures like us had better not be too eye-catching in front of a knight. If we could survive a knight's strike unfortunately, we'd better remain still. In that case, the only way to save ourselves is to

disguise to be dead on the ground. In that case, even if the demon knight knew that you're not dead, he would not waste a strike on small figures like us."

Everyone in the observation post nodded solemnly at the same time.

"Alright, hurry, prepare for it. We will transfer to No. 2 observation post. I don't know whether that knight has discovered us or not. Perhaps he had discovered us, yet he didn't feel like wasting time on us. Those who can fly at the speed of 0.6 Mach are always tricky among knights. If it's a demon knight, it might move back to exterminate us all!"

After hearing the team leader's words, everyone in the observation post became flurried. They hurriedly prepared to evacuate from the observation post. Before leaving, they set a small colorful smoking jar in the observation post. When this smoking jar was attacked by the demon knight, the smoking jar would crack and release the smoke. They would know that the knight was coming back.

Scouts always used this trick. Although being trivial, it was very useful.

...

Zhang Tie indeed had sensed that he was being observed by someone, who might be hunters in the mountain, scouts dispatched by human countries in the south of Kalay Mountain Range or wanderers. He ignored them. Because demons' force had not reached here for the time being, it was unnecessary for him to waste time on killing them.

Zhang Tie flew at the speed of about 200 m per second, namely 720 miles per hour. Zhang Tie felt that he could fly all the way to Huaiyuan Prefecture at this speed easily.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't know how amazing his ability

was among all the knights. After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie thought that all the knights had such a long-distance flight ability. He thought that all the knights were accomplishing long-distance movement in this manner.

At this speed, the city soon appeared in front of Zhang Tie. On the east side of the city, there was a big river. After matching the big river to the terrain surrounding the city, Zhang Tie immediately remembered a city called Barlin City among the countries in the south of Kalay Mountain Range.

Barlin City was still 10,000 miles away from Huaiyuan Palace. After confirming his own coordinates, Zhang Tie slightly adjusted his flight direction and flew towards Huaiyuan Palace.

...

Zhang Tie didn't know how many people had he scared on the way towards the south. After the observation post in the south of Kalay Mountain Range sent out the first message, the intelligence center of the headquarter of Central Nations Federations in Blackson Humans Corridor had become busy. Messages were constantly sent to member nations from the intelligence center one after another. Those member nations gave more feedbacks to the intelligence center. Zhang Tie didn't know how many eyes were gazing at him wherever he passed.

The moment he flew over Barlin City had a commissioned officer hurriedly ran off the observation post and sent out another message as fast as possible.

...

"An unidentified knight is flying over Barlin City at the speed of 0.6 Mach per hour; direction angle 14 degrees southwest..."

...

40 minutes later...

"Investigation airship outside Sedina City of Nio Kingdom finds

an unidentified knight flying towards the south at the speed of 0.6 Mach in the direction angle of 14 degrees southwest..."

...

20 minutes later...

"Observation post on Campbell Mountain, Saint Cru Alliance finds an unidentified knight flying towards the south at the speed of 0.6 Mach in the direction angle of 14 degrees southwest..."

...

30 minutes later...

"Bronique Star Observation Platform finds an unidentified knight flying towards the south at the speed of 0.6 Mach in the direction angle of 14 degrees southwest..."

All those who paid attention to this message were shocked inside. 'Flying over 1,000 miles in less than 2 hours. What for?'

After drawing a straight line along Zhang Tie's flight route, they found a major city on the line being aligned with the flight direction of that unidentified knight, the capital of Raymlan Empire being not far from Bronique City.

Given from the map, after leaving Barlin City, that unidentified knight was rushing all the way towards the capital of Raymlan Empire like a sharp bolt!

After figuring it out, many people became startled.

...

Zhang Tie didn't know how many people had been scared on the ground. After flying over 1,200 miles over the past 100 minutes, Zhang Tie found that his way forward was blocked by almost 1,000 battle airships in different sizes and a knight.

The knight looked as old as those elders in Huaiyuan Palace. Being strong in a navy blue armor and snowwhite mustache, he was holding a brilliant battle sword while suspending in the sky

with a solemn look.

"Jaray, the No. 1 knight of Raymlan Empire invites the arriver to stop!" The knight said solemnly as he waved his long sword, releasing a sharp sword qi across 200 m in front of Zhang Tie.

...



# Chapter 711: A Misunderstanding

---

The alleged No. 1 knight was similar to a nationwide employed knight. The only difference was that nationwide employed knights served a nation or royals while employed knights served clans that had not established countries. If demons completely occupied Blackson Humans Corridor in the future, Senel Clan might be rewarded with a nation. If so, that knight employed by Senel Clan might be the No. 1 knight of their nation or a corps leader.

Any knight would be at least a corps leader in Blackson Humans Corridor if they took an office in the army. However, there were many human countries in Blackson Humans Corridor, none of their armies contained more than 400,000 soldiers. None of the countries were able to establish and sustain the needs of a corps. Therefore, if one country could have one knight on their side, even if the knight could not take the office as a corps leader, he would become the alleged No. 1 knight of the country.

The No. 1 knight of a country was like a lifetime marshal, which was the supreme battle force of a country. Countries with one No. 1 knight would be much more powerful than those without and weaker than those countries which could establish corps. These countries were the pillar ones with the greatest battle forces in Blackson Humans Corridor.

The Symbian Republic and Raymlan Empire were both such countries. However, the No. 1 knight of Symbian Republic sacrificed himself outside Mocco City while the No. 1 knight of Raymlan Empire was standing in front of Zhang Tie.

Some countries and powers had hundreds of thousands of soldiers; however, they still could not attract knights to serve them. Over 70% of the human countries in Blackson Humans Corridor were like this, such as the former Andaman Alliance, the current Free Commercial Federation, Cross Star Commercial Federation, Holland Republic, Titanic Duchy and that Holy Golden

Orchid Empire, etc..

Countries like Norman Empire and Jinyun Country which could establish corps all ranked first in Blackson Humans Corridor, especially Hua countries like Jinyun Country. In Jinyun Country, all the major Hua clans could cultivate knights. The number of knights in the major Hua clans in Jinyun Country also ranked first across Blackson Humans Corridor. The mighty Jinyun Country was also a powerful epitome of Hua people in this age.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the No. 1 knight of Raymlan Empire could block his way.

Given the knight's sword qi, Zhang Tie knew that he was not weak. Such a sword qi could exterminate anyone below "knight" from 200 m away. However, for Zhang Tie, it was just not bad. Compared to the demon knight that Zhang Tie had just killed, this one might even be weaker.

After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie's perception also rose to the level of knights. He started to treat everything with the insight and mentality of knights.

Although Zhang Tie was flying at the speed of about 200 m per second, at the sight of the sword qi crossing his way, Zhang Tie stopped instantly. He transiently completed his conversion between extreme high-speed movement and extreme static.

Seeing how Zhang Tie stopped, that knight called Jaray frowned as he made his decision to kill Zhang Tie...

Zhang Tie's extremely young look made Jaray more alert.

Besides being taller and stronger, Zhang Tie's look remained unchanged. He was still as same as that at the age of 16 in Blackhot City. Those who were familiar with Zhang Tie wouldn't feel that Zhang Tie's look was special. However, in the eyes of Jaray, Zhang Tie looked extremely "monstrous", 'A 16-year old knight? No way!'

Therefore, Jaray was sure that this unidentified knight had

hidden his true look purposefully. 'It's already evil for such a powerful knight to disguise himself as a Hua man; additionally, he wants to raid the capital of Raymlan Kingdom. It will be more dangerous.'

If such a powerful knight was allowed in the capital of Raymlan Empire, it would be a real catastrophe.

Similar events once happened in former holy wars. This also indicated the terror of knights. Nothing else could stop a knight except knights.

Right then, the royals in Saint Maner City, the capital of Raymlan Empire had already started the evacuation procedures. All the royal members were in an emergency evacuation...

...

"What do you want?" Zhang Tie muffled his voice unpleasantly when he was blocked by someone forcefully.

"Your Excellency, although Raymlan Empire is a small country, you're still not allowed to enter Saint Maner City, the capital of Raymlan Empire unless you step on my corpse..." Jaray said solemnly as he put his long sword horizontally. Meanwhile, his cyan battle-qi totem rushed to the sky.

Closely after that, all the battle airships behind him started to change their formation as if they had already received the signal to fight. The huge net gradually transformed into a huge ball. Having served in airship troop for a long time, of course, Zhang Tie knew what did the ball formation mean. It meant that the airships were going to collaborate with each other and fight him to death. So many battle airships in different sizes were going to fight a knight, what a tragic scene!

Honestly, if this knight Jaray said a jargon such as, "This mountain belongs to me, this tree is planted by me; if you want to pass by, leave your money", Zhang Tie would never feel strange.

However, when Jaray thought that Zhang Tie was going to invade Saint Maner City, the capital of Raymlan Empire, Zhang Tie became dumbfounded and almost cried, 'What the hell! I'm just in a rush. How the hell can I be framed in this way?'

Now that it was a misunderstanding, Zhang Tie's unpleasure faded away at once.

"Your Excellency, you must have misunderstood me. I'm just in a rush!" Zhang Tie explained calmly.

"Hahaha..." Jaray burst out into laughter before glaring at Zhang Tie, "You're in a rush? That's the best joke that I've ever heard. As a knight, why do you fabricate such a laughingstock? You really think that nobody in Raymlan Empire could stop you? 2 hours ago, you flew over Kalay Mountain Range and Barlin City before flying 1,000 miles towards Saint Maner City in such an aggressive way. You call it "in a rush"? It was Goddess Lake behind Saint Maner City which lasts 2,000 miles. You tell me you're going to fly over 3,000 miles only "in a rush?" I've never heard that any knight across Blackson Humans Corridor could fly over 2,000 miles without a stop. You flew over 1,000 miles in only 2 hours towards Saint Maner City, dare you say it is not a raid?"

After hearing Jaray's words, Zhang Tie became stunned as he instantly found the problem, 'Erm...erm...can't all knights fly forever? I didn't find any problem in the flight yet. It's so easy. According to Jaray, it's uneasy for a knight to fly over 1,000 miles. I just flew at a normal speed, why did it become aggressive in others' eyes? Why do they think I am targeting Saint Maner City?'

'Does it mean that other knights could not have such a great flight performance? Saint Maner City is a major air traffic hub in the south of Blackson Humans Corridor which is closest to Kalay Mountain Range. Therefore, my flight route aroused their misunderstanding.'

Zhang Tie realized that he had made a low-end mistake. As he

had just promoted to a knight, he thought all the knights could have such a great flight performance. Therefore, he just flew wherever he wanted.

Zhang Tie almost forgot that he was cultivating an emperor-level secret knowledge, the "King Roc Sutra" that nobody else had cultivated in this world.

In the world, there were totally 2 emperor-level secret books, "Xuanyuan God Sutra", which was cultivated by Xuanyuan Emperor's clan members in Taixia Country. As to "King Roc Sutra", Zhang Tie was the only one who reached above LV 11.

'After returning to Huaiyuan Palace, I have to report to the elders that I've promoted to a knight. Additionally, after promoting to a knight, I became more confident to return to Huaiyuan Palace. I could face the elders frankly. However, if the secret that I am cultivating "King Roc Sutra" is exposed to the public, it will arouse an earthquake.

In a split second, various whims occurred to Zhang Tie's mind, 'It seems that I have to give up the mind to fly towards Huaiyuan palace in case of arousing the attention of the public. If I just flew over 10,000 miles back to Huaiyuan Palace arrogantly, I might never live a peaceful life in the future.'

Seeing Zhang Tie being silent, Jaray confirmed his hypothesis. Watching Zhang Tie's young face, Jaray sneered, "Now that we're going to fight, why not show your real look. It's heard that the Three-eye Association also have some powerful knights. If you still hide your real look at this moment, it would ruin your dignity as a powerhouse. You're really whimsy, how can you disguise as a young man."

Being wordless, Zhang Tie just rubbed his face, 'When I disguised as others, nobody had ever identified my real look; however, when I'm showing my real look, nobody believes in me. How dramatic!'

Zhang Tie sighed as he watched the No. 1 knight of Raymlan

Empire calmly, "Your Excellency, you must have misunderstood me. I'm Zhang Tie. I'm in my real look. I'm from Huaiyuan Palace, Jinyun Country. I want to go back to Huaiyuan Palace by the airship in Saint Maner City!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Jaray became stunned as it was completely out of his imagination.

In a split second, Jaray recovered his composure as he burst out into laughter, "Is there any young elder like you in Huaiyuan Palace, Jinyun Country? Now that you're a human knight, please show me your knight plate."

"What is a Knight plate?" Zhang Tie became amazed.

"You're really good at disguising!" Jaray sneered, "Now that you're a knight from Huaiyuan Palace, don't tell me that you've not been to the Mountain of Brightness."

Having just promoted to a knight, Zhang Tie knew nothing about the world of knights. He didn't know anything about the Mountain of Brightness and knight plate.

"I've just promoted to a knight and I'm about to rush back to Zhang Clan. I'm not an elder of Huaiyuan Palace yet. Therefore, I don't have a knight plate!"

Watching Zhang Tie's calm look and hearing his stable reply, Jaray became dubious...

'If Zhang Tie was really a knight on the side of Three-eye Association or demon, he should have started the fight as soon as possible. He doesn't need to waste time with me here. The longer he stays here, the more disadvantageous it would be for him and the more possible that he might be caught up by other human knights behind him. As a result, he might finally be surrounded in Saint Maner City. I'd also talk with him so as to prolong time. After a few more hours, one of my friends would arrive.'

Jaray gazed at Zhang Tie with an experienced vicious look as he

suddenly asked, "Now that you want to go to Saint Maner City, do you mind us giving you a favor by an airship? In Hua language, Raymlan Empire should show the rite to you as the host."

Zhang Tie replied with a faint smile as he got Jaray's intention. 'Now that we're not enemy, I want to ask this human knight some questions by this chance in case of loopholes.'

"Alright. I wonder which is your flagship airship, Your Excellency. After traveling so long, I'm a bit tired. I also want to take a rest!" Zhang Tie replied frankly.

Jaray threw a deep glance at Zhang Tie. Although he was still alert about Zhang Tie, he had already put away his battle-qi totem.

"Come with me!"

Saying this, Jaray flew towards the airship troop in the distance at the speed of about 100 m per second.

Zhang Tie just kept about 100 m away from Jaray.

As Jaray flew, he kept noticing Zhang Tie. After finding that Zhang Tie was still not anxious, Jaray doubted, 'Is he a real knight of Huaiyuan Palace? But he's too young. I've not heard about such a young knight in Huaiyuan Palace these couple of years. It's heard that Lan Yunxi, the princess of Huaiyuan Palace is just LV 12. She's even served in Selnes Theater of Operations as the commander of the airship troop of Jinyun Country. Zhang Tie, hmm, I remembered that someone had mentioned about this name before...'

"Your Excellency, do you know Lan Yunxi?" Jaray asked tentatively.

Zhang Tie became stunned as he had not imagined that Jaray also knew about Lan Yunxi, "She's my elder sister!"

'——and my reserved wife.' Zhang Tie didn't pour out the latter half.

"You know each other?"

"Very familiar!"

...

Watching Jaray and Zhang Tie flew towards them, one after another, the airship troop of Raymlan Empire didn't open fire towards Zhang Tie——of course, even if they opened fire, their strike would almost be ignored by Zhang Tie. The steam bolts on the airship could never break knight's protective battle qi at all. Among all the steam weapons, only large-scale city-defense steam weapons such as steam centrifugal shells could pose a bit threat to the knight.

Zhang Tie was directly led to a deck of a huge fury-level airship. Due to his great battle force, Zhang Tie was very confident. He didn't worry that these people of Raymlan Empire could play any trick in front of him.

The moment the two knights landed on the deck, some commissioned officers had rushed out.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, one commissioned officer of Raymlan Empire widely opened his eyes, "Ahh? Your Excellency Zhang Tie?"

The moment that commissioned officer uttered had Zhang Tie became stunned. So did Jaray and the other commissioned officers in the surroundings. They all gazed at that young commissioned officer with a strange look.

"You know me?" Zhang Tie asked as he pointed at his nose.

After drawing in a deep breath, that commissioned officer explained, "When in Mocco City, after the failed bomb attempts of Three-eye Association towards you, I saw you wander around the city with a carriage of wing demons' heads. I remember that the entire depressive Mocco City had been boiling that day. Later on, when I led the airship relief team of Raymlan Empire to Selnes Theater of Operations, we encountered the ambush of wing



demons. At the critical moment, Your Excellency appeared by a unique Wind Talker glider and cleaned all the wing demons. I was in the airship at that moment. Before leaving, Your Excellency even waved the wings of the glider. It's deeply imprinted in my mind from then on. Your Excellency might have forgotten about what you did in Selnes Theater of Operations, but my brothers and I would never forget about that. Later on, you were framed by those b\*stards of Three-eye Association. They said you had surrendered to demons after being captured. However, none of the brothers who had served the airship troops and glider troops believed that. None of those who had seen you wander in the streets with a carriage of wing demons' heads, who had fought together with you, who had seen the wrecked glider which could never fly off would believe that the Selnes Eagle who had safeguarded the entire air territory of Selnes Theater of Operations could be conquered by the mean conspiracy of Three-eye Association by lowering your arrogant head to demons and Three-eye Association."

After hearing this commissioned officer, Zhang Tie almost dropped his tears. All the other commissioned officer and Jaray were deeply moved. Even the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations had been broken by demons, the Selnes Eagle who once hovered above the entire Selnes Theater of Operations was still an immortal legend in the human airship troops across Blackson Humans Corridor and the pride of all human soldiers who could drive gliders.

After saying these words, that commissioned officer stood at attention and made a salute to Zhang Tie solemnly, "Your Excellency, welcome to visit Goddess Lake, the flagship of the royal airship troop of Raymlan Empire..."

Zhang Tie also made a solemn salute to this commissioned officer without saying anything...

Jaray scanned the faces of Zhang Tie and that commissioned

officer before bursting out into laughter...

"Distribute my order, cancel off the warning. Return to Saint Maner City..."

# Chapter 712: The Mountain of Brightness

---

In a luxurious lounge of Goddess Lake, the flagship of the royal airship troop of Raymlan Empire, Zhang Tie and Jaray were sitting on a comfortable sofa and chatting casually.

The airship just moved over 100 miles per hour. In this state, it would take them at least 6 hours to arrive at Saint Maner City, the capital of Raymlan Empire. After Zhang Tie's status was confirmed by the commissioned officer in the airship, especially after seeing that Zhang Tie was pretty relaxed, Jaray didn't doubt about Zhang Tie anymore; instead, he started to communicate with Zhang Tie frankly.

Zhang Tie also knew that the airship troop was moving a bit slowly. However, he didn't complain about it. After all, he was not in a rush.

Zhang Tie finally knew how his trace was discovered. 'I've not imagined that I have been traced four times by the observation posts and air-defense posts in the flight of over 1,000 miles within 2 hours. Given this point, the countries in the south of Kalay Mountain Range seem to have made better preparations to the holy war than those in the north. The intelligence network of the Central Countries Alliance in the south of Kalay Mountain Range is more established. However, this is also related to my flight route and flight time. If I could be more meticulous, I'm fully confident to not be noticed by anyone. In the evening, as long as I keep my Chakra running slowly, I will not release my battle qi and become as dazzling as a meteor in the sky. As a result, those observation posts and air-defense posts on the ground would barely find my trace.'

Jaray then sent a feedback to the side of Central Countries Alliance. The content of the message strictly complied with some information feedback rules about knights. Zhang Tie's status and concrete trace remained confidential—the unidentified knight is

confirmed as a Hua knight from Jinyun Country. He's going to take airship in Saint Maner City.

After this message was sent, it indicated that the crisis was relieved. Even if the major clans of Jinyun Country received such a message, they would also think that other clan's knight was executing some secret task outside.

Through Jaray, Zhang Tie knew the final result of the battle of Upton City. Although Zhang Tie was not amazed by this result, he figured out what was happening at that time. He knew why those demons suddenly became as spirited as having eaten viagra.

What helped the super demon corps save some loss was the Demon General and its Three-in-One Strength. Without the Three-in-One Strength, at least half of the super demon corps would be cleared by 10 human knights and so many airships.

However, with the Three-in-One Strength of the Demon General, the speed of all the demons could increase by 30% instantly on the battlefield.

The sacrificed human knight was a royal member of Norman Empire, who was killed by the Demon General when it broke out of the encirclement.

Through the battle of Upton City, the plan that demons and the Three-eye Association wanted the northern tunnel of Kalay Mountain Range, went into bankruptcy. Norman Empire was the biggest beneficiary in the battle of Upton City, who had made the most contribution in the battle. This was the first human knight that Norman Empire lost since the beginning of the holy war.

Zhang Tie felt pitiful about the sacrificed knight.

The holy war was cruel! Even knights would be killed in the holy war. From Mocco City to Upton City, Zhang Tie had experienced two battles when human knights fought to the death. He had also killed one demon knight and one mixed-blood knight of Three-eye

Association, one by raiding, one by head-on collision.

Jaray was a very decent and traditional knight. When he talked about knights, Jaray wanted to ask Zhang Tie about something several times; however, he finally didn't do that.

Of course, Zhang Tie knew what Jaray wanted to ask him about. Actually, Zhang Tie had already prepared for that.

"I've also joined the battle of Upton City!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Jaray became stupefied, "Really? I heard only 10 human knights were dispatched out by Norman Empire, Jinyun Country and Qilan Country. Were you hiding somewhere?"

"I joined it accidentally. After the Demon General released its Three-in-One Strength, I was chased by a demon powerhouse and flurriedly entered an underground tunnel beneath Kalay Mountain Range. The demon powerhouse kept chasing me all the way to an extremely deep, mysterious underground space, where there was a crystal pyramid. After entering the pyramid, I found the time inside the pyramid was much slower than that of the outside. Therefore, I only cultivated inside for many years until I promoted to a knight!"

Speaking of the tower of time, Zhang Tie didn't worry about it being uncovered. 'As Kalay Mountain Range is so large, my expression is also blurry, others could never find the precise entrance of the underground space. Even if they did find it, they were definitely seeking for death in the subterranean watercourse if they were below LV 14. Even if they were above LV 14, they could have less than 1/10,000 probability to enter the underground space. Even if someone hit the jackpot, he had to wait 6 decades until the tower of time reopened. Even if it was a human knight, after entering that underground space, he could barely escape out of that underwater swirl which had such a terrifying, great suction. As a result, the human knight could only stay in the underground

space for 6 decades, during which period, even if the human knight didn't turn mad or die, it would depend on whether I agree to spare him such a chance to enter the tower of time when it reopened.'

'The tower of time is a big trap, if someone really plans to find it, he deserves to have a big trouble!' Zhang Tie thought.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Jaray was so excited that he almost sprung up. This No. 1 knight of Raymlan Empire watched Zhang Tie with gleaming eyes, "What? You discovered the prehistorical relics——Tower of Time in a mysterious underground space beneath Kalay Mountain Range? Hurry, tell me something about the Tower of Time. What's it made of? What's the time velocity ratio inside it? I was told that the time velocity ratio in some tower of time could reach 10 years:1 day. Is that you met one of these?"

After hearing Jaray's questions, Zhang Tie instantly understood it that tower of time was not a big secret in the circle of knights; otherwise, Jaray could never know it so clearly.

"Ahh? Tower of time is divided into many categories?"

"Of course, don't you know that?"

"Erm...I have not touched such knowledge before!" Zhang Tie shrugged.

Jaray watched Zhang Tie as he suddenly realized that, "It's normal. This knowledge could not be touched until you promote to a knight! Now that you've already promoted to a knight, I can tell you now." Jaray, who was restraining in words before, suddenly became talkative, "Tower of Time could be divided into many categories according to different methods. If it is just divided by the time velocity ratio, according to some literature, there are 7-8 categories of towers of time in total since the Catastrophe to now. Their time velocity ratio ranges from 1 month:1 day to 10 years:1 day, etc.."

"You mean some of the discovered towers of time are still in the hand of humans?"

"Of course!" Jaray threw a glance at Zhang Tie with a special look, "According to my knowledge, Hua people in Taixia have the most towers of time. 80% of towers of time that have been discovered are in the hand of Hua people in Taixia Country. It's heard that the super clans and schools in Taixia had 7-10 towers of time. Outsiders don't know about the details about the tower of time. The super clans and schools in Taixia Country call the underground space where the tower of time rested in Dongtian 1. Tower of time was the biggest secret of a clan or a school!"

"What about other division methods?"

"Of course, it's heard that there are better conditions and resources in the tower of time. After entering it, the cultivator could rapidly grasp some skills and abilities with the conditions and resources inside it. In a very short time, the cultivator would become a powerful pharmacist, a rune manufacturer or an alchemist master. However, such a tower of time is just a legend. If there truly was one, no details about it would be exposed to the public!"

Zhang Tie was shocked by this. However, Zhang Tie understood that the rules to access the tower of time should be the same. For instance, only one person was allowed at one time. It required enough time for the tower of time to restore energy. Even though some super clans or schools had towers of time in some Dongtian, very few people were qualified to access it.

'Whether that mysterious underground space that I've discovered is a Dongtian?' Zhang Tie thought out of curiosity.

"You'd better not expose the secret of the tower of time to the public in case of trouble. I promise to not expose your secret to the 3rd person!" Jaray told Zhang Tie solemnly.

"Oh yes, nice, thanks for the warning!" Zhang Tie hurriedly

appreciated him. As a No. 1 knight of a country who dared defend his duty and honor at the risk of his own life at the critical moment would have a good moral standing for sure, "As I've just come out of the underground space today after promoting to a knight, I'm too excited. Therefore, I flew a bit fast. Will I have any side-effects?"

Zhang Tie asked with a solemn look.

"Do you feel that your chakras are still functioning properly?" Jaray asked seriously with a bit concern like an old man.

"Hmm, it's okay. Only a bit light!" Zhang Tie fabricated. Actually, that flight didn't pose any influence to him at all. At this speed, even if he flew another 10,000 miles, his Chakra could still run as steadily as a 100 tons' millstone.

"You're still too young!" Jaray let out a sigh, "Average black iron knights have to take a rest after a flight of 700-1,000 miles. Take me as an instance, if I need to take a long-distance journey, I will take a rest in every 1,000 miles. If I fly longer than 1,000 miles one time, I have to consume more battle qi. I can fly over 2,000 miles one time; however, it would cost over 80% of my battle qi. As a result, my battle force would reduce sharply. If so, I will not be able to deal with emergencies. If not use rare advanced medicament or pills, I will not be able to recover my battle qi completely in even a week. For knights, it's a cool experience in flight. However, the most frugal and safest way is to run on the ground, and occasionally use the flight to assist. In that way, we can move faster while consuming less energy; besides, we can deal with emergencies..."

Zhang Tie silently swallowed his saliva, 'Even knight's battle qi could be used up and required some time to recover. Knights could only insist a bit longer than those below knights. I thought that knight's battle qi could be provided endlessly like me.' Since the moment he promoted to a knight, even though Zhang Tie had a head-on fight with that demon knight in the underground space,



Zhang Tie still didn't feel any problem with his battle qi provision. The sun in his qi ocean was releasing brilliance, namely, his battle qi was endless. Zhang Tie almost needn't worry about running out of his battle qi.

'Is this the terror of emperor-level secret knowledge?' Zhang Tie thought inside, 'Thanks to Jaray, otherwise, I might expose my secret to the public in the future.'

"What about the knight's plate and the Mountain of Brightness?"

Jaray smiled, "Do you know Fighters Association, Pharmacists Association and Mercenaries Association?"

"Yup!"

"Mountain of Brightness is equal to the association of human knights. It's the most powerful human organization. After promoting to knights, all the human knights have to ask for their own ID plates, namely knight's plates from Mountain of Brightness."

"Can I go there?"

"You can. You're free to go there. However, if you don't go there to register your status, you will isolate yourself from the knights' world and cut off the road towards higher ranks. I think even the elders of Huaiyuan Palace would not agree with that if you don't go there!"

"Why?"

"Because the founder of the Mountain of Brightness is Xuanyuan Emperor of Hua people. It is right in the territory of Jinyun Country!"

...

# Chapter 713: The Black Iron Effect

---

After flying 4 hours by Goddess Lake, Zhang Tie felt a powerful qi moving closer, 'it was a knight's qi.'

Like how eagles could notice other eagles hovering in the sky and how tigers could sniff other tigers walking in the woods, knights were also very sensitive to the qi of their same kind, especially when the other knight released a powerful battle qi straightly.

Although the battle qi was still 50 miles away, Zhang Tie had already sensed it.

"It's one of my friends. Several hours ago, when you flew towards Saint Maner City, he received a relief message. Therefore, he's in a rush towards here to support me!" As he explained, Jaray stood up, "Wait a moment, I will go pick him up. I'm sure my friend will be very happy to meet a young powerful knight!"

"As you wish, I also want to meet your friend. There's an old Hua saying, 'True friendship exists at the critical moment.' A friend who could drop everything and rush towards here to help you in the crisis is worthwhile!"

Jaray replied with a smile as he felt that Zhang Tie's words were pretty reasonable. After nodding towards Zhang Tie, he left the lounge. In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie felt Jaray flying off the airship towards the qi.

Zhang Tie just had a cup of tea and waited there quietly.

Tea leaves from the Eastern Continent were the most expensive drink. Zhang Tie had learned a lot through the communication with Jaray over the past few hours. In Blackson Humans Corridor, knights liked tea leaves from Taixia Country the most. Some senior products could nourish knights' body and spiritual energy. If knights always drunk them, they could have a better recognition about the power of mother nature and usually maintained clear-

mindfulness. Benefited from the tea leaves, knights could easily enter cultivation. Such tea leaves were knights' favorite. They would cost at least 100 kgs of gold per kilo. Additionally, Jaray said such tea leaves were not the best. The best ones could be hardly bought through common channels. Only a very few of them could be traded in senior auctions.

Watching the bit of golden fine tea leaves in his cup, Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile, 'This tea leaf is called golden scale. It comes from the Eastern Continent. A small cup of this tea leaves would cost at least 30 gold coins. It's equal to 3 years' salary of my father in Blackhot City.' Although Jaray was not a luxurious man, he had to learn something about it at his level. Gradually, the resources of knights became luxuries that commoners dreamed for.

The tea smelt comfortable and tasted a bit bitter and smooth. Zhang Tie found it carried a special energy and aura, which nourished his body and spiritual energy. This feeling was similar to that of all-purpose medicament. By contrast, the effect of this tea was not as fast as that of all-purpose medicament. However, it felt more exquisite and natural. Besides nourishing his body tenderly, Zhang Tie found that it made his thoughts a bit clearer and more dynamic, 'It would definitely be helpful to knight's cultivation if they always drunk it. However, I'm afraid that it would cost a knight an astonishing amount of money on such tea leaves each year.'

Right then, Zhang Tie recalled Donder, who said that he had drunk a cup of tea which was worth a few gold coins. Whereas, Zhang Tie thought that he was boasting at that time.

The most impressive tea leaf was that small common tea leaf from the Eastern Continent that Fattie Barley told him to hold in the mouth when he went for Ms. Anna. Of course, that common tea leaf could never match this golden scale in price and quality. However, Zhang Tie always felt that it was the best tea leaf that he had ever tasted and could not be replaced by any other tea leaves

ever.

When he remembered about his friends in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie added two ladles of sugar in the tea...

Drinking the sweet tea, Zhang Tie smiled. For commoners, sweet things in daily lives could always bring more pleasure to them than bitterness. Some habits were related to one person's background. For Zhang Tie, who grew up drinking rice brew never felt that tea tasted good, even though such a cup of tea could not be bought by his family by selling rice brew for even 10 years!

...

Only after 5-6 minutes, Jaray had come back followed by a tall and tough knight in full-body armor. This knight was the No. 1 knight of Berdi Empire. The national strength of Berdi Empire was almost equal to that of Raymlan Empire. The two countries were connected with each other in the territory. Besides, they were harmonious in the relationship. The royals of the two countries got married a few times. Jaray and Way had been bosom friends for over 70 years.

The arrival of Way made the lounge more boisterous. The three knights had more topics to share.

Jaray and Way were too much elder than Zhang Tie, who was only 20 years old. However, in the eyes of Jaray and Way, Zhang Tie was not arrogant due to a young age or his background at all. Not only that, Zhang Tie was very modest and frank, which made the other elder knights more comfortable. Therefore, their talks proceeded very smoothly.

Being different from Jaray, who was restraint, Way was foursquare. Only after 10 minutes later, Way had asked all of his doubts.

"Jaray and I were 100 years old when we promoted to knights. It's a young age among knights. But Jaray said you're just 20 years old.

How could you promote to a knight so fast? I asked Jaray just now, but he didn't tell me about that..."

Zhang Tie threw a glance at Jaray, who replied with a smile silently. As he had promised Zhang Tie that he would not expose anything about Tower of Time to others, he didn't even expose it to Way unswervingly.

Zhang Tie also smiled as he repeated what he told to Jaray just now to Way.

Being same to Jaray, Way also almost sprung up after hearing that Zhang Tie discovered a tower of time in a mysterious underground space.

"No way, no way..." Way forcefully patted his thigh a few times, "I've never imagined that such a mysterious space is hiding deep beneath Kalay Mountain Range, along with a tower of time in it..." After saying that, Way suddenly realized something as he glared at Jaray, "You've long known about it, right?"

"I've promised Zhang Tie that I will not expose it to anyone else. Of course, I cannot break my words!" Jaray explained calmly.

"I rushed all the way here to fight for you at the risk of my life, but you didn't even tell me that top secret?" Way became furious.

"You didn't have to come here, I've not begged you to be here!" Jaray smiled.

After gazing at each other for short while, they both burst out laughing at the same time. Zhang Tie felt that they were tactful and trustful to each other.

"The tower of time would reopen after 6 decades. It's hard to come out of there even if you could get down there. Even knights could not get out of there safe and sound. I have some other reasons to come out of there this time!" Zhang Tie warned them sincerely. As that place was a pit, considering that the two knights were decent, Zhang Tie warned them in case they regretted paying

a visit there.

After exchanging glances with each other, Jaray and Way both nodded as they knew what Zhang Tie meant.

"Don't worry, I will not expose this secret to the 4th person. Jaray and I once planned to discover the underground world a few years ago, pitifully, as the No. 1 knights of Berdi Empire and Raymlan Empire, we cannot leave at our will. Although we might have a great harvest in the underground world, we know it's very risky. Additionally, we cannot estimate how much time is needed down there..." Way let out a sigh.

"You wanted to seek for the tower of time before?"

"Besides the tower of time, there are actually many secret items in the underground world, which are very attractive to knights!"

"Secret items?"

"Right. After promoting to a knight, except for weapons, most of the rune equipment and alchemist's equipment, especially those which could improve the ability of commoners have become useless for knights. That equipment could exert their full effects on LV 15 battle spirits; however, they could only exert 10% of their full effect on knights!"

Given Zhang Tie's look, Way asked out of amazement, "Don't you know about Black Iron Effect?"

"As Zhang Tie has just promoted to a knight, he has not touched this knowledge before!" Jaray explained on one side.

"What do you mean by Black Iron Effect of equipment?" Zhang Tie asked.

"The Black Iron Effect of equipment is a bottleneck effect on common equipment of Black Iron Knight. For instance, there's a vat of water in front of you; is it easy for you to increase 10% of the water in it?"

Zhang Tie nodded.

"What if there's a river in front of you. Is it still that easy for you to increase 10% of the water in it? A damp piece of soft mud might be one time harder after being dried two days under the sun; however, it's not that easy for you to make a piece of steel one time harder only by drying it under the sun for a couple of days." Way explained it straightforwardly. It was very satisfactory for a knight to instruct the other one, "After forming the first Chakra, your energy level and strength system has become utterly different than that of those who had not formed it. Therefore, the rune equipment and alchemist's equipment that could work on commoners would not have the same effect on you. If an equipment could improve a commoner's ability by less than 10%, it would be ineffective to knights. Only when its effect on a commoner is higher than 10% could it be a bit effective to fighters in less than one scale. This is the Black Iron Effect of the knight's equipment."

After hearing Way's explanation, Zhang Tie understood it right away. He finally understood why he only got 3 items from two knights outside Mocco City. From that knight of Symbian Republic, Zhang Tie gained an autumn-frost golden sword, whose basic performance and functions are effective to knights in all ranks; however, from the knight of Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie only got a rose finger ring and a full-moon dragon soul waistband.

'The rapid recovering rune on the autumn-frost golden sword could help commoners recover their energy 10% faster, which means 1% for knights; the rose finger ring's rapid recovering rune could help commoners recover their energy 11% faster, and increase their meditating effect by 15%. As the full-moon dragon soul waistband is a bronze secret item used by knights, it's still lying in Castle of Black Iron.'

When collecting the booties, Zhang Tie was curious that why the

two knights only wore such a few rune equipment. They could at least wear some more finger rings.

After hearing Way's explanation, Zhang Tie finally understood that it was not because the two knights didn't want to wear some more items, but they could only have such few items to wear due to Black Iron Effect. Many equipment that were effective to commoners didn't work on knights at all. Only those top quality items used by commoners could exert 10% of its effect on knights.

"If we could promote to a higher level, do you mean that those commoners' rune equipment would not work on us anymore?"

"You got it!" Jaray nodded, "By then, except for underground secret items, none of the rune equipment or alchemist's equipment made by humans in this age would work on a land knight."

"Land knight?" It was Zhang Tie's first time to hear the appellation of a rank higher than the black iron knight.

"Yes, knights in the next rank would be named as land knights after forming the Chakra of land which gathers land, water, wind and fire!"

Speaking of a land knight, Jaray and Way both radiated sacred eyes at the same time. The land knight was what all the black iron knights strived and dreamed for...

"Is Demon General a land knight?"

"No, it has just stridden over the threshold of land knight's world with one foot. If he was a land knight, at most half of the 10 human knights could survive the Upton Battle..."

...

After chatting with Jaray and Way, Zhang Tie learned more about knights. As Jaray and Way were old human knights who had advanced to knights a very long time ago, their knowledge and recognition of knights' world benefited Zhang Tie a lot.



Finally, Goddess Lake, the flagship of the royal airship troop of Raymlan Empire arrived at Saint Maner City. It landed in an aisle being adjacent to Goddess Lake...

This aisle covered over 10 sq miles. It was where Jaray's battle palace rested in Raymlan Empire. The imperial palace of Raymlan Empire was just 5-6 miles away with the water in between.

After promoting to a knight, as long as the knight became the No. 1 knight of a country or a corps leader, its fixed residence would be called battle palace where his subordinates and servants would serve him in. This was the greatest honor of a knight given by the country that he guarded...

# Chapter 714: The Negotiation

---

In the imperial palace of Raymlan Empire, Jaray was staying in a study with a 50-year-old man in an imperial crown, who was the Alta VII, the emperor of Raymlan Empire...

At some point in time today, all the royal members of Raymlan Empire had evacuated from the imperial palace silently. Later on, they came back silently. During the process of a few hours, nobody else knew about this event across Saint Maner City. Even now, only a few people knew the whereabouts of the prince for the sake of his safety. If everything went smooth, crown prince would appear in the vision of the public tomorrow.

The knight's raid was a grim, sharp guillotine hovering above the heads of weak royal members. In the 2nd holy war, numerous human countries and royals of small countries were chopped off by demons and Three-eye Association.

"You mean Zhang Tie is that Selnes Eagle, who's promoted to a knight at 20 years of age?" Alta VII asked in an extremely amazed voice while his mouth could almost hold an egg.

Alta VII had seen too many people who were born to be emperors, kings and billionaires. However, it was his first time to hear someone promote to a knight at his 20s even in Blackson Humans Corridor, although there might be such cases in the Eastern Continent.

"Yes! Zhang Tie's real age is a bit elder than 20. Given his look, he's just 16-17 years old!" Jaray told Alta VII.

"No way. Has Jinyun Country and Huaiyuan Palace been so powerful?" Alta VII asked with a bit flurried look.

"Jinyun Country and Huaiyuan Palace are indeed very powerful. However, I think the reason that Zhang Tie promoted to a knight at such a young age mainly depends on his efforts and luck. He's

favorable by the God!"

"He's favored by the God?" Alta VII mumbled it twice before sighing with a jealous and admiring look, "Alas, why Alta Clan couldn't produce such a talent!"

"Your Majesty, the princes have been very diligent. However, some things could not be made only by individual efforts!" Jaray had to say something for those princes as their private teacher and the No. 1 knight of Raymlan Empire.

"Facing the great pressure from the clan and the empire, the princes of Raymlan Empire have been very diligent. The 3rd prince has already reached LV 13 battle general; however, knights cannot be cultivated only by money. If the princes can cultivate in the tower of time for enough time, are you sure that they will promote to knights? It's uncertain!" Although Zhang Tie didn't say how many years had he stayed in the tower of time, Jaray knew clearly that only real powerhouses with the hearts of real powerhouses could make it in the lonely and distant cultivation environment. "Only strong-willed people could put forth their brilliant flowers of lives in loneliness. Otherwise, you could only get lunatics or corpses after throwing them in the tower of time. Such a case truly existed."

After hearing Jaray's explanation, Alta let out a sigh. Closely after that, he became thrilled and asked, "Jaray, do you think we can have my daughters marry Huaiyuan Palace? I have over 10 daughters, whose ages range from 7 to 30. They are all beauties. Erm, that Zhang Tie..."

"Your Majesty..." Jaray accented his voice...

Alta VII realized that he was a bit rude just now. Therefore, he closed his mouth at once. It was really a bit whimsical for him to have a Hua knight serve Alta Clan with only a woman called princess. Even a battle spirit with the poor background would not sell himself so easily, not to mention Zhang Tie who had Huaiyuan

Palace on his back. In the eyes of many powerful cultivators, the alleged women and princesses were not even as valuable as a useful rune equipment. Of course, unless that man required something from the female's side, a knight would never treat a princess of Raymlan Empire as something. Princess was just a product of empires. However, a powerful knight could be able to build an empire himself.

"What's your opinion?" Alta VII sat on the chair with a frustrated look.

"Your Majesty, if you looked too anxious, it would make others belittle Raymlan Empire and Alta Clan. Zhang Tie is in my battle palace. Your Excellency could have the 9th prince and one princess take a valuable gift to pay a visit to Zhang Tie in my battle palace. It's polite and not light-headed to do this."

"Ahh? Why Kru? He's just an innocent kid." Alta II asked out of amazement.

"As Kru is an innocent kid, he's the best one to go there. Kru likes glider. The best driver of glider across Blackson Humans Corridor is in Saint Maner City. Therefore, he can ask Zhang Tie to teach him!"

As an emperor, even though Alta VII didn't mean to be a hegemon, he could understand Jaray's words at once.

"Hmm, fine. Just let Kru and Candis go there. As to the gift..." Alta VII hesitated about the gift.

"Your Majesty, do you believe me?"

"Of course!"

"We'd better prepare some special, valuable gift. As Zhang Tie is a Hua man, Your Majesty, you can gift him that item that you brought back from the Eastern Continent last time!"

"Ahh? Do we have to do that?" Alta VII looked unwilling.

"Your Majesty, do you know where's that missing demon knight in Upton battle?"

"Is there any relation?"

"The missing demon knight might have been killed by Zhang Tie!" Jaray replied calmly.

"What?" Alta VII instantly sprung up from his chair like being stabbed by nails.

Although Zhang Tie didn't say the battle force of the demon who chased after him, Jaray could infer that the one chased after Zhang Tie was a demon knight as Zhang Tie, a human knight, said it was a demon powerhouse. Although Zhang Tie didn't say the result of the demon knight, he survived back from the underground space. Therefore, the demon knight obviously had been killed by Zhang Tie.

"Perhaps that gift is valuable for Zhang Tie at this moment. Otherwise, after a few years, that item would be nothing for him. Given Zhang Tie's deed in Selnes Theater of Operations, he's a righteous man who treasures friendship very much. In the holy war, even knights would die. If something bad happens to me in the future, I will not be able to guard Raymlan Empire and Alta Clan. By then, I wish Alta Clan could be protected by such a powerhouse. The friendship between us and this man might bring a hope to Alta Clan in the future! Your Majesty, don't you think it is a proper trade?"

...

After the flagship landed, Jaray went to the imperial palace of Raymlan Empire. Being accompanied by Way, Zhang Tie was visiting the private collections of Jaray in his battle palace. Watching those collections, Zhang Tie finally understood why Jaray was so interested in the tower time. Because almost all the private collections of Jaray were marvelous items left by prehistorical human civilizations, which could be barely seen by

commoners in their whole lives...

# Chapter 715: Picking off Stars

---

More than 10 colorful light spots were in the mysterious void, large or small. They were sparkling bizarre lights, yellow, blue, red or a crystal-like transparent light. Each light spot was a marvelous geometric crystal which constantly changed its shape. Each geometric crystal was a blooming flower of life. The crystals flew irregularly as fast as a lightning bolt and spirits in the mysterious void. Some crystals would fly out of the mysterious void while some would fly in, both at a very high speed.

This world of elements could only be seen by knights after forming their Chakra and entering meditation. The four basic elements of earth, water, wind and fire that formed everything in the universe truly existed independently and could be sensed with knight's consciousness in the free, pure and most basic form.

Different basic elements were colliding, combining and annihilating in the world of elements under the traction of mysterious strength.

Of course, they were not really annihilating or disappearing. They were just changing a pattern of existence after combination. They started to appear in the world of materials in the form of sensible material or energy.

World of elements was a vast sparkling ocean. By contrast, the real world was like the submarine world that deposited in this ocean. All the lives were living in that real submarine world. Only very few lives' senses and consciousness could get rid of the gravity and bond of the world of materials and enter this colorful ocean of sparkling basic elements when the energy frequency of their spirit and awareness rose to a pole.

The power of knights originated from their gnosis and recognition about the source energy.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy had become a huge

hand and was chasing after a yellow crystal in a tiny "pit", which had a bizarre force field in the world of elements. Due to the existence of that "pit", the elements over there were more than those in the surrounding space. Therefore, it was a bit easier to capture those basic element crystals which were flying everywhere in the void like meteors and spirits.

The yellow crystals were earth elements, the only element that Zhang Tie's huge hand could capture in the world of elements at this moment. Red crystals would directly burn a hole in the huge hand and penetrate through it. Blue crystals would depart into numerous parts in front of the hand of spiritual energy and combine with each other behind it like a naughty fish shoal. The crystal-like meteors and spirits directly ignored the hand and penetrated through it like breaking through a broken fish net; only those yellow crystals could be caught by this hand like real objects.

After chasing them for a long while, the hand finally caught a tiny yellow tetrahedron crystal in the world of elements. After tightly holding it, the hand retreated back to the world of materials and threw the yellow crystal into a huge and complex Chakra which was rotating like a millstone. The Chakra devoured the yellow crystal, crushing it and converting it into the purest energy of land element. Finally, it was output into the void shadow in the peripheral of the solid Chakra.

A bigger and more complex earth Chakra was looming in the phantom shadow, which was made of numerous complex geometrical patterns like an extremely delicate mandala...

The yellow crystal was converted into earth element before running into an inconspicuous place on the edge of the solid Chakra and manifesting a line, which was less than 1/10 of a tiny geometrical pattern at its bottom...

There were over 10,000 basic tower-shaped geometrical patterns in the huge Chakra mandala. The function of the yellow crystal was as trivial as throwing a brick in the construction site of a



thousands-meter high skyscraper...

...

Zhang Tie opened his eyes and threw a glance at that wall clock in the cultivation cabin of the airship. It was already been the evening of September 23rd, 4 days after Zhang Tie entered meditation...

This was Zhang Tie's first time to enter cultivation as a knight.

There was only one cultivation task below knights, namely, polishing surging points. By contrast, knights only had one task in cultivation, namely, forming Chakra.

If the process of polishing surging points was like drilling wood to make fire, the process of forming Chakra could be described in three terms, namely, picking off stars, pushing millstone and casting mold.

Picking off stars referred to capture earth element in the world of elements; pushing millstone referred to input the land element that the knight had caught into his Chakra and had it crushed into pieces so as to assimilate the knight's own strength; casting mold referred to pour the assimilated earth element into the peripheral phantom of the earth Chakra. When the peripheral phantom ring of the entire earth Chakra completely turned solid composed of earth elements, it would rotate independently instead of having to follow the first Chakra, the black iron knight would promote to a land knight.

In the three steps, the first two steps could run automatically. When the knight's Chakra was rotating automatically, all the steps would run automatically due to the "King Roc Sutra" that he cultivated. It was similar to other knights. After surging their surging points, once the first Chakra came into being, each one's later cultivation process would be pushed freely by the Chakra like how intestines and stomach digested food and how stars ran on the orbits. You only needed to consider whether your intestines and

stomach could enjoy good food or not.

Therefore, capturing four basic elements using spiritual energy and forming the energy of elements of Chakra, it became the core contents for knights to cultivate and raise their realms.

It was very difficult for Zhang Tie to enter meditation and sense the world of elements for the first time. It took Zhang Tie two days to do it. In the latter two days, Zhang Tie finally captured three land elements from the world of elements and started his official cultivation since he promoted to a black iron knight after numerous attempts.

After the first earth element crystal that Zhang Tie captured was crushed into pieces by his Chakra, the mandala peripheral ring of that earth Chakra loomed around the first Chakra. After capturing the other 2 earth element crystals, Zhang Tie had just moved a bit forward towards the earth knight.

After recalling the cultivation process these two days and watching the second Chakra's phantom ring in his consciousness, Zhang Tie gradually recovered his composure.

According to Jaray, the mandala peripheral ring of most of knights' land Chakra was composed of 300-1,000 geometrical patterns. When Zhang Tie counted his geometrical patterns, he almost passed out. The mandala peripheral ring of the entire earth Chakra of his "King Roc Sutra" was a vast, delicate picture, which contained over 10,000 geometrical patterns in different shapes such as a tower, triangle, square, round and feather, etc.. Such a phantom Chakra looked extremely magnificent. However, it was also extremely difficult to form it. It would require several times even dozens of times more land elements than that required by other knights.

In this age, commoners could live about 90 years. When one reached LV 9 after lighting all the surging points on his spine, one would be able to live 120 years. With each level higher, one's life

expectancy would increase by 30 years. When one reached LV 15 battle spirit, one's life expectancy would reach about 300 years. After promoting to a knight, one would live 400 years. Even though knights had great life expectancies, a great number of black iron knights died due to various reasons before promoting to earth knights. Given this point, we knew how difficult it was for black iron knights to form their second Chakra.

Some black iron knights even failed to form their second Chakra after promoting to black iron knights for 100-200 years.

'I wonder how long would it take me to form the second Chakra of "King Roc Sutra".'

Such a question occurred to Zhang Tie's mind when he was sitting on the cushion with crossed legs and had not fully recovered his composure from the "pleasure" that was brought by picking off stars. Zhang Tie then felt a headache. After letting out a sigh, he picked himself up. By the way, he put that 'Basic Elements Gathering Matrix' into a special bag and hung it over his shoulder.

That "Basic Elements Gathering Matrix" was composed of 3 bronze obelisks, each of which was about 10 cm in height. Being covered with bizarre runes, although they looked trivial, they had a great effect on his cultivation.

This was a gift from Raymlan Empire's royal. As a bronze secret item, it was a collection of the royal of Raymlan. Its usage was very simple. Before entering the world of basic elements, Zhang Tie only needed to put the three bronze obelisks in the shape of a triangle on his side. He then sat in the triangle. In this way, the Basic Elements Gathering Matrix could form a marvelous force field "pit" in the world of basic elements. This force field "pit" was like a puddle, which could increase the density of four basic elements around him by 20% in the world of basic elements. Benefited from this, Zhang Tie could capture basic element crystals more effectively.

After trying it, Zhang Tie sensed an obvious higher efficiency in capturing the four basic elements on his side with the help of Basic Elements Gathering Matrix.

'There must be some more methods to increase my efficiency in picking off stars. Now that there's a Basic Elements Gathering Matrix, it indicates that other knights also met the same problem about low efficiency in cultivation. They must have other methods to deal with it. Thankfully, I've already been a black iron knight. I have enough time to do that. ' After comforting himself, Zhang Tie opened the hatch and walked out of the cabin of cultivation.

This airship was the private airship of Princess Candis, a royal of Raymlan Empire. Although it was not as large as fury-level airships, it was the most comfortable and luxurious one that Zhang Tie had ever taken.

A luxurious bedroom with a huge princess' bed inside was next to the cultivation cabin. The bed still maintained the alluring body fragrance of Princess Candis and her groans...

Princess Candis showed her private airship to Zhang Tie that night. Finally, after spending 15 years in the tower of time, Zhang Tie visited every place on her naked body...

'That's a nice memory.' Zhang Tie smacked.

...

"Are we arriving at Huaiyuan Prefecture?" Zhang Tie came to the cockpit.

"Your Excellency, we will arrive at Yuanjiang River after 600 miles!" The coxswain answered respectfully.

"You can land in Golden Sea City of Huaiyuan Prefecture for some supplies. After landing there, take this letter to the director of Jinwu Business Group. He will prepare something for you as my gift to Princess Candis and Your Majesty Alta VII. By the way, I have to extend my thanks to Princess Candis and Your Majesty Alta

VII for their hospitality on behalf of me!" Zhang Tie said as he handed a letter into the hand of the coxswain. Zhang Tie's gift was 50,000 vials all-purpose medicament.

"Alright!" The captain carefully took Zhang Tie's letter.

...

After doing all this, Zhang Tie directly flew off the deck of the airship towards Yiyang City and disappeared into the clouds.

All the crew members saw Zhang Tie off with admiring looks.

"What if I can also be a knight one day..." A crew member mumbled.

"It's easy. You will make it come true in your dream very soon!" An experienced sergeant first class patted another one's shoulder.

After hearing this, all the others burst out into laughter...

# Chapter 716: Returning to Huaiyuan Palace

---

Zhang Tie flew towards Yiyang City at the speed of 0.6 Mach. This time, he learned to hide himself by flying above 10,000 m behind clouds. Even in the sunny day, most of the people could barely find such a person flying above 10,000 m, not to mention a knight.

The head-on sharp airflow was blocked off by that invisible protective battle qi covering him. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't feel chilly in the high altitude. When Zhang Tie was in the underground space, he had tried it. As long as he didn't accelerate to above 0.6 Mach, his battle-qi brilliance would not be exposed. That was to say, 0.6 Mach was his navigation speed and invisible speed.

There were many airships in the air. As long as he lowered his head, he would be able to see many of them. Because of the holy war, the powerful Jinyun Country being away from the north theater of operations seemed to become more prosperous.

After a few years, the demonized puppets troop with above 100,000 members in the south of Kalay Mountain Range had already been dispersed or annihilated. Now, the demonized puppets only existed in small teams in the south of Kalay Mountain Range. They were wandering like bandits and wild beasts in the urban ruins and wild. However, they became more tricky. Many places in the south of Kalay Mountain Range had become depopulated zones. Jinyun Country and Qilan Country were least damaged by demonized puppets as the demonized puppets disasters in the two countries were suppressed at first. At this moment, great batches of people were pouring into the south from north, filling everywhere in Jinyun Country and Qilan Country. In another word, it was boisterous in the two countries. Looking down at the brightly-lit cities in the night, Zhang Tie felt a sharp contrast from those deserted cities being covered with corpses in

the north. Zhang Tie felt like returning to the human world from the hell. As a person who had fought demonized puppets in Selnes Theater of Operations and experienced almost 100 battles in 1 year, this was really a warm feeling, Zhang Tie really felt warm at this moment.

After flying over 500 miles, Zhang Tie saw a huge airship formation of almost 2,000 huge whale-level airships flying towards Yuanjiang River in over 10 rows like 10-odd long dragons and airbuses. The formation lasted over dozens of miles.

The symbol of the airships was a red bloody-dragon flag.

This was the airship formation of Norman Empire.

After flying over the natural chasm of Yuanjiang River, the airship formation entered the air territory of Huaiyuan Prefecture and landed in the large airship base which almost covered 100 sq miles being not far from the river. Zhang Tie slowed down and watched the formation for a short while. After those airships landed, almost 400,000 people got off 2,000 airships...

Taian City was on the plain being not far from the airship base. Two railways extended out Taian City from east and west. Right beside the railways, a lot of towns and residential areas were coming into being. The ground completely became a huge construction site.

At this moment, Taian City and its affiliated land which covered 50,000-60,000 sq miles had been sold to Norman Empire. This place had become a general base of Norman Empire in the south of Kalay Mountain Range and an asylum for the population of Norman Empire to migrate to the south. All the Hua people here had been evacuated.

After checking the layout of Norman Empire here, he continued to fly towards Yiyang City.

1 hour later, Yiyang City, the most brightly-lit city appeared.

Compared to the brightly-lit scenery, what made Zhang Tie more amazed was the 10-odd large ships in a row berthing in the Yiyang Harbor, which Zhang Tie had not seen before. Even when he looked down at them, he was still stunned by the huge body and length of the huge ships. Million-tons ship! Only Taixia Country in the Eastern Continent could produce such super huge ships. Even the tens of thousands tons' ships were dwarfed by such giants.

'F\*ck, how many people would such giants hold at one time? Is this the legendary great retreat?'

Zhang Tie watched Yiyang City for a while as he turned around and scratched his head. At this moment, he didn't know the whereabouts of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace. Finally, he released his battle qi for a second. Zhang Tie knew that it was equal to a roar outside others' home with a trumpet by doing this.

In a split second, Zhang Tie saw two meteors flying off a mountain in Yiyang City towards him.

"Which friend is visiting Huaiyuan Palace?"

Before the two meteors drew close to him, a voice had arrived a few seconds ahead.

Given the sound, Zhang Tie knew it was Elder Muray, whose sound Zhang Tie had heard many times.

Zhang Tie firstly heard this sound in the ancestral bloodline palace of Clansmen Pavilion, when he felt it pretty lofty and aggressive.

Zhang Tie heard this sound secondly in the camp of the middle corps of demonized puppets in Stancy City. When Elder Muray scolded, "When you beat the young, the elder would come for revenge naturally", Zhang Tie was pretty moved. It was Zhang Tie's first time to sense the warmth and loveliness of Huaiyuan Palace on his back. When he was bullied, Elder Muray instantly appeared and boomed his tricky enemy into bullsh\*t with a bolt.



Zhang Tie heard this sound thirdly when he was chased by a demon knight. Elder Muray roared angrily on the way to save him...

At this moment, it was Zhang Tie's 4th time to hear this sound, when Zhang Tie felt pretty intimate and blood boiling.

In the blink of an eye, the two elders had arrived. The one came here with Elder Muray was Elder Muen, whom Zhang Tie had seen before too. The battle that Huaiyuan Palace launched towards Heavens Cold City was led by Elder Muen. When Zhang Tie violated the regulation of Huaiyuan Palace by taking his friends in the Heavens Cold City without the consent of the superiors, he was also punished by Elder Muen.

Watching the two elders, Zhang Tie felt complex inside.

The two elders became stupefied at the sight of Zhang Tie, who was suspending in the void. They rubbed their eyes at the same time.

"Zhang Tie, the unfilial offspring of Huaiyuan Palace, comes back! Honorable elders!" Zhang Tie bowed towards them very respectfully...

...

"What a shadow demon. You dare to disguise the offspring of Zhang Clan, Huaiyuan Palace. I will chop off your head!" Elder Muray roared as he straightly charged at Zhang Tie with a purple face...

# Chapter 717: Elders

---

Zhang Tie was also shocked by Elder Muray's bayonet-charge.

Elder Muray moved very fast; however, Zhang Tie also had a quick response. He dodged from the first strike by retreating 300 m away in a split second.

"Elder Muen, have you also forgotten that I wanted to add sugar to the Top Quality Wild Spring Tea from Eastern Continent in the airship outside the Heavens Cold City?" Zhang Tie roared towards Elder Muen, instead of explaining it to Elder Muray.

Only Zhang Tie and Elder Muen were at present when this happened. Additionally, such a detail could be barely known by others.

"Brother Muray, wait for a second!" Elder Muen urged.

The moment Zhang Tie finished his words had Elder Muen flashed towards Elder Muray as fast as a lightning bolt and stopped him.

In such a short period, Zhang Tie had dodged three strikes from Elder Muray; however, he didn't launch any counterattack at all.

Zhang Tie felt that Elder Muray was just a bit better than that knight who chased after him. Elder Muray's true trump card was his brilliant huge bow, which was suitable for long-distance fight most.

"You believe him?" Elder Muray's face turned completely purple, which looked pretty majestic, "How come Zhang Tie became a knight at such a young age? This demon is obviously disrupting and mocking our Huaiyuan Palace!"

"The drinking details, a few years ago outside Heavens Cold City, could hardly be exposed to the public!" Elder Muen watched Elder Muray with a solemn look.

"However, it's possible. With some secret skills, people could easily get one's memory. If Zhang Tie fell into the hand of that demon, it's not strange for the demon to know the details..." Elder Muray urged as he slowed down.

"If it's a real shadow demon, we can cooperate to kill it after a short while. He won't escape!"

After hearing Elder Muen's words, Elder Muray finally stopped. However, he was still glaring at Zhang Tie as if he wanted to see what other tricks could this shadow demon play.

Zhang Tie just suspended about 50 m away from the other two Elders.

"How can you persuade us that you're Zhang Tie?" Elder Muen asked Zhang Tie calmly.

Zhang Tie smiled, "Have you forgotten about it, Elder Muray? You've already identified my status in the Ancestral Bloodline Palace of Clansmen Pavilion with bloodline crystal. As you might feel that I'm disguised no matter what I say now, why not identify it once again? I can wait here. You can go back to get the bloodline crystal; I can also follow you in the Clansmen Pavilion. No matter what, it's not far from here!" Zhang Tie pointed at the location of the Clansmen Pavilion below his feet.

After hearing Zhang Tie's answer, even Elder Muray became stunned. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie could be such straightforward. If Zhang Tie was really a disguised one, how could he be so confident? In front of the bloodline crystal, any disguised person would expose his original look. Shadow demon could disguise as Zhang Tie. Some people could get Zhang Tie's memory through some secret skills. However, bloodline heritage could never be disguised.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the two elders nodded slightly and tacitly. After that, Elder Muray stayed here; Elder Muen turned around and flew towards Clansmen Pavilion as fast as

a lightning bolt. In the knight's speed, it only took him a couple of minutes to come and go. Even if Zhang Tie was the Demon General, Elder Muen believed that Elder Muray could also stand a couple of minutes' fight with Zhang Tie.

Soon after Elder Muen left, watching Zhang Tie waiting for him back with a calm look, Elder Muray finally couldn't help but ask with a dubious look, "You...you're really Zhang Tie?"

After letting out a sigh, Zhang Tie watched Elder Muray calmly, "Elder Muray and I met in the Ancestral Bloodline Pavilion for the first time. As we have our own persistence, I made you unhappy at that moment. However, I could also sense Elder Muray's concern about me when I was chased by the demon knight. I have to extend my thanks to Elder Muray!"

After saying it, Zhang Tie deeply bowed towards Elder Muray.

Zhang Tie didn't tell Elder Muray that he had witnessed how Elder Muray killed Koz, the head of Senel Clan. As he was in the incarnation of a beetle, it would be hard to explain about it.

After hearing the two relevant events, Elder Muray's snowwhite eyebrows jumped one time as his aggressive qi instantly relieved.

"I know your doubt, Elder Muray. As I was chased by the demon knight, I was forced to jump into the subterranean river before you arrived. The watercourse of the subterranean river was very complex. Thankfully, I had a good diving skill which was formed when I was in Hidden Dragon Island. I had a chance to survive myself in the subterranean river. However, I was taken into an underground space by the subterranean river, where I had a marvelous experience and promoted to a knight within 1 month!"

Elder Muray now looked a bit relieved. However, before Elder Muray said anything, Elder Muen had already returned from the Clansmen Pavilion with the bloodline crystal in his hand.

Elder Muen directly threw the bloodline crystal towards Zhang

Tie, "Now that you've used it, you should know how to use it!"

Watching the crystal which radiated a fantastic brilliance with a drop of blood roiling inside, Zhang Tie directly pierced his finger with the tip of the crystal, having his fresh blood drop onto the crystal.

When the blood inside the crystal met Zhang Tie's fresh blood, the bloodline crystal instantly radiated the glow, brightening hundreds sq m, making it like an afterglow. The crystal even floated in the sky weightlessly.

When the crystal radiated the glow, it indicated that this person was the offspring of the Lord Huaiyuan. The crystal floating in the sky indicated that the drop of fresh blood entering the crystal truly came from the knight.

At the sight of this scene, Elder Muen and Elder Muray were both surprised and excited as their eyebrows and mustaches both raised.

Realizing that someone on the ground had paid attention to the glow radiated from the bloodline crystal, Elder Muen waved his sleeve and put away the bloodline crystal before saying, "Go back to the Ancestral Hall first!"

Zhang Tie then followed the two elders towards the Ancestral Hall of Huaiyuan Palace.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to go to Ancestral Hall. After arriving at the terrace outside the Ancestral Hall, Zhang Tie then followed them in a magnificent hall.

At the end of the Ancestral Hall, there was an over 20-m high huge metal statue, which was heroically drawing open a crossbow towards the gate of the hall. There were many huge pillars as high as dozens of meters and as wide as 3-4 m in the hall. Some huge purple gold-copper cauldrons were standing in the corners while burning a special whale oil. Without causing any smoke, the burning oil released an exotic fragrance that made people

reassured. The power, wealth and family background of Huaiyuan Palace were all exhibited in the hall.

The moment Zhang Tie caught sight of the characters " 怀远堂 1 " above the metal statue had he known that this man was Zhang Huaiyuan, the founder of Huaiyuan Palace and his direct ancestor.

At the foot of the huge statue were over 20 rows of more than 10,000 memorial tablets in total that were tidily and solemnly placed in stages. Beneath these tablets was a worship desk. In the middle of the worship desk was a piece of huge, pure, transparent black crystal as high as almost 1 m.

Everything here was very solemn and majestic.

Zhang Tie just watched the ancestral tablets and the statue of his ancestor silently. He then moved forward and took 3 sticks of incenses from the worship desk and lit them.

"Zhang Tie, apprentice of Huaiyuan Palace worships ancestors. I hope you could safeguard Huaiyuan Palace, keep it prosperous forever and keep my parents safe and happy for the rest of their lives. Please let me shoulder the diseases, aging, sorrows, pains and all the disasters for my parents!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie reverently knelt down and kowtowed three times before inserting the incenses into the incense burners.

Elder Muray and Elder Muen had long heard that Zhang Tie was extremely obedient to his parents. When Zhang Tie's family lived in Blackhot City, they were poor. Zhang Tie's mother sold rice brew to make up his father's income at the price of 2-3 copper coins per bowl. Zhang Tie liked to eat rice brew very much. However, after 4 years of age, he didn't eat anymore. When his family members asked why, he said he didn't want to take too much as he knew his parents were working too hard. Later on, when Zhang Tie's family returned to Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie then saved his father out of the prison using a "Mental Arithmetic by Abacus".

After that, Zhang Tie invented all-purpose medicament and became the pillar of the whole family. Although he could make too much money per day, he still didn't complain about his parents at all; instead, he always disguised as a naive kid to please his parents.

As all these things about Zhang Tie were too trivial, of course, the two elders would not pay attention to them until Zhang Tie had 3 outstanding sons.

Listening to Zhang Tie's prayer, the two elders felt emotional. As an old Hua saying went, parents were the pillars of a family. If there was an obedient son in a family, the family would naturally be surrounded by fortune qi and always have good lucks. Even if the whole family was in a dilemma, they could still get rid of it due to bliss. As Zhang Tie and Zhang Yang were both obedient sons, although their family had just returned to Huaiyuan Palace from Blackhot City a few years ago, their family lived better one year after another. After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie made Zhang Clan even the entire bloodline of Golden Sea City of Huaiyuan Palace prosperous. With one more knight, Huaiyuan Palace also became more powerful. Being obedient counted most in Hua culture. What a simple truth!

Watching Zhang Tie finishing his prayer, Elder Muen had Zhang Tie take a seat and wait for a few seconds. After then, he pointed at a golden jar with a narrow neck while a strand of battle qi flew out, causing a muffled sound. At the same time, Zhang Tie felt a bizarre strength spreading in the hall like ripples.

"Elder Muen, what's that for?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

Elder Muen and Elder Muray had long changed their attitudes utterly. After exchanging glances with each other with a smile, Elder Muray opened his mouth, "This is used to transmit sound. As long as it utters a sound, all the other elders of Zhang Clan will receive the signal through their jade chips. Closely after that, they would arrive as soon as possible."

"Isn't it as same as remote-sensing crystal?"

"Almost like that. However, remote-sensing crystals are natural born which could only be used in a pair. However, the sound-transmitting jar and jade chips are alchemist's objects, many of which could be used at the same time. Besides, they are limited to a distance. They could only resonate, instead of transmitting too many messages like remote-sensing crystals!"

Zhang Tie nodded. He had not imagined that he could see such a marvelous object in Huaiyuan Palace.

"Your affair counts most. After Elder Muyu and Elder Muan arrive here, you'd better explain it to them!" Elder Muen added.

Besides Elder Muyuan, Zhang Tie's 6th granduncle who had gone to the Eastern Continent, the rest 4 elders were in Huaiyuan Prefecture.

"Alright!"

At this moment, Elder Muray, although being bad-tempered, was also sitting quietly and waiting for the arrival of the other two elders. As it was a big event for Zhang Clan, the rest two elders in Huaiyuan Prefecture had to know about it.

...

After 10 minutes, Elder Muen saw Zhang Tie moving his ears. Heart racing a bit, he then asked.

"You've sensed that too?"

"I feel that an elder is 50 miles away from here. He's flying at his full speed while releasing his powerful battle qi!"

Having not imagined that Zhang Tie had already completely stabilized his realm of knight, Elder Muray and Elder Muen glanced at each other out of amazement, 'Those who have not stabilized their realm of knight could never be that sensitive to a knight's qi. One could not stabilize his realm of knight until he



promotes to knight for 10 years at least. Although one person might have a chance to promote to a knight rapidly, one could never save time in stabilizing his realm of knight...

The two elders both faintly guessed something.

...

Only after a few more minutes, Zhang Tie heard a sound outside the Ancestral Hall, when the elder landed outside the hall and walked in.

"Zhang Tie..." That elder exclaimed at the sight of Zhang Tie with an amazed look.

"Brother Muan, Zhang Tie came back, let's talk about it later when Elder Muyu arrives!" Elder Muen uttered.

Each elder had reached an extremely deep level in mental and physical cultivation. At that moment, although Elder Muan was amazed, he directly became quiet and took a seat.

After sitting down, at the sight of Zhang Tie's easygoing look, Elder Muan abruptly felt something as he drew in a breath, 'Zhang Tie's qi could almost match that of the other two elders' qi, has he...'

Elder Muan looked at Elder Muray, who slightly nodded towards him.

A few minutes later, Elder Muyu arrived.

After all the 4 elders arrived, they all moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

...

"The task that I accepted from the Allied Force Command was a trap. Senel Clan had long known that I would make an investigation in Tokei City, therefore, they arranged some powerhouses and high-level wing demons to wait for me in Tokei City. Soon after arriving at Tokei City, I had been discovered by

some high-level wing demons. In the battle with wing demons, my glider dropped off. I was then captured by Koz, the head of Senel Clan..."

"What happened later, you might have guessed. Senel Clan and Three-eye Association wanted me to serve them. I refused. They then sullied me in dirty means. Finally, Senel Clan wanted to make me succumb to them by locking me in a castle outside Tokei City.

"I didn't succumb to them. Instead, I found a chance to escape out of there. Due to some special reasons, after escaping from the territory of Senel Clan, I recovered and improved my battle force during a period. Later on, I returned to Selnes Theater of Operations. At that moment, Selnes Theater of Operations had been broken through by demons. Therefore, I just followed the demonized puppets corps all the way to revenge them from Selnes Theater of Operations, the Symbian Republic to Norman empire!"

"However, I failed to find such a chance. The demonized puppets covered everywhere in the camp. I even didn't know where were the family members of Senel Clan. Later on, the demonized puppets corps suffered a great loss in Nein City, causing a great chaos in the demonized puppets corps. After hiding in the chaotic demonized puppets corps for 2 months, I still failed to find the trace of Senel Clan. Therefore, I left Norman Empire for Upton City!"

"After that, I met a familiar person Tharant in Upton City, a young elite of Arthur Clan, another clan of Three-eye Association. After following Tharant for a few days, I found a conspiracy that he was planning in Upton City. He wanted to coordinate with the demonized puppets corps to close the south gate in the north of Kalay Mountain Range."

"After that, I sent the discovery to my elder brother..."

"Later on, the Upton battle broke out. You all knew what happened then. I was chased by a demon knight and finally jumped

into the subterranean river to escape. However, I was led into a mysterious underground space, where I found a huge pyramid being made of crystals. Being shocked, I walked inside unconsciously..."

When Zhang Tie said this, all the other elders exclaimed, "Ahh? Tower of time?"

Elder Muray almost stood up as he asked, "What happened then?"

Zhang Tie shrugged and said with a helpless look, "Honestly, it happened a long time ago. The moment I entered the pyramid had the demon knight arrived. As he was far away from me, he failed to catch me timely. I thought I was going to die as there was no way to escape. However, it was unimaginable that the demon knight could not follow me in the pyramid. He could not open it no matter how forcefully he attacked the pyramid from outside. Therefore, I became a bit reassured!"

Listening to this, all the other elders nodded inside, 'It's true. Tower of time could only allow one person at one time. Now that Zhang Tie had entered it, the demon knight could never enter it, neither could the Demon General. Zhang Tie was really lucky enough.'

"As the demon knight was waiting outside the pyramid, I dared not go out. In the beginning, I thought I was destined to die inside the pyramid as there was no food in it. After staying in the pyramid a few days, I didn't feel like hungry or thirsty at all. As it was open inside it, I then started to cultivate inside there!"

"I didn't know how long have I stayed in the pyramid. I remembered that I was almost driven mad by the loneliness for a few times. However, when I remembered that demon knight was right outside the pyramid, I forced myself to constantly cultivate until I entered a tranquility. I forgot about the existence of time and the demon knight. I just cultivated and cultivated until one day I felt being a bit hungry. I then walked out of the pyramid,

when I found that I had promoted a to knight..."

"Ahh? How long have you stayed in the tower of time?" Elder Muen asked.

With a serious frown, Zhang Tie shook his head helplessly before letting out a deep sigh, "In that state, I forgot how long had I stayed inside. I felt that I had stayed inside for my whole life. It was too long..."

Of course, Zhang Tie lied. If he told them that he had promoted to a knight only after staying in the tower of time for 15 years, the elders would definitely burst out clamor as they would be further curious about his cultivation methods and chance. As it was too short for commoners to promote to a knight in only 15 years, Zhang Tie just let them think about it themselves. After all, according to Jaray, different towers of time had different time velocity. Even though Huaiyuan Palace wanted to figure out how long had he stayed in the tower of time, they had to wait another 6 decades at least. By then, it didn't matter even if they knew that ZhangTie had promoted to a knight in 15 years.

The elders exchanged glances with each other out of amazement...

They all knew that Zhang Tie hid some secrets purposefully such as how he escaped out of the prison of Senel Clan and how he increased his battle force so fast. Now that Zhang Tie skipped them, nobody forced him to say that then.

If a king didn't keep his secret, he would lose his country; if a chancellor didn't keep his secret, he would lose his position; if a shi didn't keep his secret, he would lose his life. In this world, everybody had their own secrets. Even the roadside billboards had a hidden side, not to mention a person. All the elders of Huaiyuan Palace had their own secrets which they didn't want to expose to the public. Therefore, they didn't ask Zhang Tie about the details that Zhang Tie covered purposefully. It was also unnecessary.

There were only two points that counted most. Zhang Tie was a member of Huaiyuan Palace; he had promoted to a knight.

"Do you remember the location of the tower of time? When will the tower of time open again?" Noticing everyone else become silent, Elder Muan finally posed the questions that all the other elders were concerned about most.

"Hmm, I've made marks all the way out of there. The tower of time should open once again in 6 decades..." Zhang Tie pretended to rack his mind as he frowned, "When I left the pyramid, a message occurred to my mind. After leaving the underground space, I remembered the message, it said that the pyramid would open 60 years later!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, all the elders let out a sigh.

"What other questions do you have?" Elder Muen glanced at the other 3 elders before asking.

After exchanging a glance with each other, all the other elders shook their heads.

"If so, from today on, our Huaiyuan Palace will have one more clan elder, the only one who has promoted to a knight before 25!"

Zhang Tie became stunned at once, 'What? Clan elder...'

# Chapter 718: A Great Plan

---

After talking with the other 4 clan elders until midnight, Zhang Tie went to bed in an attic being not far from the Ancestral Hall where only elders could live in.

Although Zhang Tie went to bed, he was still troubled with too many messages.

After promoting to a knight, one would be destined to be a clan elder. This was indisputable in Huaiyuan Palace, or any place in Jinyun Country or Eastern Continent. Honestly, Zhang Tie didn't make any mental preparation about becoming the clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace. However, he could never stop it happening unless he broke himself away from Huaiyuan Palace. If a knight was not a clan elder, it would definitely bring a lot of negative gossips and doubts to Huaiyuan Palace and himself. Therefore, Zhang Tie had to accept the position.

Actually, Zhang Tie planned to return to Huaiyuan Palace for clearing some misunderstandings between him and Huaiyuan Palace in case of later concerns. He had never imagined that he could become a clan elder, which meant that he directly became a supreme leader of Huaiyuan Palace and a decision-maker on clan events. The conflicts between him and Huaiyuan Palace were nothing serious compared to the position of clan elder. The God joked with Zhang Tie once again.

Last night, none of the elders asked Zhang Tie about his cultivation, which made Zhang Tie a bit shocked.

However, what shocked Zhang Tie the most was the arrangement that Zhang Clan made for Huaiyuan Prefecture in the future.

After the super fleet arrived at Huaiyuan Prefecture from the Eastern Continent, Huaiyuan Palace would accomplish the evacuation of all the Hua population from Huaiyuan Prefecture.

This task had been carried out a few years. Up to now, there were still over 2 million Hua people left in Huaiyuan Prefecture. This was a complete transfer of Huaiyuan Palace's power. Not only this, all the major clans across Jinyun Country had been doing this.

When the 3rd holy war arrived, no major clan would lay their own clan's hope in Waii Sub-continent, a remote place. It was an inevitable choice that all the major clans would return to Taixia Country for their origins.

It was not a hasty decision for Huaiyuan Palace to return to Taixia Country. In Elder Muen's words, since Lord Huaiyuan founded his first city in Waii Sub-continent, Huaiyuan Palace had been preparing for returning to Taixia Country one day.

90% of population across Huaiyuan Prefecture would be transferred to Youzhou City, Taixia Country. Youzhou State was a lower state in the north of Taixia Country. It was just an underdeveloped place.. The area of the entire Youzhou State was equal to 2/3 of that of Waii Sub-continent. 5 decades ago, Taixia Country expanded its territory towards the north. When the border of Youzhou State was fixed, Huaiyuan Palace bought almost 1 million sq miles' land in the southeast coastal area of Youzhou State, Taixia Country. These years, besides Huaiyuan City in Yingzhou State, Huaiyuan Palace also had its undertaking in Youzhou State. They had not founded a city in Youzhou State yet. They just founded a big harbor. This time, after returning to Taixia Country, Huaiyuan Palace would find 8 cities in Youzhou State at one time so as to hold so many people which were transferred there.

According to the regulation of Taixia Country, after founding the 8 cities, Huaiyuan Palace would have a clan prefecture in Youzhou State, which indicated the official return of Huaiyuan Palace, instead of being overseas refugees. With this honor, Huaiyuan Palace would have a greater potential in development in Taixia Country. In the future, Huaiyuan Palace would help Count Long

Wind to ascend to the prefectural governor of Youzhou State, Taixia Country...

These years, Count Long Wind had been in Taixia Country, preparing for Huaiyuan Palace to return to Taixia Country and accumulate human relationships for him to ascend to the prefectural governor of Youzhou State, Taixia Country.

It was a great 100-year plan for Huaiyuan Palace to return to Taixia Country!

Compared to Waii Sub-continent, the remote place, Taixia Country was the real stage of Huaiyuan Palace.

Zhang Tie felt that everything that Huaiyuan Palace did in Jinyun Country was for this day. The abrupt holy war just stimulated Huaiyuan Palace to reap its harvest in Jinyun Country and return to its home to restart its undertaking with great population and wealth.

Huaiyuan Palace was just accumulating its power in Waii Sub-continent. When they came back to Taixia Country, they would lay their foundation for greater development potential.

The other major clans of Jinyun Country had similar plans, including those in Qilan Country. After the holy war broke out, the only choice that all the overseas major Hua clans could make was to return to Taixia Country!

However, this time, Huaiyuan Palace could not take away its cities, neither could it just leave everything here. At least for the time being, before the demonized puppets corps arrived, the entire Huaiyuan Prefecture was still prosperous. Those cities were still bringing great profits to Huaiyuan Palace everyday. Therefore, the Hurricane Corps of Huaiyuan Palace stayed here and wouldn't leave Waii Sub-continent until the last moment. As a deterrence, Huaiyuan Palace would also leave an elder to guard its interests in Huaiyuan Prefecture as the head of the Hurricane Corps.



After promoting to a knight, although his status as a clan elder had not been exposed, Zhang Tie had been qualified to attend the confidential events in the clan.

Zhang Tie bargained with the other clan elders in the latter half of their talk last night.

The discussion only contained 2 topics: Zhang Tie's duties in Huaiyuan Palace after promoting to the clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace; The bloodline heritage of Zhang Tie's 3 babies.

The two topics were both major events for Huaiyuan Palace. The first one was involved with the position of the new clan elder in Huaiyuan Palace; the second one was more important. The continuity of ancestral bloodlines was involved with a clan's prosperity. Especially the latter one, which was the biggest concern of the clan elders.

"I didn't know about the secrets of my 3 babies until I contacted my elder brother. I didn't know why they inherited my ancestral bloodline. I think this is related to my experience when I was once struck by thunderbolts in Blackhot City. After that, I felt my body had experienced subtle changes. I couldn't describe them in words. Maybe it's just an accident!"

Zhang Tie flickered to the elders with the most effective reason——thunder strike once again.

It was indeed the best decision for him to owe all the problems to thunder gods and the acquired lightning functional scholar syndrome. Zhang Tie would never admit that he could control the inheritance of ancestral bloodlines. Otherwise, he would never have a "tranquil" life in the future.

After hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the elders became silent.

Although they didn't speak, all the elders reached an agreement that the most important thing that Zhang Tie should do now was not cultivation, but to marry some Hua girls and deliver more

babies so as to ensure whether Zhang Tie's ancestral bloodlines could be inherited again. Especially after Zhang Tie confirmed that he had awakened the powerful Kuafu bloodline and sword affinity in the past one year, the elders opened their mouths so widely as if they wanted to devour Zhang Tie alive.

When bargaining with the elders, Zhang Tie was also considering his own problems. He was thinking about the relationship between him and Huaiyuan Palace. Finally, they fixed two events.

——After promoting to be a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie would serve the office of the head of Hurricane Corps of Huaiyuan Palace and stay in Waii Sub-continent.

——Before Zhang Tie returned to Taixia Country, Huaiyuan Palace would not interfere with Zhang Tie's marriage and personal life. However, after returning to Taixia Country, Zhang Tie was obliged to coordinate with Huaiyuan Palace to sustain the ancestral bloodline of Zhang Clan.

...

Zhang Tie didn't sleep well that night as he kept digesting the messages that he was told by the clan elders.

As a knight, one could still be energetic after being awake for a few days; therefore, Zhang Tie didn't feel sleepy at all. After getting up, he entered meditation with crossed legs for a short while before feeling refreshing all over once again.

After cleansing his face and teeth, Zhang Tie left the attic.

...

Only after one night, all the deacons and disciples on the Yiyang Mountain had been busy.

After coming to the Ancestral Hall, Zhang Tie found that a lot of deacons and disciples were cleaning the huge pillars while standing on the huge steel frames that they had put up.

"Take care, take care..." A deacon told a team of strong men who were carrying a lot of heavy crates into the Ancestral Hall. After that, the deacon told them to put down the crates, take the objects being padded by soft velvet out of the crates and pave them onto the floor of the hall.

At the sight of those objects, Zhang Tie became stunned. Because all the crates contained extremely brilliant square gold bricks, each of which was 2-3 cm in thickness, 10 cm in length and width. All the gold bricks were covered with brilliant patterns of bliss clouds. As the bricks were heavy, it required 2 deacons to take each brick out of the crate carefully and pave it onto the floor.

The moment the crates were empty would they be taken away. Closely after that, another team of strong men would carry in another batch of crates.

'Cleaning the hall and paving the floor with gold bricks. What for?'

Seeing Elder Muen standing in the hall and arranging jobs for some deacons, Zhang Tie walked over there.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Elder Muen waved his hand, telling those deacons to leave.

...

# Chapter 719: Rotating Chakra Ceremony

---

After bowing towards Elder Muen, those deacons threw an awe-stricken glance at Zhang Tie before leaving. As they were responsible for taking care of the Ancestral Hall and serving clan elders, of course, these deacons knew what was this for.

"Elder Muen, what's this for? Are we holding some ceremony?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"Of course we need to hold a ceremony. Have you forgotten what we talked about last night?" Elder Muen revealed a smile.

"Ahh? Is that for me?"

"Of course!"

"This...is too grand!" Zhang Tie looked around and watched those busy deacons and disciples, those gold bricks with propitious clouds and the prayer flags that were hanging in the hall. That was really too grand. Last night, the other elders said there would be an official ceremony for one more knight in Huaiyuan Palace. Zhang Tie had not imagined that it could be such grand.

"Rotating Chakra Ceremony is a major event for our clan. Of course, we have to treat it meticulously!" Elder Muen said with a solemn look.

"Rotating Chakra Ceremony?"

"After promoting to a knight, you have formed your original Chakra; if the Chakra could rotate forever, it would indicate a great battle force of our clan. The rotating Chakra is not only related to yourself, but also related to the qiyun and prosperity of the entire clan and Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, we have to hold a rotating Chakra ceremony to celebrate and display the dignity of the knight!" Speaking of this, Elder Muen looked around the entire hall with a narcissistic and emotional look as he lowered his voice, "The last rotating Chakra ceremony was held here 68 years ago.

Before Elder Muyu and Elder Muan promoted to knights at the same time, they were called Huaiyuan Double Jades due to great talents. They promoted to knights within 3 years one after another. In that rotating Chakra ceremony, the moment the two knights appeared, our Huaiyuan Palace shocked the entire Waii Sub-continent. In Jinyun Country, Huaiyuan Palace's prestige even exceeded the other 5 major clans, Lan Clan, Ou Clan, Dantai Clan, Wang Clan and Li Clan. Each member of Huaiyuan Palace was proud about that. Since then, the rotating Chakra ceremony's ritual instruments had been maintained everyday. Each member of Huaiyuan Palace expected for the moment when we could use those ritual instruments once again. And it came again 68 years later..."

"68 years!" Zhang Tie also let out a sigh while he was deeply moved by Elder Muen. Zhang Tie had not imagined that it was so difficult to be a knight.

"The big events of a major clan are warfare and sacrifice. In Taixia Country, each top clan would hold a rotating Chakra ceremony per 10 years or so. In each rotating Chakra ceremony, the cohesive force and influence of a clan would reach a new high. Before Huaiyuan Palace returned to Taixia Country, it's a good symbol for Huaiyuan Palace to hold another rotating Chakra ceremony in this Ancestral Hall!"

"When will it start?"

"November 3rd. It's a lucky day!" Elder Muen replied, "We have to pay great attention to this rotating Chakra ceremony. It will take Huaiyuan Palace's side more than half a month to prepare for it. Additionally, we have to send invitations to guests. It would take all the guests at least 1 month to arrive here. Today is September 24th. Although it is still a bit hasty, 40 days is okay!"

After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie said, "I have something to deal with. I will leave Huaiyuan Prefecture for a while. I will come back before November 1st!"

As Zhang Tie had not been to Ice and Snow Wilderness for a long time, he planned to take a look back there in this period. As his current swimming speed was at least 10 times faster than that of before, it wouldn't take him too long to make a round trip.

After being silent for a second, Elder Muen watched Zhang Tie seriously, "As this rotating Chakra ceremony is related to the dignity of the clan, after sending out the invitations, guests will converge here from all directions. If you didn't come back on time, the entire Huaiyuan Palace would feel bashful. If it's a dangerous trip, you can have Elder Muray accompany you..."

As Zhang Tie usually disappeared, Elder Muen was afraid that Zhang Tie would disappear once again. If so, Huaiyuan Palace would have a big trouble. If Zhang Tie was still the previous one, Elder Muen would have rebuked him; however, Zhang Tie's status was as same as that of him now. Although Zhang Tie had not become an official clan elder, he could not be looked down by anyone else in Huaiyuan Palace. As a clan elder, unless making an unforgivable mistake when he would be punished by all the other clan elders, he had the right to refuse any order in the clan. Negotiations were available instead of orders for him.

"Elder Muen, don't worry. I'm not going to fight demons this time. I will be safe!" Zhang Tie explained with a smile as he understood Elder Muen's concern.

"Hmm, come with me..." Elder Muen then led Zhang Tie into a rear court of the Ancestral Hall, where the clan elders usually cultivated in. After that, Elder Muen took out of a mini brocade box from a cabinet in a room.

Zhang Tie took it and found a finger ring inside. Given its look, the finger ring was nothing different than common finger rings, besides being thicker and wider. However, Zhang Tie knew that common finger rings could never be put away here in such a solemn way. Additionally, Zhang Tie remembered that all the clan elders were wearing a similar common finger ring.

"This is a top-quality remote-sensing crystal finger ring that could only be worn by clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace. According to our plan, you should wear it when you confirmed the knight character at the end of the rotating Chakra ceremony. Now that you want to leave Huaiyuan Prefecture, you can put it on first. You can contact the other clan elders with it in an emergency."

Zhang Tie took it and looked at it carefully. However, he found that it didn't look like a remote-sensing crystal at all.

"There's a mini top quality remote-sensing crystal inside this finger ring. You cannot see it without using your spiritual energy!"

Zhang Tie then sensed a fine hole which was dozens of times narrower than that of needle eye on the surface of the finger ring. After injecting his spiritual energy into that fine hole, Zhang Tie sensed the core of the remote-sensing crystal which looked like a drop of running water.

The smaller the remote-sensing crystal was, the easier it would be carried and the more precious it would be. After being sealed inside the finger ring, the remote-sensing crystal could almost not be seen by others. Such a delicate craftsmanship and the value of such a tiny remote-sensing crystal was amazing. Compared to that remote-sensing crystal gifted by Zhang Yang, this finger ring was much more advanced. After wearing this finger ring, when a message was transmitted here, he would receive it instantly.

Furthermore, this finger ring was a rare Knight-level rune equipment. After scanning over the metallic surface of the finger ring with his spiritual energy, Zhang Tie had seen lines of the message in his mind.

——Huaiyuan Finger Ring

——Knight-level Equipment.

——With this finger ring, the wearer could increase his nimbleness by 2%, his recovery speed by 2% and his perceptive

ability by 2%.

What a rarity! What was more was that there was an in-laid top quality remote-sensing crystal inside the finger ring.

"This finger ring is produced in the Items Pavilion of Huaiyuan Palace. Only clan elders are qualified to wear it. Each clan elder has one!"

Zhang Tie took it solemnly. Although the Huaiyuan Finger Ring was light, it was valuable.

There was an exclusive long-distance communications identification code for this finger ring in the box. After skimming it, Zhang Tie rubbed it into ashes in front of Elder Muen.

"In the encryption department of the Ancestral Hall, someone was keeping an eye on the other side of this remote-sensing crystal around the clock. Through the transfer of the encryption department, you could contact the other 5 clan elders through this finger ring!"

The encryption department was exclusive for the long-distance communications among clan elders, which was under the management of royal and reliable clan deacons. This agency displayed the wealth and privileges of clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace.

"Did Elder Muyuan transmit the message from Eastern Continent to here by Huaiyuan Finger Ring this time?"

"Hmm!" Elder Muen nodded.

After becoming a clan elder, according to the regulations of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie could only call other elders' courtesy names. Even if they were father and son or brothers, they could also not call each other according to their seniority in the family unless at home or privately. Therefore, Zhang Tie could not call 6th granduncle in the public anymore.

...



After 10 minutes, Zhang Tie strode downwards Yiyang Mountain, the center of Huaiyuan Palace alone.

In Huaiyuan Palace, nobody dared to follow clan elders unless the one was bored of living too long. Additionally, only knights were able to follow knights.

"Ahh? Are you a new disciple? We've not seen you before!" When Zhang Tie went downhill, he met some deacons who were going uphill at the same age of Zhang Tie. Watching the young man who was wearing a different warrior's costume from that of others, the other deacons asked amazingly. 'As all the deacons, stewards and disciples in the mountain were uniformed costumes respectively, nobody dared wear casual clothes here. Who's that one? How can he be so audacious?"

"No..."

Zhang Tie answered calmly before walking downhill in a handsome way under the amazing gaze of the disciples.

...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie came to an apartment on one avenue of Yiyang City.

...

"Ahh? Mr and Mrs James have already checked out half a year ago. They've already left Yiyang City by the sea!"

The concierge of that apartment was a strong white man. He answered Zhang Tie politely when he found that Zhang Tie was a Hua man in an expensive set of warrior's costumes.

At this moment, as a great batch of Hua people were evacuating from Yiyang City, more and more other human species flooded in. Many Siberians found their jobs in Yiyang City, which made up the shortage of labor forces in this city.

The concierge's reply was within Zhang Tie's expectation

completely. On the way here, he had guessed that Miss Daina had already moved away. Last time, after he left Yiyang City two months ago, Miss Daina should have married her fiancé. As such a long time had passed by, it was impossible for Miss Daina to stay in Yiyang City.

Zhang Tie didn't know why would he come here. As a whim just occurred to his mind, 'What's going with Miss Daina? If she's living well, I just want to take a glance from the distance without any malicious intention.' However, after finding that someone else was living in the residence of Miss Daina and her husband, Zhang Tie couldn't stand to inquire the concierge about the whereabouts of Miss Daina.

"Do you know their whereabouts?"

"They might have gone to the Eastern Continent. As to the details, I have to say I don't know. It's heard that Doc James is proficient in surgery. Someone dug him out of his previous hospital. His wife got pregnant. Of course, they left here by chance..."

'Had Miss Daina got pregnant? Given the time, she should have become a mom.' Zhang Tie felt complex inside.

'I married some girls and became a father; Miss Daina also married a man and became a mother. Is this the so-called life?'

...

After leaving Miss Daina's residence, Zhang Tie walked for a while in the boisterous streets of Yiyang City. Finally, he recovered his composure and called a taxi for Golden Sea City.

The driver of the taxi was a black man, who could not speak Hua language fluently. Zhang Tie just pointed at his destination on the map showed by the driver. The driver then understood where he was heading for.

Zhang Tie prepared to visit Zhang Clan's head in Golden Sea City.

On the way, the driver completely treated him as a tool for practicing Hua language. Hearing his jokes in awkward Hua language, Zhang Tie sighed helplessly, 'Yup, c'est la vie—even the woman being loved by a knight married another man; met a driver who joked in awkward Hua language when you were depressed.'

The taxi driver parked outside the old mansion of Zhang clan. Zhang Tie tossed a gold coin at the driver as he said, "Keep the changes..."

As the travel fee was less than 10 silver coin, the driver was overjoyed by a gold coin.

"Xiexie 1 ...Xiexie..." The driver instantly accelerated away 2 .

Zhang Tie shook his head as he walked towards the old mansion of Zhang Clan...

A limo drove by Zhang's old mansion accidentally. When it passed by Zhang Tie, the vehicle suddenly slowed down. The window was rolled down while a beauty in a very womanly skirt watched Zhang Tie's side with a slight frown. Zhang Tie also looked at her. The woman's eyes instantly turned bright.

"Is that you?" The woman exclaimed with an amazement.

After gazing at her for a few seconds, Zhang Tie remembered who she was, the crazy girl who hugged him and called him hubby when she saw him for the first time...

'Nana...'

After changing her make-up, the little female delinquent almost could not be recognized by Zhang Tie...

However, based on Zhang Tie's knowledge about women, the moment he saw her, he knew that her current look was completely disguised...

## Chapter 720: A Party in the Old Mansion

---

The guardians outside the gate of the old mansion didn't know Zhang Tie. Seeing Zhang Tie wandering towards them, they stopped him at once. However, that woman and her car were let in.

After the car drove inside, Zhang Tie was still standing outside the gate. The woman then threw an interesting look back at him.

"Nana, how can you stare at a man so rudely. It's Zhang's granny's 70th birthday, you should not be as wild as before. Your Aunt Xue even wants to introduce some young talented men of Zhang Clan to you today." A noble Hua lady at her 40s with an up-do urged, who looked a bit similar to that girl. She looked pretty good. Given the top quality purple beads string over her neck and the jade green bracelets on her wrists which could be family jewels, she was definitely a noblewoman.

"Zhang Clan of Golden Sea City is really prosperous these years. A couple of years ago, Zhang Clan could not match our Wang Clan. However, Zhang Clan's undertakings in Golden Sea City developed so fast. Zhang Clan's Milky Way Shipyard is worth over 10 million gold coins now, which rises to 2nd from 3rd. The old man Zhang Haitian of Zhang Clan is really great!" A 40-50-year-old man with glasses on the woman's side added as he watched the boisterous scene in Zhang's old mansion.

"It's said that Jinwu Business Group has its channel to get all-purpose medicament. They could even share a business with Longwind Business Group. What a great Zhang undertakings!" Speaking of the all-purpose medicament, the noble woman's eyes gleamed at once.

The man slightly frowned as he replied, "It seems that Jinwu Business Group has few business relations with Zhang's old mansion. However, Zhang Yang, the head of Jinwu Business Group

is indeed a grandson of Zhang Haitian, the head of Zhang Clan!"

"What's the reason? Doesn't Zhang's old mansion have shares of Jinwu Business Group?" The woman became a bit amazed.

"Hehe, Zhang Haitian the old man has 4 wives, 11 sons and daughters, and dozens of grandchildren. Many of his grandchildren had got married and established their own undertakings. It's normal to have problems in such a huge family. Every family has its own difficulties. Don't we?" The man smiled softly.

The noblewoman then became silent.

The girl in the car made a grimace by stretching out her tongue.

Zhang's old mansion was indeed very boisterous. As there was no vacancy in Zhang's old mansion anymore, some limos even parked on the road 100 m away from Zhang's old mansion. The steward of Zhang's old mansion was guiding servants to help drivers park their cars and lead guests into the old mansion.

After getting off the vehicle, the girl couldn't help but throw a glance back at Zhang Tie, who was still standing outside the gate. At this moment, a guardian hurriedly trotted towards here. When he met a guardian of the old mansion, he whispered to the guardian. The moment the guardian heard this had he stridden towards the gate flurriedly.

...

Zhang Tie patiently waited outside the gate a few minutes, during which period, two more limos drove into Zhang's old mansion. It seemed especially boisterous today in the old mansion. There would never be so many people in usual time.

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie saw a familiar guardian hurriedly walking towards him.

"Ahh, young master Zhang Tie..." At the sight of Zhang Tie, the guardian became startled at once. He had not imagined that Zhang

Tie could appear at this moment. He hurriedly had the concierges let Zhang Tie in, "Ahh, as these guardians are newly employed, they haven't seen you before. Please don't blame them, young master..."

As a great taboo, if guardians made their owner's family members uncomfortable, they would definitely be laid off. Even Zhang Haitian would not allow such silly guardians to stay in the old mansion.

After hearing the guardian's explanation, the two concierges hurriedly apologized to Zhang Tie.

"It doesn't matter, it doesn't matter, you're also fulfilling your duties. The old man would feel safe living here as he has concierges like you..." Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

Knowing that Zhang Tie was so kind, the two concierges let out a sigh at the same time, 'I've not imagined that the old man has such a kind grandson. All the other grandsons usually come here by limos in a very dignified way while being favored by many people. However, this one just came here by taxi. It seems that he has a low position in Zhang Clan. Additionally, he just came here in warrior's costumes today. It looks too casual...'

The guardian who knew Zhang Tie directly led Zhang Tie into the old mansion.

"It's so boisterous today." Zhang Tie uttered.

"It's the 70th birthday of the eldest grandma. So many people are coming here to offer birthday congratulations to her!"

"Ahh, is Zhang Su here?" Zhang Tie asked out of amazement.

Although Zhang Su and Zhang Tie both stayed in Hidden Dragon Palace, they just saw each other a few times. Later on, Zhang Su left Hidden Dragon Palace and carried out clan task. After the battle of Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie left Hidden Dragon Palace. They hadn't seen each other for 5 years.

"Young master Zhang Su has come back yesterday..."

Zhang Tie nodded, 'As Zhang Su is the eldest grandma's direct grandson, he should come back on her 70th birthday.'

Watching so many vehicles on the way, Zhang Tie knew that there were many visitors here today.

After coming to the lobby of the old mansion, Zhang Tie entered it himself.

...

The lobby was refurnished today. It looked happy everywhere. Over 200 people were gathering in the lobby, male or female, young or old. They were chatting together. Besides Zhang's family members, there were also many guests. Most of the guests were Zhang's old friends and influential figures in Golden Sea City. Male guests were in tidy clothes; female guests were in shiny jewels. Male and female were communicating with each other in different circles.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the lobby had he caught sight of Zhang Su.

In a small parlor beside the lobby, Zhang Su was chatting with the other young men and women whose age ranged from 16-20 or so. They were all sitting around Zhang Su and listening to him like how stars embraced the moon.

Zhang Su in a set of military uniform ranked Lieutenant Colonel of Jinyun Country looked pretty heroic and handsome. Many girls admired him so much that their eyes were sparkling. Even males were showing venerable looks. When Zhang Su was talking about something, some female teenagers at their 16s couldn't stand to exclaim while covering their mouth with the hand.

Compared to that 5 years ago, Zhang Su looked maturer and more confident.

At the sight of Zhang Su, Zhang Tie knew that he was LV 10. It

seemed that Zhang Su made a great progress these years compared to other members of Huaiyuan Palace; however, his progress was still dwarfed by Lan Yunxi, the chosen one. Of course, he could never match Zhang Tie, who always had marvelous experiences. Nobody across Waii Sub-continent could promote to knight at Zhang Tie's age, not to mention Zhang Su.

Even though, a LV 10 fighter at such a young age was qualified as an elite and backbone. The killer of Zhen Clan who was dispatched to Hidden Dragon Island from Heavens Cold City to kill Zhang Tie was also LV 10. However, Zhang Su's military uniform and rank indicated his current position.

Sensing someone on his side, he looked around and caught sight of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie revealed a big smile.

Zhang Su became a bit stunned. Closely after that, he sprung up and strode towards Zhang Tie, leaving the others alone.

The onlookers then moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

Some of them were Zhang Tie's cousins, who saw Zhang Tie in the old mansion a few years ago and still had a blurry memory of Zhang Tie. However, those young guests didn't know Zhang Tie at all.

"Ahh, who's that guy? I've not seen him before!" A young man asked a Zhang's member.

"Hmm, he's Zhang Tie, a cousin!" That person answered faintly.

Besides the troop that Huaiyuan Palace dispatched to Selnes Theater of Operations, few people across Huaiyuan Prefecture knew Zhang Tie's honor "Selnes Eagle". Because Hua people didn't pay much attention to such honors that were popular in Siberians. Later on, after Zhang Tie was captured by Senel Clan, rumors spread across Selnes Theater of Operations; Huayuan Palace then didn't propagate him anymore. The message about Zhang Tie that



Zhang's old mansion gasped was still one and half a year ago when Zhang Tie was chased out of Hidden Dragon Palace. The old man Zhang Haitian of Zhang Clan didn't express his opinion about Zhang Tie's performance. As to those peers, some of them felt pitiful about Zhang Tie; some took pleasure in Zhang Tie's misfortune. In a major clan, young ones always compete with each other.

"Cousin!" Zhang Tie called him.

"You're still alive?" Zhang Su looked very excited as his eyes were filled with tears, "I heard about your experience from junior fellow apprentice Liu Xu when I went back to Hidden Dragon Island last time. I thought...I thought..."

Watching Zhang Su's expression, Zhang Tie felt warm, too. When in Hidden Dragon Palace, he knew that this cousin was a bit arrogant; however, generally, he was a sentimental person. Additionally, he was pretty decisive and had a great sense of responsibility.

Zhang Tie just embraced Zhang Su tightly.

Given the bloodline, they were cousins. In Hidden Dragon Palace, they were fellow apprentices. When the holy war broke out, Zhang Tie defended demons in Selnes Theater of Operations while Zhang Su cleared demonized puppets in Qilan Country, namely, they were comrades-in-arms. Plus some common experiences in Hidden Dragon Island, they didn't need to talk too much; instead, they just embraced each other while patting each other's backs forcefully.

Zhang Tie was not eye-catching in Zhang's old mansion. Few people paid attention to him when he entered the old mansion. By contrast, Zhang Su was the pillar of Zhang's young generation who was widely accepted by the family members in Zhang's old mansion. When they embraced so fervently at the gate of the lobby, everybody else moved their eyes on them. After recognizing Zhang Tie, a steward hurriedly went to report to Zhang Haitian

the old man of Zhang Clan.

After separating from each other, Zhang Su recovered his composure before drawing in a breath deeply. Closely after that, he guided Zhang Tie into the back drawing room.

"The grandpa is always thinking about you these days. He also knew what you encountered in Selnes Theater of Operations. Over the past year, having not received your message, the old man has been worried about you. He must be very happy to know that you've come today..."

Zhang Tie replied with a smile. Being silent, he just followed Zhang Su towards the back drawing room. Before they entered the back drawing-room, the old man had been already walking towards them. At the sight of Zhang Tie, the grandpa was so happy that he tightly held Zhang Tie's hands.

"Fine, fine, nice to see you back, nice to see you back..."

The one followed after the old man was his eldest wife. The old woman wore a gold-silk purple skirt with a green emerald as large as a chicken's egg on her forehead. Meanwhile, she was holding a brilliant crystal ruyi. She looked pretty dignified and rich. Although it was her 70th birthday, only one-third of her hair had turned pale. She looked like only a bit elder than 50.

"I've just returned to Huaiyuan Prefecture last night. As I didn't know that today was grand madam's 70th birthday, therefore, I didn't prepare any gift for you. Please don't blame me for that!" Zhang Tie explained.

"Su'er also came back with no gift. As you two fought outside for the clan, it's my best gift that you came back safe and sound! Your grandpa has not been so happy for a long time..." Grand madam said happily. No matter whether it was true or not, Zhang Tie indeed felt warm inside.

"Have you registered in the clan when you came back?" The

grandpa asked out of concern, which contained deep meaning.

"Hmm, I've already registered. It's okay..."

The old man then became reassured. In his opinion, if Zhang Tie could come back and register himself in the clan after being captured and stand safe and sound in front of him, he's indeed innocent. If there was really some problems with him, Zhang Tie had to undergo a strict interrogation carried out by the clan, even if he could survive back.

"It's okay, young men should experience more. As long as there's a green mountain, we won't fear about having no firewoods to burn!" The old man comforted Zhang Tie. The old man even wanted to ask Zhang Tie about his experiences after being captured; however, seeing so many people circling around here, he became silent.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile without making any explanation. In most people's eyes, he was dismissed by Hidden Dragon Palace; after that, he was captured in Selnes Theater of Operations and his current status was definitely disgraced. As all the news in Yiyang Mountain were forbidden to be revealed to the public, even if those deacons and disciples knew something, they dared not expose the news to the public. Except for only a few people, most of the people across Huaiyuan Prefecture didn't know that he had already promoted to a knight.

Seeing Zhang Haitian and the grand madam walking out of the back drawing-room to see Zhang Tie, many people in the lobby were surprised as many of them gathered here.

"Old man, who's this young man?" A guest asked out of curiosity.

"This is my grandson, who has been fighting in Selnes Theater of Operations with the airship troop of Jinyun Country. He's just come back today!" The old man explained faintly.

At the same time, the old man threw a glance at Zhang Su. Zhang

Su instantly got the old man's meaning as he grabbed Zhang Tie's arm and explained to the onlookers with a smile, "Uncles, as my cousin has just come back today, I will introduce some friends to him. Some younger female cousins are waiting for listening to my cousin talking about how humans fought demonized puppets in STO. I have to take him away!"

"Haha...I've not imagined that Zhang Clan could have two talents who could fight demons. Old man, you have good fortune. You have so many talented offsprings of literary and military capacity!" The guest replied while all the other guests laughed out loudly. Zhang Su also took Zhang Tie into the back drawing-room.

Given the performance of the old man and Zhang Su, Zhang Tie could sense that the old man was protecting him. Seeing Zhang Su and Zhang Tie getting along with each other so well, the old man also became relieved. From then on, he always kept a big smile.

Seeing the old man happy, all the people in the old mansion also looked happy, even though some of them were actually unhappy. Therefore, Zhang's old mansion became more boisterous.

Those young men who surrounded Zhang Su just now were indeed interested in Zhang Tie. The moment Zhang Su pulled Zhang Tie over there had a 16-17-year-old girl thrown her curious look onto Zhang Tie. Although Zhang Tie was already over 20 years old, he looked as young as the girl.

Feeling like meeting a peer, the young girl instantly asked Zhang Tie about his job and military rank in Selnes Theater of Operations vigorously.

"I fought demons with the airship troop in Selnes Theater of Operations. I'm a glider driver; sergeant first class!" Zhang Tie answered seriously. As the only air cavalry in Selnes Theater of Operations, he was indeed fighting with the airship troop as a sergeant first class.

Zhang Su turned around and seemed wanting to say something.

Zhang Tie then blinked his eyes towards him. After knowing that Zhang Tie didn't want to mention what happened in Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Su then became silent; he just listened to Zhang Tie flickering the young girl.

"Ahh..."The young girl obviously looked disappointed. Judging from Zhang Su's and grandpa's attitudes towards him, the young girl even thought Zhang Tie was an influential figure. However, she had not imagined that Zhang Tie was just a newbie who drove gliders. Not only that, even the other young women moved their eyes away from Zhang Tie. In this circle, although being young, many people had known it clearly who were valuable to them. Undoubtedly, a sergeant first class who could only drive glider in Selnes Theater of Operations was not their target.

"What were you doing before serving the army? You're younger than 18. How could you join the army?" The young girl asked the last question out of curiosity.

"I stayed in Hidden Dragon Palace for a few days, but I was expelled. So I'm barely qualified as a fighter!" Zhang Tie explained seriously.

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, even those men beside Zhang Tie became wordless——just a guy who was expelled from Huaiyuan Palace.

...

Zhang Tie then felt quiet. After revealing a smile towards Zhang Su, he sat in the corner of the drawing-room with a glass of wine in hand and listening to young men chatting.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that it was the grand madam's 70th birthday. Previously, he wanted to leave soon after visiting the old man. It seemed that he had to finish the supper. It would be too merciless if he left now. 'Just wait then.'

Zhang Tie drunk the wine as he listening to their talk. At the

same time, he was imagining 4 golden abacuses and carrying out the four different arithmetic operations.

Zhang Tie was already able to do two things adroitly at the same time. After promoting to a knight, with surging spiritual energy, he attempted to do different arithmetic operations on 4 abacuses at the same time.

This attempt was almost as same as that when he just attempted to imagine 2 abacuses in mind at the beginning.

When he did two things at the same time, Zhang Tie actually had already realized the potential value of "mental arithmetic by abacus".

The more abacuses he imagined in mind, the more effective "mental arithmetic by abacus" would be to the improvement of his spiritual energy. When he imagined 2 abacuses at the same time, he could improve his spiritual energy by 2 times; when he imagined 4 abacuses at the same time, he could improve his spiritual energy by 3 times.

The original 'mental arithmetic by abacus' could make a very limited improvement in his spiritual energy; however, after improving the effect by 3 times, Zhang Tie felt that "mental arithmetic by abacus" could almost match the effect of some secret methods on cultivating spiritual energy.

'What if I imagine 8, 16, 32 abacuses at the same time?'

The moment Zhang Tie imagined about the bright future had he faintly become excited inside.

However, this was not the only effect of "mental arithmetic by abacus". The most important effect of "mental arithmetic by abacus" was that he could do many things at the same time...

'What would happen if I could do 2 things, 4 things even 8 things at the same time...'

Zhang Tie faintly felt a terrifying potential value of "mental

arithmetic by abacus"...

...

Suddenly, a gust of fragrance arrived. Smelling the familiar fragrance, Zhang Tie sighed, 'The girl comes again?'

"Please stay far away from me. Can we just pretend to not know each other?" Zhang Tie sighed as he stopped cultivation.

"I feel you were just flickering the young girl, right? How could you be that average?" The woman whispered to Zhang Tie.

Raising his eyes, Zhang Tie looked at the woman in a brilliant womanly skirt. The woman's eyes gleamed dangerously like how a naughty kid found something funny.

"So what?" Zhang Tie slightly raised his jaw, "You bit me?"

"How about this? You tell me your life in Selnes Theater of Operations, I promise to not tell others about that!" The woman called Nana revealed a curious look.

Zhang Tie just rolled his eyes and ignored such a naive suggestion.

"Tell me about your requirement. How about racing car once again. If you lost it, you have to follow my order!" The woman rolled her eyes as she said smartly.

"Little girl, your mom is calling you. Hurry, go meet your Mr. Right in the future. If you are rebellious in your puberty, just race cars with other boys. You can drill as many holes as possible on your ears. After all, you don't lack money. Just daub some senior recovery medicament on the holes. Additionally, you can also pretend as a fair lady with earrings on them in such a scene. When you get married, remember to give birth to some more babies for your husband as a contribution to humans. You can take care of your babies, walk dogs or make hairdressing at home everyday. Just be your young mistress of the house. As to battles, many people would die there. You'd better not involve in it. Neither

should you be interested in the battle. If you are interested in stories, just go read cavalry novels!"

The woman became stunned. She looked along the direction of Zhang Tie's jaw as she saw her mom and Aunt Xue standing in the far with a 20-year old man in a formal dress. Her mom was watching him with a worrying look and intending to have her back. 'How...how did he know that I daubed senior recovery medicament on my ear holes.'

'Jerk!'

...

However, Zhang Tie made a wrong judgment about this girl's next movement. Under the gaze of the two women and a man, this girl just took a seat on the sofa beside her like a fair lady silently. At the same time, she threw a sweet smile at Zhang Tie while putting her arms on the handrails of the sofa. Closely after that, she leaned against the sofa and watched Zhang Tie obsessively with her hand on her cheek.

What a picturesque scene!

Zhang Tie soon sensed the girl's destructive force. The man who was waiting for her over there threw a jealous look towards him. Closely after that, the other young men transferred their eyes onto Zhang Tie. Even those girls who lost their interests in him also started to look at him with an amazing look once again.

Zhang Su also looked weird as he thought, 'What a cousin! You could have dozens of girlfriends and female friends in Blackhot City silently and could have all of them move to Huaiyuan Prefecture voluntarily. But only after sitting here in an extremely low-key way for a few minutes, you've already fascinated the princess of Wang Clan...'



## Chapter 721: Innocent Words

---

The girl finally drew away by her mother from Zhang Tie's side before the banquet. Zhang Su then found a chance to draw Zhang Tie to one side and chatted with him in low voice.

During a few hours, being gazed by that girl, Zhang Tie almost became the public enemy of those unmarried male men in the old mansion. However, Zhang Tie just treated it as the mischief of that girl and ignored that. He maintained a calm look as he didn't think that girl could harm him at all. As for those young men who were jealous of him, Zhang Tie was not obliged to explain it to them. What made Zhang Tie feel a bit funny was that even his male cousins were also jealous of him.

Zhang Tie had an impression in some of his male cousins. While the rest were strange to him. As members of Zhang Clan, who shared the same bloodline, Zhang Tie was really disappointed about them in this scene.

However, Zhang Tie knew that it was inevitable. The grandpa had 11 sons and daughters. Zhang Tie's uncles married more than one wife. Therefore, Zhang Tie had at least 50-60 peers, some of which were as excellent as Zhang Su, some were fickle.

The family members of the two uncles who had a close relationship with Zhang Tie's family had left for Eastern Continent to converge with their parents one month ago. Zhang Tie's elder brother also needed people to help his undertaking in Eastern Continent. None of Zhang Tie's cousins in his two uncles' family came here. Zhang Lin, Zhang Su's father had also gone to the Eastern Continent to prepare for the transfer of Zhang's industry.

Zhang Tie thought that his two uncles might have left Huaiyuan Prefecture earlier on purpose. In that way, they didn't have to attend such a birthday party bashfully. The grand madam was smart; Zhang Tie's biological grandma was the old man's 4th wife.

The grand madam and the 4th madam didn't get on well with each other; especially after Zhang Tie's biological grandma passed away, the 4th madam's offsprings were always pushed aside in Zhang Clan. Zhang Tie's two uncles didn't live well at home; therefore, they had been used to be meticulous since they were young. As Zhang Tie's family gradually developed these years, the relationship between the grand madam and the 4th madam's offsprings gradually relieved.

Catching their obviously jealous looks, Zhang Tie understood that the girl had a great family background. Those men's envy didn't simply originate from that woman's beautiful look.

Actually, for those who could come here to offer birthday congratulations, simply beautiful women were just toys and cheap commodities for them. Nobody would care about their looks at all.

"How did you know that princess of Wang Clan?" Zhang Su asked Zhang Tie in a low voice.

"Do you believe if I tell you that I didn't know her surname until now?" Zhang Tie made a bitter smile.

Zhang Su slowly nodded as he watched Zhang Tie, "I believe that; but I'm afraid that others don't believe that!"

"What's her family background?"

"Wang Clan in Fubo City, the largest ores and steel merchant in Huaiyuan Prefecture. They have over 10 mines and more than 1 gold mine in Huaiyuan Prefecture and Jinyun Country."

Zhang Tie was shocked by the beauty's wealth, "What's the relationship between this Wang Clan and the other Wang Clan, one of the 6 major clans in Jinyun Country?"

"Irrelevant, the wife of the city owner of Fubo City is the biological elder sister of Wang's old man. Wang Clan is one of best relatives of our Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace, which has a close relationship with Fubo City. These years, our Zhang Clan's

shipyard expanded a lot which meant a great consumption of steel; the business between Zhang Clan and Wang Clan also became frequent. Therefore, Wang Clan dispatched someone here to offer birthday congratulations to my grandma..."

Zhang Tie understood it right away. From the perspective of the clan elder, of course, Zhang Clan would not allow the steel and ores trade in shipbuilding industry of Huaiyuan Prefecture fall in the hand of the other major clan of Jinyun Country. Although the 6 major clans of Jinyun Country made connections through marriages, some bottomlines could never be broken through. Each clan had to consider their own interests. Such a pillar industry for a clan would never be under the control of the other major clan who were on the equal footing with Zhang Clan.

"Do you want to make connections with Wang Clan through marriage?" Zhang Tie smiled.

"The old man doesn't express his opinion. However, some uncles and aunts are very enthusiastic about this. Before you arrived here, an aunt had already introduced some male cousins to Wang's princess!"

"Haha, I think you're the best one who could make connections with Wang Clan through marriage!" Zhang Tie joked in a low voice.

Zhang Su threw a glance at Zhang Tie, "I've already fallen in love with someone. You know that."

Zhang Tie then remembered that Zhang Su truly had a beloved senior sister apprentice when he was in Hidden Dragon Island. Zhang Su even borrowed money from Zhang Tie to open a workshop for that senior sister apprentice. Zhang Su felt bashful to talk about it at that time; later on, Zhang Tie knew that Zhang Su already had a beloved senior sister apprentice surnamed Fang in Breaking Heavens Department.

Zhang Tie patted his head and asked, "Why senior sister

apprentice didn't come today?"

"She's not promoted to LV 9 yet. Therefore, she could not leave Hidden Dragon Island!" Zhang Su explained in an embarrassed way.

When he was in Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Su's cultivation speed and talent were among the best ones. Therefore, he promoted to LV 10 in 5 years. However, it was already good enough for others to promote to LV 9 before 30 years old.

"Oh, I almost forgot that, what's the girl's name?" Zhang Tie suddenly recalled something.

Zhang Su watched Zhang Tie a few seconds before saying in a helpless way, "Alright, she's Wang Shina!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

...

The grandest banquet finally started at dusk. Over 200 people gathered in a refurnished banquet hall of Zhang's old mansion, about 20 huge round tables.

Zhang Haitian and grand madam were sitting in the main seats. After the banquet started, all the juniors went to propose a toast and offer birthday congratulations to the grand madam. The old man and the grand madam talked with the juniors graciously. The grand madam then distributed shoe-shaped gold ingots to them.

The shoe-shaped gold ingot was an ancient Hua currency, which had not been circulated in this age. In this age, people mainly used standard gold coins while block trades were mainly settled in gold checks or gold bullions. Each gold bullion was lighter than 1 kg and was worth less than 40 gold coins. This was always seen in major clans. Commoners would feel expensive by spending 10-20 gold coins one time.

It was a major step for juniors to propose toasts to elders in major clans, in which period, what counted most was to show Zhang's

large population and wealth.

Even generals would hold parade; similarly, in major clans, elders would also hold a special parade such as proposing a toast to elders.

With the chance of proposing a toast, some were flattering the old man and the grand madam, some were showing their achievement and talent through dialogue and so on and so forth.

Those guests just watched them silently with a smile as they commented the Zhang's juniors inside.

Many major clans across Jinyun Country made connections through marriage since the juniors offered birthday congratulations to the elders.

...

When Zhang Su proposed a toast to the old man and the grand madam, the old man encouraged him to not be proud and fickle and continue to make meritorious deeds for the clan. The grand madam gifted Zhang Su a shoe-shaped gold ingot passionately.

Offering birthday congratulations were ongoing according to seniority in the clan. The grandchildren of the old man and the grand madam were the second batch. It started from the grandchildren of the grand madam, then those of the 2nd madam, the 3rd madam and the 4th madam. Zhang Tie belonged to the grandchildren of the 4th madam and the only representative of that bloodline. Actually, he ranked last.

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't have to attend such a link. However, he encountered it by chance. As he didn't want to make himself too exceptional and look stiff among family members in the public. 'Just let the bygones be bygones. No need to be that narrow-minded.'

When others were proposing a toast or waiting to propose a toast, none of Zhang juniors were picking dish by chopsticks,

except Zhang Tie, who was enjoying himself at the table. All the others at the table threw a disdainful look at Zhang Tie except for Zhang Su.

"Since how many days have you not eaten food?" Zhang Su whispered to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie showed 4 fingers while his mouth was filled with food.

"4 days?" Zhang Su was shocked.

Zhang Tie nodded...

A few days ago, Zhang Tie was entering meditation in the airship, during which period he didn't eat food at all. When he came to Huaiyuan Palace yesterday, he bargained with the elders overnight. Plus today, it was totally 4 days. Seeing so many delicious foods at the table, Zhang Tie preferred to eat them right away.

Zhang Su thought Zhang Tie was starved all the way back to Huaiyuan Prefecture; therefore, he just threw a sympathetic look at Zhang Tie.

...

When Zhang Tie was eating food, the other 3 people at the table were also peeping at him. However, the two women were interested in him while one man was hateful about him. Besides, the man looked more profound and a bit confused...

At the sight of Zhang Tie's performance, Wang Shina's mom instantly turned around and threw a glare at Wang Shina, which indicated "Dead girl, how do you like such a starved ghost in such a scene? Don't lose face to our Wang Clan..."

"Mom, don't you feel that guy is handsome?" Wang Shina mumbled. Watching her mom stretching out her hand to pinch her, she stretched out her tongue before hurriedly disguising as a fair lady. Given her look, Wang Shina's mom was so angry that she instantly turned around and whispered to a man on her side.

"Look at your daughter."

The man smiled silently.

Women always looked at the surface. If one person stayed calm and unconstrained at this moment, he was either an idiot or a fierce tiger who sniffed the rose in mind.

However, Zhang Tie didn't look like an idiot or someone who didn't understand the rites. Additionally, he was too young and didn't look like being experienced and talented. Therefore, Wang Shina's father looked a bit confused.

...

10 minutes after Zhang Su proposed a toast to the grand madam and the old man, Zhang Su told Zhang Tie it was his turn by throwing a glance at him. Zhang Tie then cleaned his mouth using a facial tissue and walked towards the seats of the old man and the grand madam with a glass of wine in his hand.

The moment Zhang Tie stood up had the onlookers moved their eyes onto him. Those who didn't know Zhang Tie were curious about him.

After coming to the old man and the grand madam, before Zhang Tie opened his mouth, a crispy and innocent voice abruptly sounded from another table on one side.

"Ahh, you, coward of Zhang Clan. You were a captive of demons. How dare you propose a toast to 1st grandma?"

Closely after this voice, the entire banquet hall became quiet while Zhang Haitian changed his face at once...

## Chapter 722: One Dragon

---

Closely after the kid's exclamation, the entire banquet hall became quiet at once...

Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside. He had not imagined that someone could be so blinded by lust for money. How could he use a kid to slander him? When the kid said that, Zhang Tie knew that a pleasant sneer must have flashed by someone's face.

'Don't they know that it will make the old man and the entire Zhang Clan lose their face by doing this? Is it worthwhile only for a potential Wang's woman by doing this? Do they think that they will have a chance to marry the Wang's princess by ruining my reputation?'

That kid was also a member of Zhang Clan. Given the seniority of Zhang Clan, Zhang Tie was even his uncle...

Seeing Zhang's old man shooting his furious look towards the kid, the kid's parents instantly became flurried as the kid's mother also changed his face, "Xiaoyi, no bullsh\*t..."

"I'm not talking bullsh\*t!" The kid raised his head stubbornly as he pointed at Zhang Tie and said, "This man is as timid as a rabbit. He was captured by demons in Selnes Theater of Operations and barely saved himself..."

"Pah!" The kid's father slapped the kid forcefully as he noticed the old man's popped his eyes and felt goosebumps all over.

"Wah..." The kid instantly burst out into laughter while covering his face in an unbelievable way.

The kid's jarring cry reverberated around the entire quiet banquet hall...

The old man's look had turned completely icy at this moment. He glanced over all the Zhang's offsprings. Besides only a few members of Zhang Clan, few of those at present knew that secret.



How could a kid know that? Naturally, he was taken as a gun when Zhang Tie proposed a toast to the grand madam and the old man...

The old man wanted to lose his temper; however, after thinking that Zhang Tie would be more embarrassed if he exposed Zhang Tie's experience to the public, the old man just threw a glance at Zhang Tie before recovering his composure.

After feeling the old man's fury which was going to break out like a volcano, the grand madam looked a bit flurried and surprised. She then threw a strict glance at the other juniors on her side. Those juniors dared not stare at her at all...

Zhang Tie kept all this in mind. In the beginning, he didn't want to care about such a trivial thing because he thought it was unnecessary to explain and prove it to these irrelevant people at all. He felt no shame about what he did at all. However, given the current situation, if he didn't explain or do something, not only his face, even the entire Zhang Clan's face would be lost. Some people with sh\*t in their mind could not care about the face of Zhang Clan, however, Zhang Tie himself should care about it, because there were so many members of Zhang Clan at present.

If he was required to make a choice between Zhang Clan's face and those d\*\*chebags' face, Zhang Tie would definitely choose to preserve Zhang Clan's face. Therefore, Zhang Tie had to give an unforgettable lesson to those people. 'If you don't care about Zhang Clan's face, watch out your face then...'

'I don't need to explain as my words are not persuasive at this moment and would only make those d\*\*chebags more pleased. Someone else should explain it to them...' Zhang Tie thought.

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy. In a split second, he had sent out a message through the finger ring on his hand.

Right then, Zhang Su instantly sprung up as he glanced at all the other peers of Zhang Clan. Zhang Su realized that someone wanted to strike Zhang Tie so as to ruin the potential marriage between

Zhang Tie and Wang's princess. Zhang Su roared, "Zhang Tie made a meritorious deed in Selnes Theater of Operations. Since he has returned to the clan, it indicates that he's innocent. Whoever is slandering Zhang Tie, roll out!"

Nobody stood out. However, the Zhang's old man's eyes looked icier. All the guests were stupefied by such an incident as they exchanged glances with each other silently. Nobody had imagined about this incident at the 70th birthday of Zhang's grand madam. When a clan expanded, there would always be tricks for rights and interests. Such an incident was not strange at all. It was just a good play for the public.

"Zhang Tie wishes grandpa and grand madam happy and healthy life forever!"

When everybody became quiet, Zhang Tie uttered as he held the glass of wine by two hands to propose a toast to the grand madam. Closely after that, Zhang Tie bottomed up the glass.

"Good, good, everything is good, everything is good..." The grand madam recovered her composure as she took a glass of sweet water passed by a female servant and drunk it. After that, she passed a shoe-shaped gold ingot to Zhang Tie...

After taking that gold ingot, Zhang Tie frankly sat back. However, the others threw different looks at him. Someone took pleasure in Zhang Tie's misfortune; some were fully sympathetic about him.

"Come on, cousin, don't stand there; take a seat; eat something!" After returning to his seat, Zhang Tie pressed Zhang Su, who still looked furious, onto the chair with a smile. After that, he continued to enjoy so many delicious foods like nothing had happened. He even picked a chicken leg for Zhang Su.

The crying kid was taken out of the banquet hall by his mother. All the guests and Zhang's family members in the banquet hall pretended that nothing had happened as they recovered their

bustle at once. After Zhang's juniors proposed toasts to the grand madam and the old man, it was other junior guests' turn. However, the bustle contained a weird sense. Zhang's old man still maintained a bad look.

...

However, 10 minutes later, before the junior guests finished their jobs had constant, dense footsteps drifted from outside the banquet hall. Before those people in the banquet hall responded to it had the gate been pushed open forcefully. Closely after that, an old man with white mustache slowly walked inside with hands on his back. A big team of people in black military uniform poured in and circled around all the tables with solemn looks while putting their hands on their sword handles. At the same time, they gazed at all the people at present with thunder-like looks.

At the sight of that old man, all the influential figures of Zhang Clan, including Zhang Haitian in the banquet hall stood up as they showed their respect to the old man.

"Lord Judge..."

"Lord Yuanshan..."

The old man was also wearing a black robe with 5 flame-like golden lines on the wristbands. This old man who looked as firm as iron and mountain was the lord judge of Golden Sea City. He was responsible for the execution of criminal laws across Golden Sea City, the supervision of local government officials and the elimination of evils. Besides, he was also responsible for maintaining the regulation of Huaiyuan Palace. In Huaiyuan Palace, the title of lord judge was directly appointed by the Criminal Laws Pavilion of the clan, who was under the direct leadership of the clan elder who was the head of the Criminal Laws Pavilion and was only responsible for the Elders Association. When necessary, the lord judge had the right to kill any government official or Zhang offspring below the castellans of Huaiyuan Palace

before reporting to the clan elder of Criminal Laws Pavilion. Among all the cities of Huaiyuan Prefecture, the title of lord judge was as noble as castellans. The clan elder who ruled the Criminal Laws Pavilion now was Elder Muray. Elder Muray hated evils so much and was bad-tempered. With Elder Muray on their back, the subordinates of Criminal Laws Pavilion became more decisive and strict in law enforcement.

After recognizing the status of the old man, all the influential figures in the banquet hall couldn't sit there anymore.

Zhang Haitian was also shocked very much. Even the grand madam hurriedly stood up and bowed towards the lord judge.

"Lord Yuanshan, why are you..." Zhang's old man instantly asked.

"I've just received a message. Remnants of demons and Three-eye Association are hiding in this banquet hall and making rumors to confuse Huaiyuan Palace's people, even the humans. Therefore, this old fellow especially came here to see who dares to make troubles here under my eyes in Golden Sea City!"

Closely after the lord judge's words, the entire banquet hall suddenly became frozen while everybody felt a killing qi.

"Lord Yuanshan, is...there...something wrong...with the message? It's my wife's 70th birthday today. Besides Zhang family members, these are all my friends. How could there be moles of demons and Three-eye Association?" Zhang's old man asked with a surprised look.

"When in Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie, on behalf of Huaiyuan Palace, guarded the entire human airship fleet alone. He broke the myth that wing demons were unrivaled in the air by killing numerous wing demons alone in the sky. He made meritorious deeds many times for humans and won the honor "Selnes Eagle". He was well-known across the entire Selnes Theater of Operations and greatly raised the morale of all the human

soldiers across the theater of Operations. Zhang Tie had made notable exploits. As a result, demons and Three-eye Association were afraid of him very much. After then, demons and Three-eye Association set him up for the reason that he was a mole of demons and Three-eye Association in the Selnes Allied Humans Command. Zhang Tie deepened into the capital of Titanic Duchy alone to execute the task considering that it was related to the life or death of the allied human forces in Selnes Theater of Operations regardless of his personal life or honor. Finally, he fell into the trap set by demons and Three-eye Association and lost his contact with the troop of Jinyun Country..."

"During that period when Zhang Tie was captured, demons and Three-eye Association spread rumors across Selnes Theater of Operations, they fabricated that Zhang Tie, the disciple of our Huaiyuan Palace, had been captured by them and surrendered to demons. As a result, it gave a blow to our army's morale. After then, the demon corps broke through the humans' defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations. Zhang Tie, our Huaiyuan Palace's disciple, alone fought over 10,000 miles in the enemy-occupied zone before breaking through their encirclement and joined the battle of Upton with clan elders two weeks ago. In the Upton battle, Zhang Tie killed over 1,000 demons above LV 9. He's qualified as the number one talent in the young generation of the 6 major clans of Jinyun Country and the pillar of Huaiyuan Palace. He had just returned to Huaiyuan Palace last night. I received a message just now. It's said that someone dared to sully our Huaiyuan Palace's talent and confuse the others' minds. Therefore, I came here to the banquet hall to take a look!"

Everybody became stunned. Since it was said by the lord judge of Golden Sea City, they all believed that it was true, especially the comment "the number one talent in the young generation of the 6 major clans of Jinyun Country" and "the pillar of Huaiyuan Palace" which shocked everybody else. Even Lan Yunxi was not qualified as the number one talent in the young generation of the 6 major

clans of Jinyun Country; even the lord judge himself dared not say that he was the pillar of Huaiyuan Palace. How many military exploits had Zhang Tie made so as to gain such a comment from the lord judge?

"In order to sully Zhang Tie, our Huaiyuan Palace's disciple, those demons and Three-eye Association even killed their major general mole in the Allied Humans Command. Hundreds of people were killed one after another. I will see how many moles here dare to sully Zhang Tie, the disciple of Huaiyuan Palace in Huaiyuan Prefecture, for the sake of demons and Three-eye Association!" Closely after lord judge's words, some people felt soft all over as they almost slipped under the table.

Hearing these words, Zhang Haitian became dumbfounded. He didn't know what to say. The grand madam's face turned pale right away. In this old mansion, she was the noblest one. However, in front of this lord judge, whom even the castellan of Golden Sea City would bow to, she was almost like a common woman...

The kid who swore Zhang Tie just now and the kid's mother had been taken into the banquet hall by two subordinates of the lord judge. Facing this, the kid and his mother were so scared that they almost burst out into tears...

The lord judge looked at the kid mildly as he asked, "I know you're innocent, it's nothing to do with you. Just tell me who taught you to say this?"

"I...I..." The kid stammered. Actually as a 7-8-year-old boy, he had already understood righteousness; otherwise, he would not swear Zhang Tie in the public. Looking at their poor kid, the parents of the kid were so anxious that they almost cried out. As long as they were judged as serving demons and Three-eye Association, their whole family would fall into the hell...

"Xiaoyi, hurry, tell your grandpa, who taught you to say that. Don't be afraid. After you tell him, you will be safe..." The kid's

mom held her tears as she told her son mildly.

The kid then started to search among those people...

...

"Grandpa, save me..." Before that kid pointed at him, a 20-year old young man exclaimed as he instantly rushed out and hugged Zhang Haitian's leg with tears and nasal mucus, "I didn't mean it, it's Junyu and Juntao's opinion..."

"Ahh, grandma, save me..." Another two young men charged towards the grand madam with a pale face. Pitifully, they were too far away from the grand madam. The moment they moved had they been caught by some warriors in black costumes. After taking them to the lord judge, the warriors kicked onto their legs; with a screech, the two people knelt down in the same row with the earlier one.

The lord judge then waved his hand towards the kid's mother, allowing her to take away that kid. After glaring at the three young men, the kid's mother bit her lips as she hurriedly took her kid away. Based on seniority in the clan, the three young men were the kid's uncles, who almost murdered the kid's whole family...

"Ahh, dad, mom, save me..." The young man called Junyu called his parents who were sitting on the other side of the table. Hearing his shriek, his parents' faces turned completely pale as they almost passed out.

The grand madam's lips quivered, whose face had also turned pale. Junyu and Juntao were all the biological grandsons of the grand madam. She threw a glance at Zhang Haitian and found he was closing his eyes silently while his hands were quivering.

Zhang Haitian was both happy and sad at this moment. He was happy about Zhang Tie's achievements; and was sad about what the three young men kneeling in front of him had done. The three young men were Zhang Tie's cousins.

All the guests were watching them silently. What an amazing birthday party! What sharp turns and twists! What a splendid drama...

The lord judge of Golden Sea City watched the 3 young men with a disgusting look, "What else do you want to say? Clarify it as soon as possible, if you have collusion with demons and Three-eye Association, in case of the bitterness of your skin. Otherwise, after you wear the shackles, you will know how strict the criminal penalty is in Criminal Laws Pavilion."

"Ahh, we really don't know anything about demons and Three-eye Association..." The guy called Juntao wailed mournfully as he dropped tears and nasal mucus and kowtowed constantly like pounding garlic in a mortar, "We just found that Wang's princess had a good impression about Zhang Tie; we were jealous of him; therefore, we worked out a plan to make him embarrassed. I heard my grandma saying that Zhang Tie was captured by demons when he was in Selnes Theater of Operations which made my grandpa very worried about him; therefore, we wanted to strike him based on this point..."

"Zhang Tie fought for Huaiyuan Palace and humans in Selnes Theater of Operations at the risk of his life for many times. If you don't appreciate and respect him, you're not beneficent; as cousins, you want to ruin his reputation by spreading rumors, you're not even righteous. You cannot even match a dog or a pig. Shameless!" After saying this, the lord judge waved his sleeves, "Take them away!"

The 3 young men wailed and begged their grandpa and grandma. However, those warriors in black clothes ignored that and directly drew them away by holding their arms...

Based on the comment of the lord judge, the 3 young men might not survive back.

"Wait for a second!" Zhang Tie finally uttered at the critical



moment.

Closely after hearing Zhang Tie's sound had the lord judge turned around. The moment he noticed the ring on Zhang Tie's finger had his look turned respectful.

"Lord Judge, now that this event has been clarified, we know it's not related to demons and Three-eye Association, please don't take them away. As Zhang Clan has so many juniors, they have different personalities. Although they are mean and not obedient, please forgive them this time for the sake of the face of Zhang Clan!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's persuasion, everybody was stunned by his eloquence and view, 'As lord judge has made the decision, how could Zhang Tie negotiate with him? The lord judge of Golden Sea City is not that easy-going. Hasn't Zhang Tie seen others' docile look?'

What made everyone more surprised was that lord judge of Golden Sea City started to consider about it carefully after Zhang Tie's persuasion.

After being silent for a few seconds, the lord judge of Golden Sea City replied, "The 3 b\*stards are neither beneficent nor righteous. Although they don't deserve death, they have to suffer from criminal penalty. Now that you beg for my forgiveness, I will not take them away; however, Huaiyuan Palace has strict laws and regulations. If such kind of people were not punished severely, it's hard to convince the public!" After saying that, lord judge threw another glance at the 3 young men, "From today on, you 3 could not be government officials in Huaiyuan Palace for the rest of your lives. Besides, all the treatment that Huaiyuan Palace provide for Zhang Clan juniors would be canceled off. From today on, if you dare violate the laws of Huaiyuan Palace, you will suffer 10 times severer punishment according to the Clan laws!"

All the above punishments were severe. With the first

punishment, the 3 young men could never assume any clan position later on; as for the second punishment, even if they were poor and starving in the future, they could never get any help from Huaiyuan Palace; the third punishment was more horrendous, if they violated any law of the clan in the future, they had to stand 10 times severer punishment than that bore by others. That was to say, when others who made the same mistake were beaten 2 times, they had to be beaten 20 times; when others who violated the same law were put into jail 10 years, they had to be put behind upon bars 100 years; when others only got bruised, they would have their heads chopped off.

"Thanks for your forgiveness, lord judge!" Zhang Tie made an obeisance by cupping one hand in the other before his chest towards the lord judge.

"You're welcome!" Lord judge instantly moved aside out of politeness.

At the sight of this scene, all the people at present raised their eyebrows once again...

Although nobody welcomed such a big figure when he entered, they dared not stay still at the banquet when he left. All the influential figures saw the lord judge out of the banquet hall.

The moment lord judge left had the 100-200 people in the banquet moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie knew that he could not stay in Zhang's old mansion any longer; he also lost his interest in staying here.

Zhang Su watched Zhang Tie as he wanted to say something; however, he finally didn't say it. Zhang Su was also scared by the words of lord judge.

"Cousin, what a disappointing day! I will invite you for a drink in the future!" Zhang Tie smiled.

Feeling Zhang Tie's intention to leave, Zhang Su nodded as he let

out a sigh.

Zhang Tie then came to Zhang Haitian and said, "Compared to the faces of those people, Zhang's face is more important!"

The old man also nodded. After being silent for a couple of seconds, he asked, "Is it true what the lord judge said...about you?"

Zhang Tie smiled as he nodded.

Zhang Haitian's eyes turned red at once...

"Take care of yourself, grandpa. I have to go now. I will come back to see you!"

"Where're you going? I'll have someone take you there!" The old man knew that Zhang Tie didn't want to stay there as he turned around and told the steward to prepare a car for Zhang Tie.

"No need!" After saying that, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Wang Shina while widely opening his eyes with a complex smile. Closely after that, he raised his head and stepped into the starlight. With another stride, he had arrived hundreds of meters high. Closely after that, he flashed away like a sparkling meteor in front of the public.

Everybody of Zhang Clan and all the guests were stunned as they raised their heads and watched Zhang Tie flying away with widely opened mouths...

When Zhang Haitian realized what happened, he had been surrounded by guests while all of them were throwing much more passionate and respectful looks towards him...

By then, everybody understood what did the remarks "The number one talent in the young generation of the 6 major clans in Jinyun Country" and "the pillar of Huaiyuan Palace" mean——Knight, only a knight could enjoy such a comment.

Everybody then bowed to the ground towards Zhang Haitian, "Congratulations to the dragon appearance!"

According to Hua tradition, if a person in a clan promoted to a knight, it was called "dragon appearance"—if a dragon appeared in a family, this family would be able to conquer the whole world.

Dragon appearance was the most important and happy event in Hua families.

So was it for Huaiyuan Palace. With one more knight, they had to celebrate it by holding a rotating Chakra ceremony, it was a major clan in Golen Sea City though.

Zhang Su raised his head and watched the direction where Zhang Tie disappeared for quite a while while the congratulations buzzed faintly in his mind like echoes drifting from the skyline.

Zhang Su had been very arrogant about his own cultivation base. If Zhang Tie was LV 11 or LV 12, Zhang Su might be jealous of him; however, Zhang Su was awe-stricken by him at this moment. If not being real cultivators, people would never know about the terror and power of knights. The higher the level of the cultivator was, the deeper he would understand what did it mean by stepping into the void.

'I have a cousin who's a knight?' Zhang Su felt absurd instead of ecstasy when this whim occurred to his mind.

...

After a couple of minutes, Zhang Tie had entered the air territory above deep sea region. Closely after that, he instantly dove into the sea like a meteor. After then, he started to penetrate through the sea water like a light bubble as fast as a lightning bolt towards Ice and Snow Wilderness...

# Chapter 723: Revenge in Demon Snake Island

---

Zhang Tie broke his limit in seawater once again.

Zhang Tie's driving force in seawater was provided by the reaction caused by the vacuum effect when seawater was sucked into Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, he adjusted it by his spiritual energy.

A few years ago, when Zhang Tie arrived at Ewentra Archipelago by sea for the first time, he penetrated through 10,000 miles in the water in 3 days with the help of Castle of Black Iron and ocean currents. At that time, Zhang Tie's speed was restricted by his bearing capacity about the friction caused by the water flow. Due to the existence of water friction and stress, Zhang Tie could even gain iron-body fruits on the way.

After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie could better control the space suction tunnel of Castle of Black Iron through his knight's heart. His bearing capacity had reached a terrifying level. Additionally, Zhang Tie had a water-proof body, with which, he could do whatever he wanted in the water. Being protected by battle qi, especially with the effect of rapidly moving rune, he moved even faster than his flight speed in the water.

It was the largest speed that Zhang Tie's body could stand in the water when Zhang Tie's protective battle qi and physical bearing capacity encountered an unprecedented challenge and stress that Zhang Tie had never imagined before.

This challenge and stress came from the tiny bubbles that he had not paid attention to before.

When Zhang Tie reached a certain speed in the water, a lot of invisible bubbles came into being on the friction surface between his body and the seawater due to the difference in stress before and

after his body. They formed and broke in each split second, bringing a great impact force on Zhang Tie's body.

When those bubbles broke, they would simultaneously cause a great impact force and high-temperature macro-jets, which eroded Zhang Tie's protective battle qi like water arrows and hammers with dense high-frequency noise. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt like flying in the volleys of gunfire.

After such a phenomenon appeared a few times, Zhang Tie realized that the moment he reached a certain speed in the water would he encounter such a strange phenomenon. Therefore, he asked Heller why.

"Heller, what's wrong? Why are there so many destructive bubbles around me when I reach a certain speed?"

"It's because of the cavitation phenomenon and cavitation effect caused by the friction between your body and the seawater!" Heller briefly explained it to Zhang Tie.

'Cavitation phenomenon and cavitation effect?' Zhang Tie became more confused.

"Cavitation phenomenon is a physical phenomenon. When the partial pressure inside the liquid decreased to the saturated steam pressure of the liquid, a lot of bubbles would form, expand and break inside the liquid or on the surface between the liquid and the solid. In the process of cavitation, bubbles would form, expand and break rapidly, causing shock waves or high-speed micro-jets, heat release, noise and erosion effect, which is called cavitation effect. Castle lord, you can take a look at the paddles of naval ships. The traces of spotted erosion on old paddles of naval ships were caused by cavitation through the friction between paddles and seawater!"

'Those invisible bubbles' appearance and disappearance could cause sharp shockwaves, micro-jets, high temperature and corrosive effect!' Zhang Tie was shocked, 'Aren't these the effects of the most destructive battle qi? If knight's battle qi could have

such an effect, it would be 10 times more destructive.'

As he moved at a high speed in the water, Zhang Tie kept sensing and comprehending how those invisible bubbles came into being with his knight's consciousness.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's moving speed in seawater was almost 3 times that of his navigation speed in air, namely, almost 600 m/s. That was to say, he could move over 2,100 miles per hour in sea water.

Last time, it took Zhang Tie 3 days to arrive at the Ewentra Archipelago from the nearby coastal area of Huaiyuan Prefecture. This time, it only took him about 5 hours.

The vast ocean was an abyss for others; however, it was a highway and super expressway for Zhang Tie that he had ever dreamed for. In the sky, he had to consume battle qi; however, in the ocean, he only needed to open the space suction tunnel of Castle of Black Iron which was both simple and time-saving.

With a "splash", Zhang Tie flew out of the shimmering sea level and reached over 100 m high above the sea level. After that, he took out a compass and confirmed his location against the stars. After recalling the sea area map of Ewentra Archipelago, he flew towards the southeast.

Zhang Tie's first destination was Demon Snake Island.

'It's time to end the animosity between me and Demon Snake Island.'

'When those b\*stards in Demon Snake Island dispatched people to kill me, they might not have thought that I could come back for revenge so fast.'

Those people in Demon Snake Island were Zhang Tie's major targets on the way back to Ice and Snow Wilderness. Actually, he was doing good for Ewentra Archipelago by killing those d\*\*chebags. Besides, he could have new fruits as a reward and

further improve his battle force. If he was lucky enough, he might transfer the treasury of those guys in the island into Castle of Black Iron. What a rare opportunity!

Zhang Tie flew high. Therefore, people on the sea could barely catch sight of him. In the flight, Zhang Tie changed his look into Peter Hamplester. Of course, this Peter Hamplester should never be as same as that 5 years ago. Although Zhang Tie's own look remained unchanged these 5 years, if Peter Hamplester also remained unchanged in his look, soon after the rotating Chakra ceremony would his real status be exposed. Such two young famous knights, once being compared with each other, would reveal the loopholes, even if they were tens of thousands of miles away from each other.

Thankfully, Peter was white-colored, who looked strong and mature.

"Heller, give me a hand, please show me the look of Peter at the age of 21."

"The period from 16-21 is the most important growth and shaping period of a person. During this period, one's look would be influenced by many aspects such as environment, mentality, living habit, etc.. One's look would change greatly in these 5-6 years. Which look do you want?' Heller said in Zhang Tie's mind.

"Ahh? Is that real?"

"Of course, if a young man masturbated 7 years from 15-21, he would look very obscene even though he looked handsome before. However, if a person with an average look always lived in a happy and healthy environment and compromised to everything, he would also be very handsome. Masturbation would make people ugly while being sunny would make people beautiful. Which look do you want?"

When he heard the word masturbation from Heller, Zhang Tie felt bashful. When he recalled Heller's look which was as



handsome as that of Apollo, a whim occurred to his mind, 'After all, nobody wishes himself to be ugly', "Just make me look handsome. Suppose I was living 5 years in the best environment. Not let those familiar ones fail to recognize me!"

"No problem. You will maintain your current charm and face shape. I promise that those familiar ones could still recognize you the moment they see you!" After being silent for a second, Heller added, "I want you to confirm it once again, whether do you want the best change in your look or not?"

"Yes, the best change!" Zhang Tie confirmed.

"Alright, please trigger your body-changing bloodline. I will directly project that mobile module into your body-changing bloodline so that you can change your look automatically. Later on, that module will change towards the best look as the time passes by. No worries..."

"Good!"

Zhang Tie then triggered his spiritual energy and the body-changing bloodline when he felt Heller projecting a module into his body. Closely after that, his looks and body shape gradually changed subtly.

Zhang Tie didn't know how he looked now; however, he believed that Heller wouldn't cheat him.

Only after a bit longer than 1 hour, Zhang Tie had seen an island on the sea level in the distance.

The island covered more than 200 sq miles. Zhang Tie saw a volcano that radiated a glow and erupted black smoke in the island. The black smoke made the greater part of the sky above the island dusky. Besides, Zhang Tie saw a great amount of magma gushing out of the nearby sea while the vapor turned the neighboring sea level into a steaming sea, which looked like the misty sea where he once cultivated in...

## Chapter 724: A Clean-up

---

Zhang Tie slowly moved his hand away from a lackey in Demon Snake Island. The moment he loosened his grip had the corpse fell onto the ground in a hidden sentry post.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that such a small Demon Snake Island could be so heavily guarded. There were observation posts in many places across Demon Snake Island. The moment a stranger was discovered would the observation post send the warning.

If Zhang Tie was not a knight, these observation posts might play their roles when they discovered Zhang Tie; however, as a knight, the moment Zhang Tie was close to Demon Snake Island had he discovered the observation posts on the seaside. Zhang Tie then swept all of them like patting flies. Closely after that, he even read those lackeys' memories using the secret method of bloody soul temple.

After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie's "soul capture skill" had already entered the supreme level. He could read people's memory easily in an efficiency that was over 10 times higher than that before. In a split second, he could skim over one person's recent memory.

After taking a round in the Demon Snake Island, Zhang Tie silently cleaned all the hidden observation posts. He then strode towards a place nearby the volcano.

Zhang Tie was a bit shocked by reading those lackey's memories. At this moment, there were only a few people in the Demon Snake Island. Berusken, the boss of Demon Snake Island had silently left Demon Snake Island with a great batch of subordinates two days ago.

Those lackeys left in the island didn't know where had Berusken gone to. There was only one roundtable fighter in their nestle.

Zhang Tie soon found the nestle of those roundtable fighters.

It was in the valley in the middle of Demon Snake Island. There were many grottoes in the valley, where lived those people in Demon Snake Island.

Zhang Tie soon arrived at the entrance of that valley at the speed of 100 m per stride.

Zhang Tie didn't hide himself; instead, he straightly walked inside.

A bolt was shot towards Zhang Tie from a brushwood. Zhang Tie just pointed towards the bolt while a terrifying battle qi flashed out, shattering the bolt into pieces and entering the brushwood in a fiercer way. As a result, the lackey was exploded into the bloody mist.

Zhang Tie just walked all the way into the valley while pointing at everyone he saw, one point for one life.

After Zhang Tie entered the valley for half a minute, the shrill whistle reverberated in the valley.

The whistle originated from a tree which was over 300 m away from Zhang Tie. Closely after the whistle, Zhang Tie had flicked a copper coin towards the lackey with a yellow light. Before the lackey jumped off the tree had his head been exploded.

What was shriller than the whistle was the sonic boom caused by the flying copper coin. After exploding that lackey's head, the copper coin penetrated through the 2 m-diameter trunk, leaving a small hole on it...

As it was dawn, the moment the shrill whistle and the succedent sonic boom sounded had the entire valley been shocked. Many people ran out of their grottoes in only underwears with weapons in their hands.

"Enemy..." The lackeys who were awakened instantly exclaimed in the valley.

With a pile of copper coins in his hand, Zhang Tie just wandered ahead, causing clatters.

'For these b\*stards in Demon Snake Island, now that they like money so much, just satisfy their demand; one copper coin for one life. It's a fair trade. If they don't want it, just force them to do it; after all, these b\*stards have been used to do that.' Zhang Tie thought.

After mastering the usage of the two hidden weapons, "Heavens Net" and "One Thousand Fingers" and promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie could use any item as a terrifying weapon. The copper coin was almost like his palm bolt.

After coming to a spacious place in the valley, Zhang Tie just waited there patiently while flicking his copper coins...

The crispy sound of the copper coin was like a magic which attracted all those people out of their grottoes.

The clatters of the copper coins should be low; however, in Zhang Tie's hand, it reverberated throughout the valley in a bizarre rhythm. Even those cunning guys who wanted to hide in the grottoes first couldn't stand to rush out of their nestles with weapons in hand.

Only after 2 minutes, Zhang Tie had been surrounded with people within 50 m. After sensing that everyone has arrived, Zhang Tie stopped his secret method of bloody soul temple which had a strong function of mental manipulation.

All the people of Demon Snake Island were glaring at Zhang Tie with ferocious looks. At this moment, even those cunning guys among them had forgotten how they had rushed out.

At this moment, a guy with a prosthetic hand, who lacked an ear, walked out of the crowd.

At the sight of his poor look, Zhang Tie revealed a sneer.

That was Bonnie, a roundtable fighter in Demon Snake Island

whose one hand and one ear were chopped off by Zhang Tie in Navy Blue Castle.

Bonnie's eyes turned bloody. Given his smell, he must have just drunken liquor. In the beginning, his eyes were confused while watching Zhang Tie; however, he suddenly popped out his eyes as he exclaimed, "Peter!"

Bonnie would never forget this man right in front of him.

Zhang Tie became reassured, 'Now that this guy recognized me; it means that others could also recognize me. It would be no problem when I return to Ice and Snow Wilderness.'

"Hehe, long time no see!" Zhang Tie greeted Bonnie kindly and passionately just like seeing an old friend, "How do you feel? Have you been used to eat food with one hand these years?"

Bonnie's eye corners twitched as Zhang Tie's words reminded him of the miserable memory like a poisonous needle.

"Call out everybody that you brought from Ice and Snow Wilderness. I've not imagined that Ice and Snow Wilderness could destroy the agreement that they had made with Ewentra Archipelago. Now that the strength of Ice and Snow Wilderness have invaded Ewentra Archipelago, you just wait for the war..." Bonnie said as he glanced over the valley intensely like being afraid of someone suddenly jumping out of somewhere.

After hearing a bandit talking about credibility with him, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "I was usually told that when a person always used his left hand, he would be much smarter. It seems right. Do you think that I need help from Ice and Snow Wilderness?"

"You alone?" Bonnie looked around once again.

"Yup!"

A fleer instantly appeared on Bonnie's face, '5 years ago, this Peter was just a bit sharper than me in Navy Blue Castle. I've long

promoted to LV 10 now. Additionally, I have over 300 brothers in Demon Snake Island...'

"Now that you are seeking for death, I will satisfy your demand. Kill him!" Bonnie roared at once.

All the lackeys in Demon Snake Island then rushed towards Zhang Tie with battle calls. Bonnie himself then moved backward.

'Even in Selnes Theater of Operations, I killed so many people easily, not to mention now.'

Zhang Tie shook his head as he threw out the pile of copper coins immediately.

With the sharp sonic explosions, a large net being interwoven with lights formed by those copper coins instantly spread in all directions——Heavens Net!

Zhang Tie's "Heavens Net" contained the special strength in his ancestral bloodline, which was many times more powerful than that recorded in the secret book. Additionally, his "Heavens Net" had many changes. This move was very effective to a mass brawl. As for such lackeys, the highest battle level of which was LV 9, of course, they had to die.

In a split second, all the lackeys that rushed forward had been penetrated through by at least 4 copper coins.

In less than half a second since the battle calls started, it had already recovered to tranquility.

A copper coin penetrated through Bonnie's chest from his back. Bonnie, who was retreating backward, instantly stopped as he knelt down and spurted out blood forcefully. As a strong fighter, he had a greater vitality than that of commoners. Bonnie didn't die instantly. However, he could not think through how he was shot by someone from his back using a hidden weapon. Peter was obviously standing in front of him. Widening his eyes, he saw all the yellow lights returning to Peter's hand after cleaning up

everybody else without dropping blood. Peter just rocked them in hand, causing another crispy sound...

It seemed that Peter had just performed a magic as all the battle forces across Demon snake Island had disappeared.

"You...you..kni...knight..." Bonnie realized it; however, it was too late.

Zhang Tie walked over there while pressing his hand onto Bonnie's head. Bonnie then felt that he started to recall what happened before as a strength opened his brains and withdrew his memory so fast that Bonnie felt that his head was going to explode...

The roundtable fighter's eyes were full of fear while he quivered all over.

After a few seconds, Bonnie's head exploded. Zhang Tie then put his hand back with a distant look. He finally knew where Berusken had gone to...

...

In the secret treasury of Demon Snake Island, there were large boxes of gold coins, pearls and gems and some other valuable items. All these were looted by these b\*stards in Demon Snake Island these years...

The treasury was delicately hidden in a maze-like karst cave in the valley. It was a natural place. Other strangers might not be able to find it even after wandering in those tunnels for a few days, however, it was no problem for Zhang Tie. He had kept its location in mind when he read Bonnie's memory.

As there were so many precious items in the treasury, Zhang Tie directly moved all of them into Castle of Black Iron without even counting them.

There were also kerosene and gel combustible bombs being used for naval battle in the treasury. After moving the greater part of

kerosene and gel combustible bombs into Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie burned the nestle of these bandits using the rest kerosene and gel combustible bombs.

In the rising flames, Zhang Tie flew off Demon Snake Island and dived into the ocean. After that, he instantly increased his speed to above 2,000 miles per hour...

Berusken had gone to Stars and Moons Island, which was once the territory of the Stars and Moons Sword Sage who was well-known across the Ewentra Archipelago...



# Chapter 725: A Falling Pillar

---

Among the hundreds of islands across Ewentra Archipelago, Stars and Moons Island was not the largest one; however, it was the most famous one. Because the only knight across Ewentra Archipelago once came from this island——Samaranth, the Stars and Moons Sword Sage.

Samaranth was the pride of the entire Ewentra Archipelago. As he once lived in there, that island was renamed as Stars and Moons Island. Additionally, the largest swordsmanship school across Ewentra Archipelago came into being on this island——the Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School.

Once upon a time, all the powerhouses across Ewentra Archipelago were proud of using swords. Samaranth founded a swordsmanship school in Stars and Moons Island. In the heyday of the school, Stars and Moons Sword Sage had tens of thousands of disciples, when the entire Stars and Moons Island became the sacred land of craftsmanship across Ewentra Archipelago.

Nevertheless, all the brilliance had come to an end with the death of Samaranth for the sake of the God's Star.

In the beginning, nobody across Ewentra Archipelago believed that Stars and Moons Sword Sage would lose his life as they all thought that it was just a rumor fabricated by someone. However, when there was no message about Samaranth from Ice and Snow Wilderness in 3 years, the rumor gradually became the truth. As a result, the entire Stars and Moons Island slowly withered.

A knight's offsprings were not destined to be knights; neither a knight's disciples were destined to be knights. Without a knight as the pillar, the entire Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School collapsed at once.

Young men who poured into Stars and Moons Island from everywhere in Ewentra Archipelago two years ago also left in large

numbers. As a result, Stars and Moons Swordsmanship's heyday went forever.

One year ago, Stars and Moons Swordsmanship broke out an internal conflict and split into parts. Consequently, some of Samaranth's good disciples left Stars and Moons Island and started to found their own swordsmanship schools across Ewentra Archipelago as they proclaimed to get the true knowledge of Stars and Moons Sword Sage.

Since Stars and Moons Swordsmanship broke out an internal conflict and split into parts, only Samaranth's clansmen and a couple of disciples were left maintaining the Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School in Stars and Moons Island. As a result, Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School collapsed completely.

Before the dawn of September 25th, three pitch-dark big ships silently drove into the harbor of Stars and Moons Island in the twilight. Seeing these ships, the customs officer, who had not find pickings for a long time, instantly sprung up from the bed in the harbor's taxation office and rapidly put on his uniformed clothes. After cleaning his face with water casually, he woke up those tax policemen by kicking them. Closely after that, the group of people hurriedly arrived at the harbor and boarded on the ships to check and levy taxes.

"Besides freight houses, pay attention to sailors' berth cabins. Those sailors always hide tobaccos and spices beneath their bedplates. Whatever you get, confiscate them all!"

When he boarded on one ship, the customs officer who had lost his weight by 10 kg over the past 2 years had his halos back. He was thinking about how much pickings could he find this time so that he didn't pay attention that these sailors were different from those before. These sailors' looks were full of banters and cruelty.

Those tax policemen were also rubbing their palms and fists. Soon after they heard the order of the customs officer had they

rushed into the cabin.

"Captain, where's your captain? Come out. I will check your logbook..." Standing on the deck, the customs officer ordered while raising his head towards the sky.

However, the captain didn't come out; instead, some round objects rolled out of the cabin and reached the foot of the customs officer. Lowering his head, the customs officer saw the heads of tax policemen whose eyes were widely opened with a great fear.

The customs officer instantly felt cold between his legs because he shat his pants.

Right then, a man in a black eyeshade with full of terrifying qi walked out of the pitch-dark cabin while grabbing the hair of a tax policeman's head, which was still spraying blood. The head's blood sprayed all the way to the customs officer who had been scared too much to move his foot.

"You're the customs officer?"

The customs officer was scared so much that his teeth quivered. He didn't dare utter any voice in front of such a man, who was almost the code word of terror in Ewentra Archipelago.

"What a coincidence! I'm also a customs officer today!" The man revealed a terrifying smile, "But I'm here to level head money!"

Closely after his words, the man swung the head and smashed onto the customs officer's head, blasting two heads at the same time. As a result, brains and blood sprayed over the deck.

The man then threw off the hair which was only connected with a skull before kicking the customs officer's corpse into the ocean. After that, he closed his eyes and drew in a deep breath in an intoxicated way. After a couple of seconds, he opened his eyes and watched the mountain in the distance and the castle on top of the mountain as a bloody killing qi flashed across his eyes, "Brothers, go enjoy it. We have a complete day to enjoy such a grand meal in

## Stars and Moons Island!"

The three big ships that anchored in the harbor then rose the bloody demon-snake skeleton flag, which indicated that they were going to start their loot and massacre. Under the leadership of some roundtable warriors, over 1,000 people with ferocious looks from Demon Snake Island waved their weapons and rushed out of the 3 big ships while wailing and howling...

In a split second, some houses in the harbor and the town were burned down. At the same time, cries and mournful wails reverberated in this town...

Hearing the urgent bell rings from the castle on the top of the mountain in the distance, Berusken revealed a sneer on his thin face. He then rushed towards that Sage Sword Mountain where the castle rested on with the other roundtable fighters and a team of elite killers...

Stars and Moons Island covered less than 100 sq miles. It was actually a bit smaller than Demon Snake Island. Across the whole land, there was only one harbor and one town and some buildings left by the Stars and Moons Swordsmanship on the Sage Sword Mountain. The current total population of inhabitants in the island was only a bit more than 30,000 people. Compared to its heyday, Stars and Moons Island at this moment had withered.

...

At this moment, Zhang Tie broke out of the ocean and flew close to the seawater. The black smoke that rose straight to the sky became Zhang Tie's best coordinates.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie had arrived at the harbor. Watching this town being looted and slaughtered, a killing qi flashed across Zhang Tie's eyes. He instantly flew across the town as he tossed out his copper coins one after another, exploding a great batch of b\*stards' heads in a split second within 500 m...

The residents in the town were very sturdy. They didn't just resign themselves to adversity; instead, they chose to fight back. In the square of the town, a batch of young adults was fighting hundreds of bandits from Demon Snake Island with weapons. As being affected by the living environment, all the young adults in Stars and Moons Island knew some swordsmanship. Some youth who learned in Stars and Moons Swordsmanship even had reached LV 9. However, in the encirclement of the bandits led by a LV 10 roundtable fighter and 2 LV 9 roundtable fighters, these people could barely stand it while youths were constantly killed.

"Brothers, kill them, you will have the girls in the town!" A LV 10 roundtable fighter of Demon Snake Island exclaimed while he released an off-body battle qi, causing a LV 9 fighter, which was a few meters away, spurt out blood and fly backward.

All the bandits growled madly...

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie flew over there. When he flew over that square above 30 m from the ground, he released hundreds of sharp battle qi by his ten fingers in the blink of an eye, exploding all the b\*stards, common lackeys or LV 9-10 roundtable fighters into sh\*t...

Before those youths realized what happened, they saw the heads of all the bandits from Demon Snake Island being exploded. Therefore, they widely opened their mouths...

"Sword Sage, Lord Sword Sage is coming back..." A smart guy exclaimed as he suddenly turned around and saw a faint figure flying towards the Sword Sage Mountain in the far.

'Knight, only a knight could have such a great battle force.' As nobody saw clearly who did it just now, they all thought that was Samaranth. Additionally, who else would come to Stars and Moons Island besides Lord Sword Sage?

The morale of the youths in the town rose immediately as they sensed a strength that they could rely on. Closely after that, they

roared and started to clear the rest lackeys of Demon Snake Island in the town...

Watching the battle-qi totems rising from the castle on the top of the mountain in the far, Zhang Tie straightly flew towards there.

...

At this moment, a tragic atmosphere was covering the Sword Sage Mountain. Disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanhood School laid all the way from the foot of the mountain to the Stars and Moons Castle at the top of the mountain. With the powerful battle force of a LV 15 battle spirit, the defensive facilities and high city walls of the internal and external castles of the Stars and Moons Castle were as fragile as decorations. Only after half an hour, all the passes of external and internal castles had been broken through by bandits. As a result, a large number of disciples of Samaranth Clan and Stars and Moons Swordsmanhood School fought to the death.

Being covered with others' plasma, Berusken revealed a brutal faint smile as he led a batch of elites from Demon Snake Island and encircled those who were still resisting into a palace of the internal castle of Demon Snake Island...

# Chapter 726: Sword Sage

---

"Hahahaha..." Watching this scene, Berusken couldn't help but laugh, which reverberated around the entire Stars and Moons Castle, "Samaranth, you must not have imagined today when you forced me into Demon Snake Island. I will kill all your male family members and turn all your female family members into my sex slaves..."

At this moment, hundreds of underprivileged family members of Samaranth were wailing mournfully in the palace. Outside the palace, there were over 200 people of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School who were defending the last defense line with long swords while being covered with blood...

In the eyes of Berusken, those people defending outside the palace were nothing but sh\*t because the only LV 13 battle general in the Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School, the most talented son of Samaranth and the head of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School in Stars and Moons Island at this moment, had been killed by him just now. After that LV 13 battle general, a LV 11 powerhouse in the Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School was also killed, the highest level among the remains was only LV 9 now.

These disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School whose highest level was LV 9 couldn't even release off-body battle-qi attack, not to mention sword qi. Even though they had about 200 people, they were nothing but ants in front of a LV 15 battle spirit. Berusken felt an unprecedented sense of satisfaction from the scared looks of the struggling disciples of Stars and Moon Swordsmanship School.

At this moment, Berusken felt that he should not have killed Samaranth's son so fast. If that person was still alive, there might be more good plays.

'At this moment, although Samaranth could not see it, it was also not bad to be watched by his son.'

Berusken didn't know that Zhang Tie had already landed in Stars and Moons Island. A battle spirit's sense towards knights could never match that of a knight. Additionally, Zhang Tie purposely hid his qi. Even a knight wouldn't know that Zhang Tie had arrived, not to mention a battle spirit...

"I only want to revenge Samaranth and his family members. I know not all of you are Samaranth's offsprings. As for disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School, I know you were just forced to fight us just now, neither did I spare any chance to you..." Berusken watched those disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School who were defending the palace while a weird light flashed across his only eye, "However, as the battle situation has been clear, I will spare a chance to you. As long as anyone being not related to Samaranth's family members could kill a family member of Samaranth or a disciple of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School in front of me, I would let him leave out of here safe and sound; otherwise, you could only stay here to accompany with Samaranth family members' corpses!"

After hearing Berusken's suggestion, many disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School changed their faces while their eyes flickered a couple of times...

"Don't listen to him. He's already killed so many people today. No matter what, he would never let us go. We'd better fight to the death than be teased by him!" A disciple of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School exclaimed.

"This is your last chance. When I begin, you will have no time to regret. Do you really wish to fight to the death for Samaranth's family members?" Berusken continued to bewitch them.

"This guy not only wants to kill us; he even wants to destroy the reputation of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School, don't



believe him!" The disciple roared once again.

At this moment, Berusken revealed a faint sneer, 'That guy is right. He wants to destroy Samaranth's family together with his Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School. As long as the message that the disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School killed Samaranth's family members at the critical moment was disseminated to the public, there would be no Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School in Ewentra Archipelago any longer as the only honor and influence that Samaranth left in the human world would turn into bullsh\*t by then.

All the smart ones understood it. So what? At this critical moment, what was tested was not humans' intelligence but humanity.

Watching Berusken's sneer, before that disciple said anything more, a shiny sword had penetrated through his chest from his back. Closely after that, a figure jumped out of the crowd at an extremely high speed and moved to Berusken's side.

"Othello, what are you doing?" Many disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School roared.

"I will kill you!" Another disciple of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School jumped out as he rushed towards Othello who was running towards Berusken. At the sight of this, Berusken frowned as he released an off-body battle qi towards the latter disciple who was over 20 m away, causing him to spurt out blood and fly backward.

In the chaos, some more muffled sounds drifted from those disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School as they were pierced through by those on their sides. Closely after that, some more disciples moved to the side of Berusken...

In the blink of an eye, the remnants of disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School which was as firm as a Great Wall was collapsed. All the remaining disciples of Stars and Moons

Swordsmanship School hurriedly jumped off as they watched those on their sides full of vigilance.

Berusken burst out into laughter...

"Anthony, what's that for...you said...you would love me forever..." A female disciple sobbed when she saw a male disciple killing another one, running to the side of Berusken and trembling with a sword in hand.

"Ruili, I love you. However, I don't want to be killed together with your Samaranth Clan. Your clan is already over..." That man said mercilessly and decisively.

...

"Even if Samaranth Clan was over, at least it had its glory before. However, even if you became a knight, you'd still be as dirty as a worm!" Another voice drifted from Berusken's back. Everybody became stunned. Even Berusken turned around.

They saw a 20-odd-man slowly walking towards them.

Of course, that man was Zhang Tie.

Actually, Zhang Tie had arrived a few minutes ago. He just watched quietly on one side as he wanted to see what these disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School would choose.

Zhang Tie knew it was about humanity. Although Zhang Tie had witnessed thousands of dirtiest and ugliest corpses, he had not seen the dirtiest humanity. Therefore, he just wanted to see what would happen out of his curiosity.

Zhang Tie felt that he had to appreciate Berusken, because of whom, he learned something new about humanity.

Zhang Tie knew that Berusken would definitely do more evil and pervert things in front of him if he just waited here. However, he was afraid that the entire Samaranth family would be cleaned and the bloodline of Stars and Moons Sword Sage would be broken off

by then. When he recalled how relaxed Samaranth was when he killed the huge deep-sea monster for the sake of all the passengers of the steamer Polar Light, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside before walking forward to stop this tragedy...

He did this out of his respect to Stars and Moons Sword Sage.

"Who are you?" Berusken's pupils contracted, releasing a great danger. Strangely, he didn't sense any aggressive qi from Zhang Tie. Given his qi, Zhang Tie was just a commoner.

"My name is Peter, Peter Hamplester!" Zhang Tie said frankly.

Although Zhang Tie's voice was not loud, his name Peter Hamplester was like a dull thunder.

Peter Hamplester, the king of Ice and Snow Wilderness, this name had been spread across Ice and Snow Wilderness over the past 5 years. All sorts of legends about this name and his marvelous manifestation and brilliance had been spread across Ewentra Archipelago.

As Zhang Tie said this, he stomped onto the ground with his battle qi, causing a long sword of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School to spring up and fall into his hand.

Zhang Tie raised the sword as high as his eyebrows...

In a split second, Zhang Tie's eyes turned as sharp as a lightning bolt while a terrifying sword qi went up into the sky like a battle-qi totem.

After promoting to a knight, if one had reached a high level in swordsmanship, the knight would not release his battle-qi totem when using his long sword, but sharp sword qi—This is sword sage!

Having awakened the sword affinity bloodline and spent much time in cultivating swordsmanship, Zhang Tie had long become a sword sage after promoting to a knight in the tower of time.

The sword qi sprayed over and covered the entire mountain top...

Berusken felt goosepumps all over. With a roar, he threw some disciples who had already stood on his side towards Zhang Tie before turning around, intending to escape...

Although it was already late morning, they suddenly felt dark all over. It seemed that night arrived at once while a full moon and a crescent rose in the dark at the same time...

Berusken moved fast; however, he was not as fast as the moons in the dark. When the full moon and the crescent rose up, the tender moonlights had already cast onto him while his protective battle qi started to crack heavily like frying beans...

Time flew past.

It could not be described as a swordsmanship, but as a scenery between heavens and ground, ebb and flow and waxing and waning...

The crescent and the full moon changed their shapes in opposite directions. The crescent gradually turned into full moon while the full moon slowly turned into a crescent. When the full moon changed into its original crescent look, the crescent also recovered its original full shape. After one cycle, the moons and the darkness disappeared at the same time while the Stars and Moons recovered their original looks too.

All the guys from Demon Snake Island and those rebellious disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School stood still in strange gestures like being applied with a magic...

The other disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School just watched all this with widely opened eyes, 'What happened? Was that an illusion? Why did we see moons just now? Why did these people stand still?'

As the wind blew over, all those [standing still] were blown away

by the wind one bit after another, flying into the air without leaving any trace in the air...

Berusken's body started to collapse like flour while his head seemed to have disappeared together with Peter...

Only after 5-10 minutes, everything came to an end.

Everybody in Stars and Moons Castle felt like dreaming.

...

In the open waters of Stars and Moons Island, Zhang Tie was standing still in the void with his eyes closed while grabbing Berusken's fresh head by his hand, eyelashes quivering.

Berusken's memory was withdrawn by Zhang Tie as fast as a lightning bolt. LV 15 battle spirit was the highest level that the "soul capture skill" could work on.

After a long while, Zhang Tie opened his eyes while a bizarre light flashed across his eyes. He then slightly frowned.

After the head was thrown into the ocean, it attracted some sharks at once. Zhang Tie felt bored of watching sharks eating food.

After recognizing the direction, Zhang Tie straightly flew towards Saint Herner Island...

# Chapter 727: A Hitchhike

---

When the 50,000-ton ship Narwhal from Sinaira Island to Saint Herner Island was only about 200 nautical miles away from Saint Herner Island, a guest landed on a small observation stand of the highest deck quietly.

The sea wind at dawn was a bit cold, especially on the highest observation stand of Narwhal. Therefore, besides noontime and afternoon when some travelers would enjoy the seascape over there, nobody was there in the evening and in the morning.

Except for Zhang Tie.

Given the direction, Zhang Tie knew that it was heading for Saint Herner Island. Additionally, as this place was not far from Saint Herner Island, Zhang Tie directly landed onto the free passenger liner.

Narwhal was a luxury liner. The snowwhite lacquer, the rows of tidy huge portholes, the long body, the three multi-functional swimming pools of different sizes on the ship and the lounge chairs and sunshades on the three decks indicated the high ticket price and the economic power of passengers.

Zhang Tie had traveled by sea many times. He knew that common passenger liner would never have swimming pools.

There was truly a heavy wind on the highest observation stand. The moment Zhang Tie landed on and put away his battle qi, his hair had been a mess.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he walked towards the stairs on his side.

The moment he arrived at the stairway had he seen a young sailor thudding upstairs with a bucket and a towel while water was dilapidating inside. They almost collided with each other.

"Ahh, sorry, sir..." The sailor hurriedly moved to the left of the

stairs at the sight of Zhang Tie, giving way to Zhang Tie as he kept apologizing to Zhang Tie.

"It doesn't matter!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he walked downstairs.

Until Zhang Tie reached the bottom of the stairs had the sailor become dubious as he scratched his head and murmured, "Strange, the director said he saw nobody here just now; therefore, he called me upstairs to clean the handrails of the observing stand. Didn't the director see this man?"

Of course, the young sailor would not report it to the director as he didn't want to find trouble. After shaking his head, he didn't care about it anymore.

After walking off the observation stand, Zhang Tie saw the schematic diagram of this luxury liner on the wall of the aisle. As it was a large ship, for the convenience of the passengers, many places on this ship were marked with its diagram.

This passenger liner was matched with dining rooms, bars, theaters, gambling houses, gyms and beauty parlors. After reading the diagram, Zhang Tie knew it was called Narwhal. After finding the location of the bar, Zhang Tie walked towards it.

The bars and entertainment facilities in this luxury liner were available around the clock.

The aisle was paved with a bright yellow carpet. Even the deck was paved with a comfortable wooden floor. As it was early morning, most of the passengers had just gotten up. Gradually, the ship became boisterous. He met many passengers on the ship, given whose dresses and styles of conversation, Zhang Tie knew they were rich people.

"My Barbie and Boddey need to walk half an hour a day. Attention, don't take them to high places in case they catch cold. Just walk them on the lowest deck. After that, you need to prepare

a medium-cooked steak fried with olive oil; no spice. Prepare a fried salmon; remember to remove its bones; daub some cherry jam from Kolin Island onto the fish. After they finish their food, remember to massage them for 20 minutes!"

"Alright, what else can I do for you, Madam Martina?"

"Hmm, nothing else for the time being!"

At this time, a hatch door in front of Zhang Tie opened when a 50-odd servant in formal dress and white gloves waited outside the door. Closely after that, he pulled out two big dogs. At the sight of Zhang Tie, he hurriedly dragged the dogs to one side. Zhang Tie threw a glance at the two dogs. Closely after that, the dogs moved to the left side of the aisle kindly, giving way to Zhang Tie.

...

Zhang Tie came to the bar on the 2nd floor. Although the bar was still running, it only had few guests.

Only two groups of guests were in the bar. Some gentlemen were sitting around one table while a young couple was sitting at the other table who were leaning against each other, watching the seascape through the window and whispering something.

A girl in longuette was playing piano in the bar. As a result, the entire bar was filled with a melodious piano music. A beautiful female bartender was wiping glasses behind the counter while a beautiful waitress in an alluring kilt was greeting guests. Those men were attracted by her beautiful legs.

As soon as Zhang Tie sat on a relatively remote seat next to a window, the beautiful waitress walked towards here while twisting her waist. The waitress released a youthful enthusiasm which could fascinate any men.

"Sir, what do you want to drink?"

"Whatever!"



"Hmm, are you new here?"

"Yup!"

"How about a glass of seabuckthorn wine?"

"Fine!"

Before the waitress left while twisting her waist, she couldn't help but throw a couple of glances at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie touched his face. Actually, he had not seen his new look; however, he knew it should be maturer than his original look. 'Based on the template provided by Heller, this new look should not be too ugly.'

After a short while, the beautiful waitress served a glass of wine to Zhang Tie. The moment he sipped it, he identified the familiar taste——mutated seabuckthorn fruit, a species that was produced in Castle of Black Iron.

"Hmm, this wine tastes nice. Did you get it from Ice and Snow Wilderness?" Zhang Tie asked the waitress with a smile.

"Yes!"

"The seabuckthorn wine in the Ice and Snow Wilderness didn't taste so good before!"

"Yes. Previously, very few seabuckthorn wines in Ice and Snow Wilderness were sold to Ewentra Archipelago. However, a new seabuckthorn tree appeared in Ice and Snow Wilderness a few years ago. The wine brewed by the new seabuckthorn fruits tastes much better than that before. Therefore, it is even sold to Ewentra Archipelago!" The waitress explained passionately as she fondled her hair in a womanly way. From her eyes, Zhang Tie saw a familiar thing, which had nothing to do with wealth and reputation, but full of feminine charm.

"Oh, thank you!" Zhang Tie smiled as he raised his glass, "May I invite you for a drink as a part of my thanks?"

"Not now. We're not allowed to drink in working time!" The waitress shook her head as she added, "But I will be off duty in half an hour. Someone will replace me then. Will your invitation still be effective after half an hour?"

"Of course!"

The waitress smiled.

At this moment, some new guests entered. The waitress then walked towards them before ogling towards Zhang Tie.

Of course, the new seabuckthorn fruit was different than those before. The new ones were bigger and sweeter with some aura values. The wine brewed by such new fruits would definitely taste much better than those before. As he tasted the wine, Zhang Tie was thinking, 'Now that this buckthorn wine has been exported to Ewentra Archipelago from Ice and Snow Wilderness, the new seabuckthorn trees must have been planted in a large area of Ice and Snow Wilderness; those residents in Ice and Snow Wilderness must have a greater reliance on the new seabuckthorn trees. My dream is gradually coming true.'

'Additionally, I've left No. 1 earthworms and No. 1 soybeans in Ice and Snow Wilderness. During the past 5 years, they should have expanded.'

'Besides blades, there is another mild way to conquer others——reliance!'

'If you rely on something, you will be conquered by it.'

Zhang Tie's eyes turned profound...

As for those gentlemen in the far, they were discussing one thing that Zhang Tie was interested in. Therefore, Zhang Tie just leaned against the sofa and drank the wine as he watched the seascape through the window and listened to their conversation. Meanwhile, he started to recall what he had experienced during the past day.

'Last night, I was in the Zhang's old mansion in the Golden Sea City of Huaiyuan Prefecture; this morning, I arrived at Ewentra Archipelago. After that, I went to the Demon Snake Island, then Stars and Moons Island. After exterminating the dark force that had existed in Ewentra Archipelago for many years, I watched the seascape, listened to the music and drank the wine in the bar of Narwhal. What an unimaginable knight's life! Perhaps, this was why knights made people crazy for——freedom. After becoming a knight, I have few limits. I could change many people's fates so easily...'

Zhang Tie was fascinated by such a feeling...

Those men were discussing a major event that happened in Akray Island these days——After joining hands with each other, the major clans in Ewentra Archipelago wanted to establish an Ewentra Archipelago Parliament in Akray Island. This event was indeed influential for those forces across Ewentra Archipelago which were always in a loose state.

## Chapter 728: On the Way

---

"It's said that Renard Clan has a background in the Western Continent. Conor, the head of Renard Clan may take the position as the speaker of the parliament!"

"Not that simple. Without the corresponding force on his back, it's meaningless for him to become the head of the parliament. Don't forget that Willys Clan in Gantiado Island has the largest fleet across Ewentra Archipelago. In Gantiado Island, Willys Clan could control the will of two-thirds of major clans on that island. It's said that Willys Clan has a close relationship with Spencer Clan in Ice and Snow Wilderness. If the head of Willys Clan becomes the head of the Ewentra Archipelago Parliament, Ice and Snow Wilderness will support him for sure!"

"Speaking of Ice and Snow Wilderness, don't forget about the most important person——the sexy fox. Isn't the sexy fox closely related to the Wild Bear Tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness? Isn't the Wild Bear Tribe more powerful than Spencer Clan? The barbarous tribes in Sinairi Island are still silent about the establishment of the Ewentra Archipelago Parliament. It would be meaningless no matter who became the head of the parliament if the authority of Ewentra Archipelago Parliament could not be guaranteed on the biggest and the most important Sinairi Island of Ewentra Archipelago. It's said that the sexy fox also has a good relationship with the barbarous tribes on Sinairi Island. What a terrifying woman! She has a relationship with both Ice and Snow Wilderness and Sinairi Island. Even in Saint Herner Island, she could still get the support of Bell Clan. I think that maybe this sexy fox could be the head of the parliament."

"I disagree with you. Just because of the close relationship between sexy fox and Ice and Snow Wilderness, she could not be the head of the Ewentra Archipelago Parliament. Don't forget about these major clans' target to establish Ewentra Archipelago

Parliament. If sexy fox became the head of the parliament, it would be inconsistent with the target of the establishment of Ewentra Archipelago. How could those major clans agree with that?"

"Does Ice and Snow Wilderness pose a threat to Ewentra Archipelago? They've maintained peace for so many years..."

"No idea. Do you think the Ice and Snow Wilderness is unchanged? The tonnage of the North Wind Fleet of Ice and Snow Wilderness has surpassed that of Willys Clan two years ago, although it could still not match the total tonnage of the fleets of major clans across Ewentra Archipelago for the time being. What would those major clans do if that lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness became interested in Ewentra Archipelago one day?"

"Hasn't that Peter disappeared 5 years ago? Nobody knows whether he's dead or alive. Additionally, the bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness were still splitting. How could they have a surplus force to cast greedy eyes on Ewentra Archipelago?"

"When did you go to Ice and Snow Wilderness last time?"

"4 years ago!"

"If you go there once again, I promise you will not say so when you come back. Additionally, I have to remind you. If there are Slavs on your side, watch out your words."

"What words?"

"You said that nobody knows whether Peter is dead or alive. If you dared say that in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Slavs on your side would definitely spring up to chop off your head!"

"Erm, is that so serious?"

"Haven't you heard those legends?"

"Yup, but I feel it's a bit exaggerating..."

"In Ice and Snow Wilderness, what you hear and see will be much more exaggerating than what you hear and see in Ewentra

Archipelago..."

"Do you mean those fanatics of Ancient God School..."

"How do you know that?"

"I met a pioneer last time, who came from far away to make a pilgrimage in Ice and Snow Wilderness. After that, he joined the Ancient God School. These years, there has been a legend that the ancient god of Ancient God School is the patron of pioneers and Peter is the incarnation of the ancient god in the secular world..."

...

Those men didn't know that the Peter that they were talking about was leaning against the sofa comfortably, sipping the seabuckthorn wine and listening to their talk.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie remained a calm look when he listened to them talking about the parliament of Ewentra Archipelago. Later on, he choked and coughed when he listened to them talking about Ancient God School...

Those men turned around and thought that Zhang Tie, the young man was choked by his wine; therefore, they threw a despised look at Zhang Tie.

After recovering his composure, Zhang Tie raised his head and saw three beautiful legs standing in front of him in high-heeled shoes. The girl who played piano, the waitress and that female bartender were standing in front of him and watching him with a curious look. The girl who played the piano was still wearing the same skirt; while the waitress and the female bartender had put on a coat and covered their work clothes, making their legs more dazzling.

"Can you invite 3 of us for a drink now?" The beautiful waitress asked with a smile.

"No problem!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile. Closely after that, he recovered his composure and invited them to take a seat. He

then called the new waiter for a bottle of seabuckthorn wine and three glasses. Later on, they started chatting.

The waitress was called Venika; the female bartender was called Daliana; the piano player was called Wallis. They were all students of Sinaira Business College on Sinaira Island. They would graduate next year. As it was the vacation, through the introduction of Daliana's family members, the 3 girls found a part-time job in the Narwhal. Besides making money, they could also have a free travel and broaden their horizon. They also wanted to find more opportunities for development here.

Ewentra Archipelago had developed commercial civilization and navigation trade. Besides having business relationships with each other, the islands on Ewentra Archipelago even had trade contacts with Ice and Snow Wilderness and Blackson Humans Corridor. Its trade route reached Western Continent while its developed commercial civilization provided more employment opportunities and more open and inclusive environment for young women here.

After knowing that Zhang Tie was called Peter, the three girls exchanged glances with each other before bursting out into laughter.

"What? Is my name so funny?"

"No, actually too many people have the same name. We have many Peters at school. There's one more Peter in Ice and Snow Wilderness!" Wallis explained as she threw a bashful look towards Zhang Tie. Compared to Venika and Daliana, this piano player looked more introverted.

Zhang Tie touched his nose.

"I've not seen you before. Are you new here?" Daliana asked Zhang Tie.

"Hmm, I've just been to Narwhal!" Zhang Tie explained seriously.

"Just? No way? Nobody could board on this ship as soon as it left

the harbor. Did you come here by yacht?"

"No, I came here by air. When I saw such a ship heading to Saint Herner Island, I just landed to take a hitchhike!" Zhang Tie put it straightforwardly.

The 3 girls felt that Zhang Tie was very humorous.

Gradually, Venika had moved close to Zhang Tie's side. Being closely touched by her beautiful legs, Zhang Tie could even feel the smooth skin and temperature of her legs.

In less than 1 hour, they had drunk up the bottle of seabuckthorn wine. The 3 girls blushed and looked pretty cute.

"Well, thanks for your wine, we have to go to bed now. We worked the whole night!" Venika said as she stood up together with the other two girls.

"You're welcome. It was my pleasure to invite you for a drink!"

"Aww, do you want to take a seat in our dorm? I'm afraid that the ship will arrive at Saint Herner Island in about 8-9 hours." Venika suggested as she threw a delightful look towards Zhang Tie.

After hearing Venika's invitation to Zhang Tie, Daliana and Wallis exchanged a glance with each other. A bashful look instantly flashed across Daliana's face while Wallis's ears turned red at once.

"Fine!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he knew what did this suggestion mean. After dropping a gold coin, he left the bar with the 3 girls for the rear cabin.

Walking in the aisle of the rear cabin, Wallis seemed to be a bit nervous while walking ahead of them, Zhang Tie was walking in the middle of Wallis and Daliana while putting his hands on the soft waists of Venika and Daliana. The two girls didn't refuse him.

Coming to the door of the dorm, Wallis was too nervous that she even dropped the key. When she lowered her body to pick it up,



her butts rightly rested onto Zhang Tie's lower abdomen as she felt hitting on something hard. With a sound "Ahh", Wallis blushed at once.

After opening the door flurriedly, Wallis rushed towards her bed like escaping away as she said, "I'm too tired, I will go to bed first..."

This was a dormitory of staff. Although it was not large, it was tidy. There were 3 beds, 3 wardrobes, 1 desk and 1 washroom.

The entire dormitory smelt faintly fragrant.

The moment the door was closed, Venika had started a hot kiss with Zhang Tie. At the same time, she put off her coat. Zhang Tie then put off Daliana's coat, having it slid off to the ground.

Venika wanted to put off her underbodice; however, Zhang Tie stopped her as he moved his lips onto her ear, "Don't do that. Don't you feel it's sexy? You only need to undo the top button of your shirt..."

...

After 9 hours, the Narwhal arrived at Saint Herner Island in the sunset afterglow. Zhang Tie also ended his temporary and pleasant journey.

When Zhang Tie was tapping the potential of uniform in Narwhal, the entire Ewentra Archipela and Ice and Snow Wilderness were boiling as a news was spread there as fast as radio waves with the effect of remote-sensing crystals.

——The Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness is coming back. Berusken and the other roundtable fighters' heads became the first batch of sacrifice for the return of the lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

The entire Ewentra Archipelago and Ice and Snow Wilderness were shocked!

# Chapter 729: Shocking the Ice and Snow Wilderness

---

Eschyle City, Ice and Snow Wilderness...

With remote-sensing crystals, the news was spread so fast. Therefore, in only a few hours, what Zhang Tie did in Stars and Moons Island had been spread to Eschyle City.

Spencer Clan received the news from a business group in Ewentra Archipelago and transmitted the news to Eschyle City at once.

In only 5 years, a higher and more magnificent Iron Bear Castle had been built in the original address of Iron Bear Castle of Spencer Clan in Eschyle City.

Within an underground backroom of Iron Bear Castle, Elder Turin of Spencer Clan was entering a deep meditation.

After receiving the news, Elder Rodolfo arrived at the backroom of Elder Turin immediately and woke him up urgently.

After waiting outside the door of the backroom for 10 minutes, the alloy door finally slid away while Elder Turin slowly appeared in front of Elder Rodolfo with a cold look.

"What happened?" Elder Turin asked calmly which sounded a bit unpleasant.

Any knight would feel unhappy when his cultivation and meditation was interrupted. In Spencer Clan, everybody knew that the one who could really master the fate of the clan was Elder Turin, who had become a knight. Although Elder Rodolfo was also an elder, he was not a knight. Additionally, his seniority in the clan was utterly different than that of Elder Turin. Especially when there was no outsider on their side, Rodolfo treated Turin meticulously as his elder.

Rodolfo reported the news instantly.

After hearing that, Elder Turin's unpleasant look instantly disappeared as his eyes shot out a shrewd light.

"Is it true?"

"It's true. All the disciples of Stars and Moons Swordsmanship School have seen that. The news came from Stars and Moons Island. All the roundtable fighters in Demon Snake Island have been killed!"

After taking a deep breath, Elder Turin revealed an aggressive qi while his face turned solemn at once, "Order North Wind Fleet to get prepared in 3 hours, we're setting out for Saint Herner Island!"

"Ahh, Prepare North Wind Fleet to leave Oro Strait?" Elder Rodolfo became shocked as such a movement might cause a war between Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago. Additionally, this had broken through the bottom line that was tacitly approved by both parties.

"I will go there together with North Wind Fleet to welcome our Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness!"

"Bu...but this might arouse a war!" Elder Rodolfo had to remind Elder Turin considering the potential severe outcome.

"It's time for the war!" Elder Turin replied which shocked Elder Rodolfo so much, "I'm afraid that Peter was waiting in Saint Herner Island for the arrival of North Wind Fleet. If we don't go there, we may disappoint him!"

"Ahh..." Rodolfo became dumbfounded.

"It's estimated that an elder of Huge Bear Tribe will appear in Eschyle City in 2 hours and go to Saint Herner Island together with me!" Elder Turin revealed a faintly mysterious smile, "Pontiff Sarlin, who has the eye of time, must have seen that and made the corresponding preparation!"

After thinking for a short while, Elder Rodolfo seemed to remember something as he whispered to Elder Turin, "What about the Fiery Bear..."

"Just tell them the news honestly, they will make their own choice. Tell the old bear, it's the final chance for them to clarify their stance!" Elder Turin said faintly.

...

In the hieron of Elzida Mountain, Pontiff Sarlin had also opened his eyes at this moment. Watching Elder Toles in front of him, he nodded.

Receiving the answer, Elder Toles just bowed towards Pontiff Sarlin and slowly retreated the hieron.

After 1 hour, the cavalries of Thor's Hammer set out Gozida Plain, shocking the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness...

...

In a main tent of Wild Bear Tribe...

On the main seat was sitting a robust mountain-like man, who was tearing a roasted cattle and chewing it forcefully. Meanwhile, he listened to those sitting below him reporting to him. After eating each piece of beef, the man would always clean his oily hands on his bear-hide coat.

"Clan head Dali, what's your opinion about it?" A 60-years-old man asked.

"Hahaha...this is a big event; of course, I need to consider about it..." The one on the main seat put him off.

"Our whole family have stayed here for 7 days..." Another 20-years-old man interrupted.

"Hahahaha, you four have stayed here for 7 days; then you want the lives of over 13 million people of my wild bear troop?" The man who was tearing beef narrowed his eyes while releasing a

depressive qi.

The 60-years-old man threw a stern glance at that young man before opening his mouth calmly, "You're very clear about the power of our Sacred Light School. If you cooperate with us, you will not suffer any loss!"

"Hah, speaking of Sacred Light School, I remember that a country called Sun Dynasty who believed in the God of Brilliance School have been exterminated by the demonized puppets disaster. Does the God of Brilliance School originate from your school? I wonder what other powers does your school still have in Blackson Humans Corridor now."

"Sun Dynasty is just a small country!" The 50-odd years man explained calmly, "That country's God of Brilliance School is just a small branch of our school in Blackson Humans Corridor. Additionally, as they had left the halos of the God of Sacred Light, that branch had been attracted to the evil route by demons. Therefore, they finally came to an end. In Western Continent, our Sacred Light Empire's power is thousands times greater than that of Sun Dynasty. Our believers are like numerous water drops in the ocean. As long as there's sunshine, there will be the follower of our school!"

"Then, what do you want?"

"Belief, we only need belief!" The 60-odd years man replied with an extremely righteous expression, "Besides belief, we need nothing else. If clan head Dali could promise to cooperate with us, the wild bear tribe would gain the opportunity to share the interests of Ice and Snow Wilderness and have power increase greatly; additionally, the assistance of our Sacred Light Empire would also be transported to Ice and Snow Wilderness through our fleet constantly, helping wild bear tribe grow stronger! Our only condition is to do missionary work in Ice and Snow Wilderness. The creed of Ancient God School is pretty absurd and intolerable. We cannot stand it bewitching people's minds here!"

"Hmm! I will think about it for a while, hahahaha..." The clan head of wild bear tribe continued to put him off.

"We can only stay in the wild bear tribe for another 3 days at most. If clan head could still not make that decision by then, we would have no chance then!"

...

After half an hour, the 4 people left the main tent, leaving that Dali continuing tearing his beef. Chewing the beef, the man narrowed his eyes while flickering weird eye-lights.

Gangula hurriedly came in from outside. After that, he walked to the man's side and whispered to that man.

Gangula was more steady now than he was 5 years ago while he kept a dense mustache.

After hearing Gangula's words, the man stopped chewing beef. After a short while, he pounded the cattle's leg onto the table. Closely after that, he glared at Gangula and issued an order, "Go chop off those b\*stards' heads and send them to the huge bear tribe!"

Gangula licked his lips excitedly and nodded silently before turning around and leaving the main tent...

"Wait for a second, where's Sabrina?"

"It's said that she bought a castle of Spencer Clan in Eschyle City last month!" Gangula said.

"Hmm, you can leave!" The clan head rubbed his mustache with his oily hand while waving another hand towards Gangula. Gangula then strode away.

Watching Gangula leaving, the clan head of wild bear tribe revealed a sneer, "F\*ck, b\*stards, preach your sh\*t! You just want to share my benefits with some talkative lackeys and a bullsh\*t knight from Western Continent. Do you think that this father has

not seen a knight or our Slavs have no knights? Peh..."

...

Sabrina was indeed in Eschyle City; precisely, she was outside the military harbor of Eschyle City. Sitting in a black sedan, she was watching the battleships of North Wind Fleet setting off the military harbor together with numerous residents of Eschyle City.

Only the command iron-blood battleships and heavy cruisers above 10,000 tons of North Wind Fleet could pass by Oro Strait. From the beginning, North Wind Fleet was founded for blocking Oro Strait. Therefore, North Wind Fleet was only matched with the above two kinds of battleships.

Those common civilians were cheering and watching the battleships setting off the harbor. Sabrina was shocked by the colorful flags that were hung on a battleship which was closest to her while feeling goosebumps all over.

One triumph flag and two black-iron throne flags...

Triumph flag indicated that the fleet was ready for battle while the two black-iron throne flags meant that there were 2 black-iron knights in the fleet!

All the battleships started to whistle at the same time, which reverberated around the Eschyle City like a roar.

'What's that for?' Sabrina was dumbfounded for a second before telling the driver to go back to the castle...

After 20 minutes, hearing the latest news, Sabrina revealed a bizarre look——Knight? The lad became a knight?

# Chapter 730: Protection

---

The sunset afterflow spray over the sea, turning the sea level of the entire Saint Herner Harbor into glow...

At this moment, the Saint Herner Island was more prosperous than that 5 years ago when Zhang Tie came here for the first time benefited from the great growth in trade and personnel exchanges in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

The Narwhal anchored in a new berth, allowing passengers to disembark.

According to the schedule, the Narwhal would stay in Saint Herner Island for 2 days. After then, this luxury liner, which belonged to Sinaira Shipping Company, would set out for Akray Island. After circling around the major islands across Ewentra Archipelago, it would finally return to Sinaira Island and finished its remaining travel.

Such a relaxed and pleasant travel was the favorite leisure travel of rich people in Ewentra Archipelago.

Previously, Blackson Humans Corridor was also a favorite tourist attraction of rich people in Ewentra Archipelago. However, as Blackson Humans Corridor was covered with battle flames, those rich people lost their interests in it. By contrast, Ewentra Archipelag and Ice and Snow Wilderness which were far away from the continent became shangri-la.

The fishery and shipping industry across Ewentra Archipelago gained a momentum in growth these years. Great batches of rich and poor people escaping from Blackson Humans Corridor brought more gold coins, greater consumption capability, demand and cheap labor force.

As Saint Herner Island was close to Ice and Snow Wilderness, the passengers disembarking Narwhal could buy sufficient specialties



of Ice and Snow Wilderness from here at a low price, which was the transfer station of the trade between Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago.

...

"Sir, Narwhal will set off Saint Herner Island on 16:00 pm, September 27th in 2 days. Please carry your ticket and pay attention to the returning time!"

A staff reminded him kindly at the entrance of the gangway when Zhang Tie walked downstairs.

Zhang Tie responded with a smile as he left the Narwhal.

The dock was prosperous and crowded. Those disembarking the Narwhal were surrounded by all sorts of peddlers. Penetrating through the encirclement of the peddlers, Zhang Tie finally walked out of the dock.

Standing on the street outside the dock where he came several years ago, Zhang Tie felt everything familiar yet strange.

Right then, Zhang Tie saw a lot of trucks driving into the dock. The moment the trucks parked, those city guards of Saint Herner City had jumped off the vehicles and started to assemble.

"Company 1 takes charge of security of the east area; company 2 takes charge of west area; company 3 takes charge of the streets nearby the dock; company takes charge of maneuver supervision. Crack down any trouble that you meet!" A major issued his order to those soldiers. Closely after that, he waved his hand towards them, scattering the soldiers at once.

About 1,000 soldiers' arrival shocked many people nearby the dock. They exchanged glances with each other and wondered what was happening.

Zhang Tie was also watching them on one side as he sensed the sudden restless and urgent atmosphere in Saint Herner Island.

At this moment, a slight chaos drifted from a commodity trading hall nearby the dock. Someone rushed out of there while waving something in hand. Like being stimulated, he shouted loudly, "News from a business group in Ice and Snow Wilderness. The North Wind Fleet of Ice and Snow Wilderness have left Eschyle City a few hours ago..."

The man's exclamation puzzled many people on the street. However, someone understood it and changed their faces at once.

It was a bit chaotic in the street. However, the basic order was perserved. However, after hearing this news, someone accelerated their steps while a vehicle drove out of a parking position outside the gate of the commodity trading hall so fast that it even rubbed a taxi and caused a partial traffic jam.

Zhang Tie rubbed his jaw and smiled as he raised his hand. A taxi instantly parked in front of him.

"Sir, where are you going?" The driver turned around and asked him.

"Navyblue Castle!"

"It costs you 1 silver coin and 40 copper coins!"

Zhang Tie nodded. Then the driver started to car.

...

After leaving the dock, the overall situation in the streets was a bit intense while an increasing number of soldiers on duty could be seen everywhere in the street. The driver, who didn't know what happened, mumbled, "Ahh, what happened? Are they catching criminals?"

Zhang Tie closed his eyes and started to visualize 4 abacuses. About 20 minutes later, the car parked. Zhang Tie opened his eyes and found the car couldn't move any more as a group of soldiers from City Guard Administration of Saint Herner City set roadblocks in front of them.

The driver got off the car and talked with one soldier for a short while before returning with a sad look.

"Sir, I'm sorry, the City Guard Administration have blocked the way. I have to stop here. If you walk two miles ahead, you will arrive at Navyblue Castle!"

Zhang Tie slightly frowned as he took out a gold coin and gave it to the driver.

"Ahh, a gold coin? I have no changes!" The driver explained with an embarrassed look.

"Keep the changes!" Zhang Tie got off the car.

For these commoners who survive themselves and their family members by labor work, Zhang Tie always treated them generously since he became a new rich in Tokei City and left Selnes Theatre of Operations. He had no concept about one gold coin at all. However, a gold coin could make commoners happy for a long while. Perhaps, with one gold coin, they could tide over their current difficulties. As it could make both others and himself happy, Zhang Tie felt it was worthwhile to do that.

After being stunned for a couple of seconds, the driver looked excited, "Ahh, Sir, wherelse are you going to? Even though I cannot get you to Navyblue Castle, I can send you to Basa. I usually work nearby the dock. Remember my plate number. You can enjoy a free ride later!"

'What a benevolent commoner!' Zhang Tie smiled as he waved his hand towards the driver and walked towards the pass.

The driver didn't leave; he just parked on the roadside and seemed waiting for Zhang Tie to come back.

"Stop, this road has been blocked. Nobody could access to it!" Two soldiers blocked Zhang Tie.

"I'm going to Navyblue Castle!" Zhang Tie explained to the two common soldiers calmly.

"You're going to Navyblue Castle?" A first lieutenant instantly turned around and stared at Zhang Tie with a vigilant look. After glancing over Zhang Tie, he asked, "Are you a member of Navyblue Castle Business Group?"

"No!"

"What are you going there for?"

"It's nothing to do with you!" Zhang Tie answered faintly.

The first lieutenant commissioned officer became furious as he roared, "Catch him!"

All the near soldiers surrounded up him. Zhang Tie shook his head as he waved his hand, causing over 10 soldiers fly over 10 m back, including that commissioned officer.

Before those people climbed up, Zhang Tie had already flown towards the Navyblue Castle.

...

Outside the Navyblue Castle, dozens of armored vehicles and over 5,000 soldiers of the City Defense Administration of Saint Herner City were surrounding the Navyblue Castle. The Navyblue Castle was closed tightly while all the city-defense weapons on the castle were pointing at those soldiers of the City Guard Administration of Navyblue Castle. The current situation was very aggressive.

Gitta, the tough man was standing on the top of the castle wall with a cold look in full armor as he asked, "Major General Dim, what's the purpose of the City Guard Administration? Why do they surround our Navyblue Castle?"

"Nothing, the head of our Fain Clan wants to invite Ms. Olina to visit Saint Herner City for 2 days!" A man in major general uniform replied Gitta while standing on the top of the armored vehicle.

"F\*rt. If that old man wants to see our Ms., just let him come to

Navyblue Castle!"

"I'm sorry, if Ms. Olina doesn't think through it in one more hour, we will have to use force!" The Major General Dim replied in an icy way.

"Really?" A sound drifted from the sky. Closely after that, under the gaze of over 5,000 soldiers of City Guard Administration, a figure slowly descended and landed on the top of the city wall of Navyblue Castle. Everybody changed their face greatly.

Zhang Tie then revealed a smile at Gitta, who was already dumbfounded by what he saw. Closely after that, he watched the over 5,000 soldiers of the City Guard Administration and said, "Let the head of Fein Clan come to see me here in 1 hour; if not, what you told to Navyblue Castle just now would be what I say to Fein Clan!"

"You...you are..." Major General Dim felt hot all over as he almost fell onto the ground from the top of the armored vehicle.

"I'm Peter, Peter Hamplester; the lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness, also the master of the entire North Sea Area in the future. From now on, I declare that the entire Navyblue Castle will be under my protection."

Although Zhang Tie's voice was not loud, it could reach directly into one's heart. Hearing the name Peter Hamplester, everybody felt a dull thunder rolling by in the sky as they all felt goosebumps all over...

Behind a window inside Navyblue Castle, a pair of beautiful cyan eyes were tightly gazing at that figure who slowly descended from the sky. After hearing the one's last words, the pair of beautiful cyan eyes turned wet.

Ms. Olina then left the window and walked to the dressing table with undulating chest. Closely after that, she told her maids to help her dress up delicately...

# Chapter 731: A Bloodless Battle

---

Not until he saw Ms. Olina once again did Zhang Tie understand how much he missed this woman...

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that this woman was just similar to Miss Daina. However, when he saw her once again, he realized that this woman had been inseparable from his heart.

Perhaps, Zhang Tie was destined to have a deep touch with this woman since he saved her from the ambushed b\*stards of Demon Snake Island.

Actually, when this woman had her warriors kill that guy dispatched from Demon Snake Island decisively for the sake of Zhang Tie's safety in Navyblue Castle, Zhang Tie had felt an indescribable thing between the two of them.

When he stayed with those girls of Rose Association, Zhang Tie felt that he was still immature mentally although being mature physically. By contrast, during the days when he stayed with this woman, Zhang Tie became a real man.

Zhang Tie thought that this was another sort of compensation gifted by the God.

Although it had been 5 years, this woman still had no wrinkles on her face. Conversely, her fervent, elegant and mature charm was like a delicately brewed rose liquor, which smelt more mellow, sweet and fascinating.

When he saw her, Zhang Tie knew Ms. Olina had dressed up well.

Olina was wearing a royal blue, bright heart-shaped long skirt while exposing her breasts in a pair of golden high-heeled shoes. The brilliant diamond necklace hung in the groove between her plump breasts.

This woman knew what he liked.

The moment he caught sight of Ms. Olina, the narwhal of Zhang Tie, who had enjoyed 6-7 hours' ride on Narwhal, became hard once again.

From 20 m away, by looking into each other's eyes, the two people had been obsessed.

When Ms. Olina moved her eyes away from Zhang Tie's face to the finger ring of awareness, a faint glow appeared on her cheeks, making her more beautiful.

Gitta, who brought Zhang Tie in, silently left the parlor of Navyblue Castle as he closed the gate.

With his eyes on her, Zhang Tie walked over there.

Seemingly having anticipated that something was going to happen, Ms. Olina's breasts undulated faintly.

Zhang Tie just walked over there and put one arm over her neck. Closely after that, he kissed Ms. Olina's lips intensely...

Gradually, Olina started to respond fervently as her sexy tongue slid into Zhang Tie's mouth.

After a long while, the two people departed from each other.

"Do you want me to wear a 'blindfold' this time?" Zhang Tie asked Ms. Olina.

A bashful look appeared on her face.

...

Besides the head of Fein Clan, even the head of Bell Clan, who were the most powerful figures in Saint Herner Island, arrived in Navyblue Castle in 1 hour.

After waiting for 1 hour in the parlor of Navyblue Castle, the head of Fein Clan became restless as bean-sized sweat started to drop off his half-balded head. He kept wiping off his sweat. By contrast, the head of Bell Clan looked calmer. Sitting in a dignified way, the old Bell sipped a mouth of tea water served by the waiter

in Navyblue Castle.

After 2 hours, Zhang Tie finally walked out with Ms. Olina who wore a purple skirt.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the head of Fein Clan instantly sprung up while the old Bell looked calmer.

At this moment, Ms. Olina looked brilliant and charming all over like a honey peach being moisten by morning dew.

Only after throwing a glance at Ms. Olina had the heads of Fein Clan and Bell Clan bowed towards Zhang Tie.

As they knew what this woman and this man had done in the past 2 hours from the look of Ms. Olina. As for men with rich experience, Ms. Olina's look indicated that she had not made love for a long time until just now.

Zhang Tie nodded towards the two men. Ms. Olina revealed a kind look towards old Bell; by contrast, she turned cold towards the head of Fein Clan.

The moment they sat down, the head of Fein Clan had sprung up once again as he watched Zhang Tie with a smile, "Erm...what happened today...was a misunderstanding?"

In Saint Herner Island, Fein Clan might be able to do whatever they wanted; even across Ewentra Archipelago, Fein Clan was still an influential clan. However, in front of the master of Ice and Snow Wilderness, also a knight, Fein Clan was barely a rural rustic new rich. If all the rural new rich across Ewentra Archipelago could join hands with each other, they might form a bit threat to Ice and Snow Wilderness. However, if there was only one new rich like Fein Clan, they dared never fight Peter alone.

Zhang Tie waved his head as he didn't want to listen to the boring explanation anymore.

In the final analysis, what Fein Clan did today was just to protect themselves when they knew that North Wind Fleet was heading



towards Saint Herner Island.

"If there are a number of bandits and demons who do all the evil things outside your home, whom do you expect to help you guard your home; a strong braveman, or a businessman who only pays attention to profit and would escape away the moment they face the danger?"

The moment Zhang Tie uttered, the heads of Fein Clan and Bell Clan had become silent as they understood Zhang Tie's meaning right away. Ewentra Archipelago was the portal of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Previously, the Ewentra Archipelago and Ice and Snow Wilderness could maintain a certain compromise and balance; however, after the holy war broke out, the Ice and Snow Wilderness could not allow Ewentra Archipelago to sustain the current state. Because Saint Herner Island was the last station for demons to reach Ice and Snow Wilderness from Ewentra Archipelago, that's why Zhang Tie appeared in Saint Herner Island.

"When the demons would arrive here, your entire clan could escape out of here by one ship. But have you thought about the residents in Ice and Snow Wilderness? They have nowhere to escape!" Zhang Tie watched the heads of the two major clans as he added, "I'm not intimidating or threatening you. I just want to give you a choice. You can leave Saint Herner Island right away; I will not hurt you. You can go wherever you want with all the coins that you've made here. But if you want to stay here, you have to follow my rules!"

Ms. Olina remained silent. She just watched Zhang Tie, who exhibited a fascinating masculinity, the only time when Ms. Olina felt that this man had already grown mature.

After being silent for a second, the old Bell asked, "I wonder what do we need to do and what can we get if Bell Clan agree to stay?"

"Everything about your clan would run as usual. You could also

keep your private forces; however, Bell Clan would need to adopt the following two aspects: first, taxation power. In order to accumulate strength, I have to control the taxation power of Saint Herner Island. Second, military power. As long as the demons arrived here, a powerful and brave army instead of stragglers and disbanded soldiers would protect you and spare time for you to transfer your wealth and family members. If the demons really arrived, I would allow you a free migration! Additionally, each island in Ewentra Archipelago could share a greater autonomy. I would not dispatch my administrative officers to the islands. Your clan interests would be basically guaranteed. Ewentra Archipelago could even find an autonomous parliament..."

Besides the taxation power and the military power, Zhang Tie promised a great autonomy to the islands and clans across Ewentra Archipelago. Furthermore, he used Ewentra Archipelago to balance the resistance coming from the lower middle class. This was Olina's advise during the past 2 hours when Zhang Tie made a "deep exchange" with Olina. With this advise, Zhang Tie could control the entire Ewentra Archipelago at the lowest price and face the least resistance. That woman was not only the best lover, but also the best adviser.

If he unified the taxation power, it seemed that some clans would abandon some rights; actually, from the perspective of the entire Ewentra Archipelago, this measure could further promote the trade of the entire archipelago and enable each clan to make profits. The biggest bottleneck that restricted the development of the maritime trade of Ewentra Archipelago was that taxations had not been unified across the archipelago.

As for the military power, it was the key for Zhang Tie to control the entire Ewentra Archipelago which reflected Zhang Tie's authority.

Additionally, the greater autonomy and the right to migrate when the demons arrived, collapsed most clans' willingness to

resist.

Through the foundation of the autonomous parliament, he could not only allow the major clans on Ewentra Archipelago to pin down each other, but also handle many internal conflicts in the public. Besides, he could rope in middle class and citizens across Ewentra Archipelago and allow major clans to pin down common class. Apparently, this autonomous parliament could unify Ewentra Archipelago; actually, it collapsed the total power across Ewentra Archipelago, causing local force or clan to not predominate in Ewentra Archipelago.

After thinking a short while, old Bell asked the final question, "Whether Berusken was...killed by you?"

Through Ms. Olina, Zhang Tie had predicted that old Bell might ask this question. Because old Bell's two sons were killed by b\*stards in Demon Snake Island, Bell Clan swore to clean Demon Snake Island.

"Yes, the entire Demon Snake Island will become a history from today on!" Zhang Tie nodded.

After watching Zhang Tie with a complex look for a while, old Bell finally stood up and made a deep bow towards Zhang Tie. Closely after that, he put his right hand on his left chest and said solemnly, "From today on, Bell Clan will pledge to be loyal to Peter Hamplester!"

The 6 eyes finally fixed on the head of Fein Clan. The situation had been obvious. Two of the top three major clans in Saint Herner Island had already stood on Zhang Tie's side. Even if Fein Clan was still controlling Saint Herner City, it had no chance to bargain with the other two major clans, even a knight.

Bigger sweat dropped off the head of Fein Clan.

"Fein Clan doesn't need to answer me at this moment. Before the North Wind Fleet arrives, you have 4 days to make a decision, stay

or leave!" Zhang Tie said calmly as he waved his hand to let the head of Fein Clan leave.

When the head of Fein Clan was going to leave the parlor, he heard Ms. Olina talking to Zhang Tie.

"Perhaps Fein Clan still wanted a try with tens of thousands of soldiers!"

Zhang Tie sneered faintly like having heard a joke as he comforted Ms. Olina by lightly patting her hand—tens of thousands of soldiers were nothing but a sh\*t in front of a knight ...

After hearing this, the head of Fein Clan turned his face immediately, 'Although Peter said I could have 4 days to consider it, would that woman spare 4 days to me? As I've already offended that woman by surrounding Navyblue Castle with so many soldiers today, if that woman used any trick during these days or persuaded Peter that Fein Clan's really going to "struggle", then...'

'Other women may not do such a trick but this one is different as she is "Enchanting Fox", who has been used to "kill" people.'

'Don't forget how this woman handled Ballas Clan.'

Therefore, the head of Fein Clan immediately drew back the foot which had stridden out of the parlor. After that, he turned around and returned to Zhang Tie's front. Lowering his head, he put his right hand on his left chest.

"From today on, Fein Clan will pledge to be loyal to Peter Hamplester!"

# Chapter 732: A Hot Welcome

---

On September 29th, when the North Wind Fleet of Ice and Snow Wilderness arrived at Saint Herner Island after 4 days of travel, the entire Saint Herner Island had long been dressed up and waiting for it liking holding a festival.

The average citizens in Saint Herner Island might not know that the 3 major clans in Saint Herner Island had already paid allegiance to Ice and Snow Wilderness. However, the atmosphere of the ceremony made many people who were worried about possible wars reassured. No matter what, it didn't look like that a war was going to break out.

All the people in Saint Herner Island had rushed to the harbor to watch the heroic North Wind Fleet of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

At about 2 pm, a limousine fleet left Navyblue Castle for Saint Herner Harbor. The moment they left Navyblue Castle, they had seen soldiers of Saint Herner City standing on the roadside in a red formal dress while chinning up and chesting out like poplars 1 with a distance of 3 m or so.

Zhang Tie and Olina were sitting in a limousine in a very formal dress.

Zhang Tie wore a brilliant ceremonial robe, which was a noble grand duke's costume being matched with black, red and gold according to the rules of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Olina also wore a beautiful, black ceremonial dress, making her noble and beautiful.

They were sitting on the back row of the limousine. The windows of the vehicle were composed of one-way glasses, which could not be seen through from outside. The driver was Gitta.

A lot of onlookers on the roadsides were waving fresh flowers and flags with blushes. They were yelling "Peter...Peter...Peter...".

Therefore, the car didn't move fast.

After leaving Navyblue Castle for a mile, more and more people gathered on the roadsides with ear-deafening exclamations.

Although it was only a couple of days since he came here, the news that Zhang Tie visited Navyblue Castle had already shocked the entire Saint Herner Island. Not only residents in the downtown of Saint Herner City, even many people in the remote areas of Saint Herner City had arrived so as to witness the heroic look of the Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

In Saint Herner Island, Zhang Tie had too many halos on his head. Besides the status as the Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness, his Knight-level battle force, his heroic deed in Demon Snake Island and so many events about him in Ice and Snow Wilderness and the entire Ewentra Archipelago made Zhang Tie much more brilliant than any superstars before the Catastrophe.

Zhang Tie became a mixture of authoritarian, hero, idol, superstar and religious leader.

In the heart of average people, such a person was even more brilliant than the sun.

Since the limousine fleet drove out of Navyblue Castle had the entire road become boiled. If not all the soldiers in Saint Herner City were maintaining the order, the entire road might have been covered by people.

"Peter...Peter...Peter..."

The sound insulation effect in the back row of the limousine was very good; even though Zhang Tie could still hear clearly the ear-deafening exclamations outside the car and see their frenzied and excited looks.

The onlookers constantly sprayed fresh petals over the road...

"I've been in Saint Herner Island for so many years, but it's my first time to see them completely boiled up for one person!" Olina

watched Zhang Tie with a bizarre look. It seemed that Zhang Tie's honor was hers.

"Actually, I'm as same as them!" Zhang Tie smiled at Ms. Olina, "Perhaps you don't believe it; seeing them, I feel like watching myself!"

Olina blinked her eyes as she didn't understand why Zhang Tie said so...

Watching the average looks on the roadsides, Zhang Tie took a deep breath as he did one thing——He opened the windows on both sides. After that, he watched outside with a tender look. He was waiting to be noticed by the roadside people. Zhang Tie would always reveal a genial and simple look to these people.

...

The moment Zhang Tie opened the windows, the onlookers on the roadsides had stretched out their necks to witness the look of the Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Ms. Olina smiled towards the roadside people while sitting close to Zhang Tie in a beautiful and elegant way.

"Peter...Peter...that one must be Peter. I saw him!" A roadside girl shrieked as she instantly passed out due to extreme happiness.

"Ahh, that's Peter. The one sitting close to Ms. Olina is Peter!" Someone exclaimed with an excited look.

After catching sight of Zhang Tie, many people started to shout loudly due to the excitement.

...

When Zhang Tie opened the windows, the fleet was always accompanied with much more louder cheers. The moment the other onlookers heard the louder exclamations, they knew that the fleet was arriving.

The limousine drove in Saint Herner City along the designated

route. In Saint Herner City, not only roadsides, even the balconies, windows and roofs of buildings on both sides had been crowded with people. Everyone was exclaiming and cheering. They even didn't know why they were so happy.

The fleets of Bell Clan and Fein Clan converged in the fleet of Navyblue Castle before heading for Saint Herner Harbor.

Hearing the cheers of the entire city, the head of Fein Clan felt lucky and fearful. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie could have such a great influence in Saint Herner Island. Watching such a boisterous scene, some clansmen of Fein Clan who felt unpleasant just now instantly changed their faces as they forcefully swallowed their saliva and didn't speak anymore.

Sitting in a car of his own fleet, the old Bell let out a sigh as he turned around and told his grandson with a solemn look, "Remember, Philis, unless you can arouse the same shock in a strange place after leaving Saint Herner Island, never stand on the opposite of such an influential figure if you want to survive Bell Clan. Because you don't know how many trump cards does this figure have. Many people will send your head to him in order to flatter him!"

His 20-year old grandson nodded solemnly. Closely after that, he whispered to old Bell, "Grandpa, is that Peter really younger than me?"

Zhang Tie was staying in Navyblue Castle these days. In the entire Bell Clan, only old Bell was qualified to see Zhang Tie. Even old Bell's grandson Philis, who was the successor of old Bell, was not qualified to see Zhang Tie. Only on today's occasion, Philis was able to stand closer to Zhang Tie under the leadership of old Bell.

"You should believe that someone in this world would always be favored by the God!"

...



The complete fleet then entered the Saint Herner Harbor, the periphery of which had been completely covered by onlookers. More than 10,000 soldiers of Saint Herner City were maintaining orders here.

After passing by the crowded road, the fleet came to an open dock. Watching the front cars parking, all the big figures of Saint Herner Island followed Zhang Tie off the vehicles.

A simple yet solemn welcome ceremony was held here while the ground was paved with red carpet. Everyone was waiting for the arrival of the North Wind Fleet.

After getting off the car, Zhang Tie drew Olina's hand and walked to the edge of the dock. They then looked into the distance.

Following some frigates of Saint Herner Island, the North Wind Fleet appeared on the sea level with rising black and dense smoke.

In this age, a fleet composed of artilleries and huge ships symbolized maritime right and wealth. Without the deep background, a nation could never afford a fleet.

Two dense glow slowly rose from Zhang Tie's body spiritually. In a split second, the two glow twisted with each other and shot to the sky. Closely after that, an extremely brilliant heavenly curtain gradually spread like numerous bloody suns while the bloody flames covered the entire Saint Herner Harbor, even the Saint Herner City like a judgment in the doomsday and gods' fury...

The bloody heavens curtain reappeared in the world.

At this moment, watching the sacred, brilliant heavens curtain rising from Zhang Tie, all the influential figures in Saint Herner City standing behind Zhang Tie were dumbfounded...

When the bloody fiery heavens curtain appeared, two meteors set off the North Wind Fleet in the distance and flew towards Saint Herner Island.

The numerous suns radiated jarring luster, which poured into

Zhang Tie's scalp. Closely after that, a huge wheel of golden light composed of complex geometric patterns came into being at Zhang Tie's feet. The moment the huge wheel of light came into being, an invisible strength swept over 100 sq miles like radio waves centered by Zhang Tie.

Everyone felt that something inside was plucked by that strength...

Last time when he released Bloody Fiery Heavens Curtain, it was 5 years ago. Zhang Tie had not predicted such a great change in Bloody Fiery Heavens Curtain. When the luster poured into Zhang Tie's scalp, Zhang Tie was in a bizarre state. Meanwhile, the scene that he released his Bloody Fiery Heavens Curtain in the ruined relics and the unforgettable, heavy feeling shocked Zhang Tie's soul once again like rebroadcasting a slide...

# Chapter 733: The Gentle Strength-Supreme Protection

---

Zhang Tie seemed to return to the most contradictory and helpless moment in his life.

Aurora appeared in front of him and watched him with a sad look...

"Gangula has already reached a confidential agreement with the heads of other small and medium-sized tribes. As long as the heads of the tribes support him, Gangula promises to survive some influential figures of each tribe. According to Gangula's plan, only 200-300 people could persist till 3 months later when the rescue would break through the tunnel!"

"Tomorrow, the allied force will start to clean the pioneers in this ruined relics! In order to survive the fighters in Grey Eagle Tribe, I will join the battle. I prefer to die with my fighters; instead of surviving myself alone!"

After saying that, Aurora left...

Sabrina appeared in front of Zhang Tie...

"My little man. Don't worry. We could still keep in touch with the outside world. The rescue team of Wild Bear Tribe and other tribes would arrive after a couple of days. We only need to stand here for 3 months. As long as I could survive out, I swear to take you out of here!"

...

Sam and Gerri appeared in front of Zhang Tie with the same sadness.

"Peter, Sam and I are here to bid farewell to you. After negotiating with Sam, we've decided to go back to the team of pioneers. As nobody can leave out of here or wait until the

underground tunnel is broken through; we prefer to die as pioneers so that we still retain a bit dignity!"

...

The heart-wrenching pain and helplessness returned to Zhang Tie.

In the pain, Zhang Tie returned to the distant, dark tunnel in Wildwolf Valley...

In the distant and deep underground tunnel, he marched forward, followed by a team of miners while holding burning torches...

He took out his dagger, followed by all the others. Closely after that, he cut through his wrist and dropped the fresh blood into the pit on the stone.

...

"This is the blood of brothers. How can you dry up before the completion of the sacred great blessing skill?"

"Ahh, no..."

"Use mine, use mine blood..."

"Wtf..."

Strange faces reappeared in front of Zhang Tie...

...

"Brave sacrificers. You sacrifice yourself to your brothers. This is the supreme, righteous deed. This is the most satisfactory love...your names will be carved on that sacred arch door forever. When you can treat your brothers as yourself, you have entered the realm of truth. Time will end; oceans will dry up; high mountains will collapse. However, your names will never fade away. Your sacrifice means eternity. One day, all of us will gather in the sacred realm of eternity. Each perfection that you've done for your brothers will finally come back to you. Your brothers will

never leave you alone. You know, the light is in your body. Everything that you create will stay along with you like how you stay with the God."

...

Potter who had become the fire holder exclaimed with a sacred look, "I wish to sacrifice myself for my brothers!"

...

Hallan Wood jumped out, "I wish to be the sacrificer!"

...

Jack Jones jumped out, "I wish to be the sacrificer!"

...

Natili Gandi jumped out, "I wish to be the sacrificer!"

...

Francis Franca jumped out, "I wish to be the sacrificer!"

...

Finally, only one word was reverberating in Zhang Tie's mind.

——Sacrificer! Sacrificer! Sacrificer! Sacrificer! Sacrificer!  
Sacrificer! Sacrificer! Sacrificer! Sacrificer!

Yes, sacrificer!"

Turning oneself into the burning torch in the dark——burning oneself to illuminate the road for others!

It turned out that the sacred light was buried in everyone's heart!

Zhang Tie through it through at once...

Based on his marvelous perception, each one within 100 sq mile became a fine string that could resonate with Zhang Tie in his consciousness...

'This is the Gentle Strength!'

'Actually, I've already mastered that in the ruined relics. However, as I've not reached the Knight level at that moment, I could not display it.'

When the huge visible halos and the invisible chakra were running, Zhang Tie felt like becoming a bell, a huge bell, which could ring in a certain state and could cause the resonance of other rings of lives.

The bell rings were the praise for sacrifice while sacrifice was the supreme protection of Zhang Tie and all the others.

Zhang Tie felt that something was in his body while those awakened genes and abilities integrated into that halos like musical notes and turned into a certain frequency in the halos and the huge bell, which was increased by times...

'That is a super great strike-resistant ability that I gained after eating so many iron-body fruits!'

'That's a super effective ability which could accelerate the recovery of all the wounds after activating the preliminary recovery body which I got after setting free so many earthworms!'

'And the ability to resist coldness granted by sandscale fish.'

Zhang Tie opened his gleaming eyes while an invisible strength spread across everybody within 100 sq mile...

The faint strength that everybody felt being plucked inside just now was intensified this time, causing everyone in Saint Herner Island feel a powerful, dauntless strength rising in their own bodies.

Being pushed by such a great strength, the battle-qi totems of all the fighters above LV 6 rose up along with one bright, yellow mysterious halos...

Actually, the halos appeared on everyone's body, but it was especially obvious on fighters above LV 6. The higher level the onlooker was, the more brilliant halos he would have.

In a split second, exclamations could be heard everywhere from the harbor to Saint Herner City...

"What's happening..." All the fighters in Saint Herner Island shouted.

At the sight of the sacred totem Bloody Fiercy Heavens Curtain that covered the entire sky, many citizens on the streets suddenly felt an unprecedented strength rising in their bodies which felt pretty comfortable. All the guys who had wounds and pains felt much better. Being shocked by all this, they just felt everything in front of their eyes was like a wonder.

"It's Peter, Peter manifests the wonder!" A smart guy immediately felt that he found the right answer when he remembered those legends about Peter.

"Ahh, wonder!" All the others started to exclaim with full of excitement.

"Yes, it's a wonder. I feel full of strength..."

A middle-aged woman raised her hand with full excitement as she explained, "The wound that was left when I chopped vegetables yesterday healed instantly. What a wonder..."

More people exclaimed...

The extremely brilliant sacred totem Bloody Fiery Heavens Curtain became the best note and background of the wonder in the eyes of the innocent people.

Some people even directly knelt down and started to pray while their faces were covered with tears.

For those innocent people across Saint Herner Island, very few of them knew the so-called wonder was just the manifestation of the knight's Gentle Strength.

Even many commissioned officers above LV 6 in Saint Herner Island didn't know what was happening when they were

experiencing the knight's Gentle Strength, not to mention commoners. Even common knights didn't exist in Saint Herner Island, not to mention knights who mastered Gentle Strength.

Some senior commissioned officers might have thought of the legendary Gentle Strength of knight. However, they were not sure about it. After all, nobody had experienced such a marvelous skill of knight before.

However, they were sure that this special strength and the bizarre phenomenon in the sky was brought by Peter!

Among all of them, only Elder Turin of Eschyle City and Elder Gouras of Huge Bear Tribe who flew towards here knew that it was knight's Gentle Strength.

The invisible strength also reached the two elders who were still dozens of miles away, causing two huge golden halos. As a result, the two elders became more eye-catching in the sky.

The two elders had great perceptive abilities on their bodies. In a split second, they felt that their defensive ability and strike-resistant ability had increased by at least 3 times, even their protective battle qi had become about 10% firmer. Additionally, their cell healing and recovering ability increased by at least 6 times. Additionally, the two people felt that the chill instantly disappeared in the air...

This was knight's gentle strength, very powerful gentle strength. After being aided by such a strength, it was like wearing a cold-resistant super powerful armor, which could defend harms and accelerate the healing speed of wounds...

The two elders soon arrived at Saint Herner Harbor. After landing in front of Zhang Tie, they gave a salute to Zhang Tie.

"Gouras, the elder of Huge Bear Tribe!"

"Turin, the elder of Iron Bear Tribe!"

"Sorry for being late, clan head!"



"It's okay. Please don't be that polite. Now that you've arrived, just wait here with me for the North Wind Fleet!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

Finding that the two knight elders from Ice and Snow Wilderness respected Zhang Tie so much, many so-called "big figures" in Saint Herner Island forcefully swallowed their saliva before swarming up to greet the two elders.

The two elders just nodded towards the heads of Fein Clan and Bell Clan, not to mention those so-called "big figures".

"Clan head, is that your gentle strength?" The Elder Gouras asked Zhang Tie with desired eyes as he tried to recover his composure.

"Right!"

"What's the name of this gentle strength? It's too powerful!" Elder Turin asked with a respectful look.

After thinking about it for a couple of seconds, "I want it to be called supreme protection!"

'Supreme protection?' After exchanging a glance with each other, the two elders eyes shined.

One hour later, the North Wind Fleet finally arrived at Saint Herner Island while being greeted by Zhang Tie's Bloody Fiery Heavens Curtain.

Right in the greeting ceremony in Saint Herner Harbor, the 3 major clans of Saint Herner Island issued the joint statement. They declared that Saint Herner Island would be integrated into Ice and Snow Wilderness from today on under Peter Hamplester's ruling...

# Chapter 734: The Sacred Light Empire

---

After finishing the ceremony, Zhang Tie finally spared some time to listen to the introduction of Elder Turin and Elder Gouras about Ice and Snow Wilderness in a study of Navyblue Castle. Zhang Tie then slightly frowned...

During the past 5 years, many unexpected things had happened in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

"Sacred Light Empire? Sacred Light School?" Zhang Tie mumbled this strange name from the Western Continent.

"Sacred Light School has a branch in Blackson Humans Corridor—God of Brilliance School. God of Brilliance School even founded a country called Sun Dynasty, which bordered with Norman Empire. After the holy war broke out, Sun Dynasty encountered a large-scale demonized puppets disaster and had already been exterminated. Therefore, God of Brilliance School and Sacred Light School are the same religion in different regions. Their creed and organization structure are the same." Elder Gouras explained. He even told Zhang Tie about Sun Dynasty and God of Brilliance School as he thought Zhang Tie was unfamiliar with them.

Zhang Tie was stunned. He had not imagined that God of Brilliance School and Sun Dynasty originated from Sacred Light School. However, he was familiar with God of Brilliance School and Sun Dynasty. When he joined Iron-Blood Camp, he had fought the corps of Sun Dynasty in Kalur Theater of Operations. Additionally, one of his subordinates was the muling of Sun Dynasty.

Everything about Sun Dynasty and God of Brilliance School made Zhang Tie feel disgusted.

"The one who founded God of Brilliance School in Blackson Humans Corridor was a red-robe muling of Sacred Light School.

Later on, God of Brilliance School founded Sun Dynasty. As Blackson Humans Corridor was far away from Western Continent, plus certain internal problems facing Sacred Light School, Sacred Light School gradually lost its control of God of Brilliance School." Elder Turin added, "Sacred Light School has a tradition; it encourages expansion. This school allows its clergies to leave Sacred Light Empire and duplicate all the regulations of Sacred Light School in all the continents and countries in the name of preaching. Clergies are allowed to establish churches even theocratical states so as to increase the influence and controlling forces of Sacred Light School."

"Like a virus?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes, the expansion mode of Sacred Light School is like how the virus spreads!" Elder Turin nodded.

"How big is the influence of Sacred Light Empire in Western Continent?"

"Sacred Light Empire is one of the major states in Western Continent. Its force mainly gathers in the eastern region of Western Continent. The total area of Sacred Light Empire is 5 times more than that of Blackson Humans Corridor with more than 10 billion people!"

"How's the relationship between Sacred Light Empire and other states in Western Continent?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Sacred Light School is widely forbidden in many states and regions as a heresy. Sacred Light Empire doesn't get along with the other major states!" Elder Gouras explained.

Zhang Tie nodded as he knew clearly about the f\*cking tricks of God of Brilliance School.

In one word, the creed of the so-called God of Brilliance School was that everything in the world was created by God of Brilliance. Therefore, everything belonged to God of Brilliance. All those who

didn't believe in God of Brilliance were guilty and had to go the hell after death. Those who believed in God of Brilliance were righteous and were destined to go the heaven after death. It sounded noble. Actually, if you believed in it, everything of yours would belong to God of Brilliance. As God of Brilliance would not manifest itself in front of commoners; only those mulings who were close to God of Brilliance knew the will of God of Brilliance. Therefore, mulings administered and enjoyed everything that was created by God of Brilliance on behalf of the God of Brilliance.

Your belongings belonged to God of Brilliance; however, the belongings of God of Brilliance belonged to mulings. Therefore, your belongings belonged to mulings.

You were the citizen of God of Brilliance; mulings were the servants of God of Brilliance. God of Brilliance expressed his will and ruled his citizens through mulings. Therefore, mulings were the spokesmen of God of Brilliance. Muling's words were what the God of Brilliance wanted to say; Muling's will were the will of God of Brilliance and the truth. If you violated mulings' will, you violated the will of the God of Brilliance and the truth.

Everything of God of Brilliance School was interpreting how a group of worms, jerk clergies, liars, bandits and thieves bullied and slaved the followers using that God's statue.

Such a trick remained unchanged before and after the Catastrophe. However, the things that were worshiped always changed. If it was a God's statue being worshipped, they said that God created everything and brought people paradise and intelligence; if it was a great man or sage, they said that the great man or sage created everything and brought people truth and fashion; if it was science, they said that science created everything and brought people happiness.

As the God's statue remained silent, the mulings' words were God's will.

As the sage passed away, the politicians interpreted the truth.

As the science was profound, experts said only they understood it.

Only the God knew how many mean and dirty lies were fabricated.

Such a trick had been played for thousands of years; however, it still had a great vitality until today. Although age and environment changed, human greed, desire and fear remained unchanged.

"What are the stances of the major bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness?"

"A few days ago, the wild bear tribe had chopped off the heads of a group of clergies from Sacred Light Empire and sent them to the huge bear tribe. The fire bear tribe and sea bear tribe didn't express their stances for the time being. Mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe might have been roped in by Sacred Light Empire. The missionary group of more than 200 people dispatched by Sacred Light School to Ice and Snow Wilderness this time was ruled by a mace muling. The mace muling was a knight

"How many knights do the three tribes have?"

"Mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe have one knight, respectively, who are the most dignified elders in their tribes. Julius, the clan head of demon bear tribe is a 5-star battle spirit, who mastered the skill of secondary instant promotion. After secondary instant promotion, his battle force is close to that of a knight. Plus that mace muling of the missionary group of Sacred Light Empire, they have 4 and a half knights precisely!"

'Four and a half knights, plus Sacred Light Empire on their back, no wonder the tribes dared covet my territory. Actually, huge bear tribe and iron bear tribe have 4 knights. However, the opponent had not imagined that I also became a knight. Additionally, I've mastered the gentle strength of knight. Therefore, my party is

more powerful.'

As a wide area of territory in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor had collapsed, the strategic importance of Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago grew. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could collide with the power of Western Continent here. However, as it had happened, he had to make his decision.

Besides Sacred Light Empire, through reading Berusken's memory, Zhang Tie knew that other forces of Western Continent had already reached their tentacles in Ewentra Archipelago. Due to the huge amount of wealth that was accumulated through trades between Ewentra Archipelago and the other parties and its geographical position, which was closer to Western Continent than Blackson Humans Corridor, Ewentra Archipelago had already made some people drool with envy. This crisis in Ice and Snow Wilderness and the will that Ewentra Archipelago would like to establish Ewentra Archipelago Parliament were actually pushed by certain forces from Western Continent. Due to their tacit cooperation, if they made it, one western force would devour Ice and Snow Wilderness while the other western force would occupy Ewentra Archipelago.

'However, they have to admit that they have selected the wrong places due to my existence.'

"After handling affairs in Ewentra Archipelago, we will return to Ice and Snow Wilderness!" Zhang Tie told the two elders.

After exchanging a glance with each other, Elder Turin and Elder Gouras nodded at the same time!

...

On October 1st, after receiving the invitations of Peter Hamplester, all the heads of clans across Ewentra Archipelago, even the elders of barbarous clans in Sinaira Island arrived at Navyblue Castle in Saint Herner Island by airship to negotiate

about the future deployment of Ewentra Archipelago.

Accompanied by the heads of major clans were their own fleets. The allied fleets of Ewentra Archipelago converged in the open water of Saint Herner Island, whose overall battle force was over 3 times than that of North Wind Fleet in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Only 40 people or so were qualified to be invited to negotiate about the future deployment of Ewentra Archipelago by Zhang Tie. They represented the local forces of the entire Ewentra Archipelago.

Evidently, the battle force of North Wind Fleet could not match that of the allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago. However, the allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago and the major clans on Ewentra Archipelago didn't have knights on their back. In this case, as long as the war between Ewentra Archipelago and Ice and Snow Wilderness broke out, North Wind Fleet would be exterminated for sure; however, Ewentra Archipelago would also suffer a great loss. Additionally, the three knights from Ice and Snow Wilderness would definitely exterminate the local major clans on Ewentra Archipelago as a revenge. As a result, the trade and prosperity of the entire Ewentra Archipelago would be weakened. That was to say, even if Ice and Snow Wilderness won the war in the end, it could still not organize an established navy army in a long period.

Each major clan could be able to make such a deduction.

All the major clans on Ewentra Archipelago knew the outcome if they fought Ice and Snow Wilderness; however, they didn't feel like losing the war in this way. Therefore, after one day of negotiation, the major clans on Ewentra Archipelago dispatched two representatives to tell Zhang Tie about their conditions on October 2nd...

# Chapter 735: Bet on A Duel

---

The two who came to propose conditions to Zhang Tie on behalf of the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago were both influential figures in Ewentra Archipelago: Connar, the head of Rainald Clan in Akray Island and Brightman, the head of Willies Clan in Gantiadu Island.

They were both above 60 years old. In this era, such an age was the heyday of men.

If Zhang Tie didn't appear, Connar and Brightman were both hot candidates for the speaker of the Ewentra Parliament. Actually, Connar, the head of Rainald Clan was even the most important person on the back of Ewentra Parliament.

Zhang Tie watched this guy seriously——ash brown hair, raised hooknose, sunken eyes and thick and plain jaw. Given his special look, he must not be average.

By contrast, Brightman, the head of Willies Clan looked like a harmless, gentle, dignified engineer in eyeglasses.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't treat Brightman as a harmless engineer. As Willies Clan in Gantiadu Island was a bosom ally of Spencer Clan in Ewentra Archipelago. Of course, Willies Clan was not average, not to mention Brightman, the head of the clan.

"Your Excellency. This is the condition proposed by all the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago. If you can adopt this condition, we will proceed according to it. Otherwise, we have to fight Ice and Snow Wilderness at any price for the sake of Ewentra Archipelago!" Connar said as he put one document, which had been signed by all the attendants of this conference, in front of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie turned open the document politely. Actually, he had long known the contents of the document. As the owner of



Navyblue Castle and Zhang Tie's liaison with all the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago, Ms. Olina had contacted the major clans many times these couple of days and figured out their bottomlines.

If Zhang Tie disagreed with their condition, more than 70% of major clans would evacuate from Ewentra Archipelago and establish an exile Ewentra Parliament in Western Continent. After that, they would always find Zhang Tie trouble. It would be very tricky.

It was Connar, the head of Rainald Clan, who proposed to establish an exile Ewentra Parliament overseas.

"Make a duel between 1/2 of North Wind Fleet and the same scale of the allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago on the sea. If North Wind Fleet wins the battle, all the major clans and islands across Ewentra Archipelago will pay allegiance to me. If the allied fleet wins the battle, besides Saint Herner Island which maintained its current situation, all the other islands across Ewentra Archipelago will also maintain their current situations. Additionally, Ice and Snow Wilderness will not seek to annex other parts of Ewentra Archipelago." Zhang Tie skimmed over the contents of the document before watching Connar and Brightman, "I have to admit that your condition is considerate!" Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile, which was confirmative or ironical.

Although the condition seemed fair, it was unfair to North Wind Fleet. Actually, based on the battle experience and drilling level of the fleet, the North Wind fleet, which had been established for just less than 5 years could still not match the allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago which lived and trained on the ocean all the year round.

'It seems that this condition is especially designed for the possible loss of North Wind Fleet. Even if I was defeated, I would only lose half of the battle force of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Additionally, I would also keep the control of Saint Herner Island. In this way, I

wouldn't look too much embarrassed or arouse more casualties and damages due to extreme fury.

"This is a bet on the duel between two fleets without the participation of knights from Ice and Snow Wilderness!" Connar added frankly, "Ewentra Archipelago worships ocean, where each one has a special feeling about the ocean and respects the real brave who could conquer the ocean. Therefore, you could not make us succumb to Ice and Snow Wilderness faithfully unless you show an overwhelming power to conquer us on the sea. If you want to conquer Ewentra Archipelago by pure force then the only outcome is to see Ice and Snow Wilderness turn into ruins! I think you've already heard a proverb in Ewentra Archipelago!"

"What's that?"

"Knights could conquer the land, yet they could not conquer the ocean!"

Zhang Tie replied with a faint smile. 'It's true for common knights. The area of ocean is broader than that of land. Even though knights can fly, their flight ability weakens sharply above the ocean. Because most of the knights can only fly a bit longer than 1,000 miles at most. By contrast, the fleet has better maneuverability and the ability to conceal themselves, which pose greater deterrent force to traffic routes on ocean and ships [on the ocean]. Therefore, this proverb spread in Ewentra Archipelago. However, this proverb is not completely true. It's just a self-consolation of an archipelago community. However, it's just a joke for me.'

Facing the joke, Zhang Tie replied with a smile. He didn't care or wanted to argue something. He just threw a glance at Brightman, "Do Willies Clan also think like this?"

"As we are not only defending the interests of Ewentra Archipelago, but also the dignity of Ewentra Archipelago through this bet. If Your Excellency could allow major clans across Ewentra

Archipelago to lower their heads in front of you in a dignified way, I think it would be nice for all of us. Otherwise, we could only destroy each other in the end!"

"Dignity?" Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Alright, I agree with your condition. I promise that none of the knights from Ice and Snow Wilderness would attend this duel, including me. Just let the two fleets make a duel in the public. The remaining fleet would be the winner! But I've also got a condition..."

"What condition?"

"I hope it is Rainald Clan's fleet which fights the North Wind Fleet. I know that Rainald Clan's fleet will be able to participate in such a bet based on its scale and battle force!"

A light flashed by Connor's eyes. However, he still maintained a smile, "I agree! But there's one thing that I have to remind you. For the fairness of this bet, the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago have already submitted 0.2 billion gold coins as the caution money of this bet and invited Golden Roc Bank as the warrantor of this bet!"

After hearing this, Zhang Tie swore inside, 'What f\*cking rich clans! In order to prevent me from regret, these guys have already gathered 0.2 billion gold coins as the caution money so fast. Additionally, they even roped in Golden Roc Bank as their warrantor. What cunning guys! It seems that they've already won the duel. However, if I win, Golden Roc Bank will also supervise these clans to perform their bet.'

'Generally, Golden Roc Bank will not interfere with such a battle which strive for territory and power unless the parties of the battle sign a contract.'

'What a valuable contract!'

After pretending to consider it with a solemn look, Zhang Tie said, "No problem, I agree!"

After hearing this, Connar revealed a faint smile at his mouth corners. Even Brightman's eyes contained something else, which was more like a faint sigh towards Zhang Tie's young age, low intelligence and false judgment than contempt.

Seeing Connar and Brightman leaving the room, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile which gradually turned bright...

'If you want to play, let's play something big!'

Zhang Tie's eyes instantly turned extremely profound...

...

At this moment, a side door opened slowly while Ms. Olina entered twisting her butts with a sad look. She was auditing in a neighboring room just now.

"This bet is very dangerous!" Ms. Olina told Zhang Tie.

"Is this where you usually work in Navyblue Castle? It's nice." Zhang Tie asked as he looked around.

Ms. Olina's face blushed instantly, "Aren't you worried about that?"

"Why?" Zhang Tie smiled as he put his arm around Ms. Olina, "Do you want to make money? Make a lot of money?"

After being silent for a second, Olina watched Zhang Tie with a confused look, "What are you talking about?"

"Hmm, if I'm your boss and you're my beauty secretary and a commercial spy who wants to steal commercial intelligence from me, what will you do?" Zhang Tie asked seriously as he threw himself on the chair with open legs.

Olina blushed as her eyes turned watery and enchanting...

...

After 2 hours, Elder Turin and Elder Gouras stood in front of Zhang Tie, who looked pleasant, with sad looks. Zhang Tie only

told them, "I don't want to explain anything. I just want to tell you that, from now on, you go fetch as much money as possible in the name of the huge bear tribe or iron bear tribe in terms of gold coin, loan, mortgage or gold delivery right. There's an opportunity for you to make money. It depends how much you can fetch. And I promise to have your money at least doubled in 10 days."

The two elders were both stunned...

...

On October 2nd, the moment this bet was released to the public, it had shocked the entire Ewentra Archipelago and Ice and Snow Wilderness. Everyone wondered which party would be the winner, Ice and Snow Wilderness or Ewentra Archipelago...

On October 3rd, Golden Roc Bank accepted the wager from both Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago.

The bet, which shocked the entire Blackson Humans Corridor, took effect from then on...

# Chapter 736: Convergence

---

From October 4th, the entire open water of the Saint Herner Island had started to become boisterous. Besides the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago that converged in Saint Herner Island, all the influential and talented figures had arrived by airship or steamer. Batches of people from all walks of life started to converge in Saint Herner Island so as to witness the rare duel on the sea.

In Ewentra Archipelago, duels always happened due to animosity or love. Duels were not forbidden in Ewentra Archipelago. As long as the two parties agreed, they could sign a contract on duel when the notary and their friends and family members were at present. Such duels were usually considered as bright and brave deeds, which would even be praised by residents here.

Even barbarian tribes in Sinaira Island and old major clans in Akray Island paid special tribute to such a duel and the outcome of such a duel.

In Ewentra Archipelago, even two guys' duel would become a local hot news, not to mention such a large-scale duel between two fleets. The shock was like a super tsunami caused by Richter magnitude 10 earthquake, which spread across Ewentra Archipelago in the shortest period.

As for the parties of the duel, one of them represented the most powerful force in Ice and Snow Wilderness, the other one represented the power of the local major clans of Ewentra Archipelago. This duel would determine the belonging of the entire Ewentra Archipelago, the fates of numerous people, even the future of the entire north water. Of course, such a large-scale duel would cause a shock.

From October 4th, as so many people poured in, all the hotels and inns across Saint Herner Island had been reserved. Even the

rent had increased by 10 times. In such a case, all the common households across Saint Herner Island had hung out billboards so that they could rent their own houses at lower prices than that of inns. Due to the developed commercial trade across Ewentra Archipelago, all the residents here had a sensitive commercial awareness.

Similarly, the prices of berths for ships below 5,000 tons at the dock of Saint Herner Island also surged to 2,000 from 160 gold coins per day. However, the berths had also been occupied by deluxe private yachts.

For commoners, the berthing cost of 2,000 gold coins a day was astronomical. However, such a bit of money was nothing but sh\*t for those rich maritime traders. Even if they stayed in Saint Herner Island for one month, it would cost them about 60,000-70,000 gold coins. However, it was too cheap for them to witness such a great duel.

In this case, numerous luxury cruises and private yachts arrived from all directions. They just wanted to witness such a historical moment. As no vacant berths were left at the dock, those luxury cruises and private yachts just loitered in the open water of Saint Herner Island. As a result, the entire open water of Sainter Herner Island had been covered with cruises and yachts in a couple of days as dense as woods. When those cruises and yachts needed a supplement, they would anchor at the temporary dock.

In such a case, being required by almost all the passengers, the Narwhal also changed its route and left Akray Island for Saint Herner Island.

Being different from last time, this time, Narwhal could not find an available berth at the dock of Saint Herner Harbor anymore. The Narwhal could only anchor in an eastern water being close to the island. If passengers wanted to join the bet, they would be transported to Saint Herner Harbor from Narwhal by small ships. After that, they would be taken back.

Similarly, besides the major clans of Ewentra Archipelago which started to converge in Saint Herner Island, a lot of big figures in Ice and Snow Wilderness also wanted to witness this duel which could influence the future of the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness and the entire north water.

Almost when the news reached Ice and Snow Wilderness, Peter Hamplester had raised 270 million gold coins from Golden Roc Bank with his ownership of the Tribal Axis Railway as a mortgage and thought he would win the battle, which completely boiled the stalemate situation in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

5 years ago, the most valuable place across Ice and Snow Wilderness might be Eschyle City, which was the only city in Ice and Snow Wilderness. However, the most valuable city across Ice and Snow Wilderness now was Tribal Axis Railway.

After 5 years of development, this railway artery that connected the south with the north almost bore its fruits.

The resources developed by the migrants less than 100 miles away from the railway such as forest farm, mines, pasture and farmland made many people drool, not to mention the great value of the railways itself.

The region along the Tribal Axis Railway had already become the most developed and active place across Ice and Snow Wilderness. Such a situation made people both envious and fearful.

They were envious about the constant gold coins and more and more available resources brought by the Tribal Axis Railway. They were fearful because huge bear tribe and iron bear tribe became the largest benefactor of the Tribal Axis Railway Plan. As a result, the two tribes developed much faster and gradually surpassed all the other tribes.

Because of Tribal Axis Railway, the situation of Ice and Snow Wilderness turned intense. Being instigated and colluded by the missionary group of Sacred Light Empire, the bear tribes



started to covet the Tribal Axis Railway. They wanted to change the pattern of the Ice and Snow Wilderness basically.

Frankly, since Zhang Tie took the Tribal Axis Railway as the mortgage, this duel had not simply been involved with the future of the entire Ewentra Archipelago, but also the future of the entire north water including Ice and Snow Wilderness.

All the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago were driven mad by Zhang Tie's action. It meant that as long as they won the battle, they could not only keep their position in Ewentra Archipelago, but also control the economic artery of Ice and Snow Wilderness. They had never imagined about such a rare opportunity before.

If Golden Roc Bank didn't participate in such a duel, nobody dared accept Zhang Tie's mortgage. Because they were afraid that Zhang Tie would break his words. Nobody dared rob away the Tribal Axis Railway from a knight. However, with Golden Roc Bank as the warrantor, they didn't have to worry about the credit as they knew Ice and Snow Wilderness never dared repudiate a debt from Golden Roc Bank, no matter how powerful they were.

In the odds 1:1.1, the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago chipped in 297 million gold coins in the blink of an eye.

As for the same event, some people were happy while some people were sad. When all the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago were frenzied, mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness felt unhappy. If Peter won, he would occupy the entire Ewentra Archipelago and make astronomical gold coins. Besides, he had the huge bear tribe and wild bear tribe on his side. Peter would have everything like people, money, fleet, territory, reputation and authority. By then, nobody dared oppose him. They had to be low-key and look at Peter's face. Of course, they could not accept it.

If Peter lost the battle, with Golden Roc Bank on his back, the Tribal Axis Railway would fall in others' hand. If so, all the efforts

that they had made would be in vain. The three tribes would deteriorate to laughingstocks and crowns across Ice and Snow Wilderness and north water for at least 100 years.

When Peter took Tribal Axis Railway as the mortgage, the three tribes were put on the grill!

The huge bear tribe and iron bear tribe also chipped in after Peter.

...

On the noon of October 8th, the exclusive 10,000 ton-luxury cruise Chief of the head of Spencer Clan finally appeared in front of Saint Herner Island after 5 days of travel.

Gangula, the head of wild bear tribe was watching so many cruises and ships in the open water of Saint Herner Island with greedy eyes as he rubbed his hands and drooled, 'F\*ck, so many deluxe yachts, so many rich people...'

# Chapter 737: Big Figures!

---

For many commoners in Ice and Snow Wilderness, they might not be able to cross Oro Strait and wander in Ewentra Archipelago in their whole lives. It was not Gangula's first time to come to Ewentra Archipelago. As a childe of the wild bear tribe, Gangula had already traveled across Ewentra Archipelago at a young age when he broadened his vision through learning the folklore of the north water.

Gangula had been to Ewentra Archipelago two times. However, it was his first time to see such a splendid scene while tens of thousands of ships converged on the north waters.

Watching those cruises and yachts, Gangula felt like watching a herd of cattle which had no master.

Gangula felt unhappy, 'Why could such guys of Ewentra Archipelago live so well? How could they be so rich? By contrast, the tribes of Ice and Snow Wilderness only have powerful battle force, but we live a poor life. How unfair it is...'

'What if I robbed them?'

"My darling younger brother. Can you wipe off your saliva? Look at you, you must be thinking about robbing them with our soldiers."

A lazy, female voice drifted from Gangula's side. The moment he heard the voice, Gangula revealed a brilliant smile as he turned around, watching his elder sister Sabrina, who had the same father with him and was known as a notorious slut across Ice and Snow Wilderness, walking towards him. She was watching him with a languid look.

"Heh...heh...you think too much, my darling elder sister!" Gangula revealed a brilliant smile as he did not admit that he was thinking this just now, "If I dared do that in this water, that old

wild bear would break my legs!"

"No. If you were caught by others, the old wild bear would break your legs. He would punish you for not running fast enough. If you were not caught by them, that old wild bear would even praise you for your diligence. If you could clean a major clan in Ewentra Archipelago that converged in Saint Herner Island and get 10 million gold coins from them, that old wild bear might even pass the crown to you!"

After hearing Sabrina's harsh words which were really destructive. However, Gangula had to accept it. Perhaps Sabrina's words were closer to the truth. Gangula had always been admiring his elder sister, especially when Sabrina hit on Peter. Previously, he felt a bit uncomfortable about this elder sister who was known as a notorious slut across Ewentra Archipelago; however, since Sabrina became the virgin mary of Ancient God School and made Peter, the lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness as his elder brother in law, Gangula had been completely overwhelmed by Sabrina. As a result, not only Gangula, even Sabrina gained a greater freedom from that old wild bear.

"Aww, my darling elder sister, erm...can you lend me some money..." Gangula asked with a shameless face.

Money was another reason that made Gangula admire his elder sister Sabrina. These years, Sabrina had made too much money through monopolizing the sale of all-purpose medicament in Ice and Snow Wilderness. She was a famous rich woman in Ice and Snow Wilderness now. Not only Gangula, even that old wild bear drooled towards Sabrina's wealth. With those money, Sabrina roped in so many people in wild bear tribe. Even all the tribal elders were standing on her side. Gangula and his brothers always sighed, 'Thankfully, there's no tradition in wild bear tribe that woman could be the head of the tribe; Sabrina also had been used to be free and doesn't want to go back to the tribe. Otherwise, the head of the tribe will have nothing to do with Gangula and his

brothers.'

After throwing her blue eyes onto Gangula, Sabrina knew what Gangula wanted to do with the money? She then revealed a faint smile at her mouth corners, "Don't you have your own cash-dough?"

"I only get a bit more than 100,000 gold coins per year. Additionally, I have to spend a lot of them to buy all-purpose medicament for my women. Without all-purpose medicament, they would sigh with sad looks in front of me. A small part of my expenditure on all-purpose medicament has flown into your pocket. Furthermore, I have to feed so many subordinates. How come I have any money left?"

Gangula didn't lie to her. As a childe of the bear tribe, he could at most get a bit more than 100,000 gold coins a year. In Ice and Snow Wilderness, Gangula was relatively smart. Therefore, he had more chances to make money these years. By contrast, childes of mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe were so poor that they would even drool for one copper coin.

"Don't you have a seabuckthorn chateau? All of your seabuckthorn wine has been sold to Ewentra Archipelago each year. Additionally, I heard that you and a business group in Eschyle City have discovered a copper mine near Haidela Glacier. Don't complain of being hard up in front of me." Sabrina revealed the truth mercilessly.

Gangula then replied with a bitter look, "I've not got the payment of my seabuckthorn chateau back this season. The remaining money had been used to expand the chateau. Although we made a bit of money by that copper mine, it was used to build the road that links the copper mine with the Tribal Axis Railway. I only have tens of thousands of gold coins for the time being!"

"You want money to chip in?"

"Heh, heh, heh, heh, of course, as Peter spared me a chance to

make money, how could I miss it. However, I have very less money available for the time being."

Since he witnessed Zhang Tie manifesting the "God's will" in the dilemma of the underground ruined relics, Gangula had blind faith in Zhang Tie. Although it looked that Zhang Tie was in the disadvantageous position for the time being, Gangula was still full of confidence about Zhang Tie. He believed that Zhang Tie would be the winner.

'If a person could manifest God's will, it would be not difficult for him to create some marvel and surprises.' Gangula thought.

"Well, darling younger brother. Your reason is legitimate. As I've just bought a castle, I don't have too much money available. I could only lend you 200,000 gold coins. You owe me now." Sabrina put it straight.

Gangula grinned.

As Sabrina replied, she directly took out her gold check clip...

When Gangula was waiting for Sabrina's gold checks, he found Sabrina became still as she looked in the distance...

Gangula turned around and saw a huge ship with a special banner in the distance. The banner was a brilliant golden mace that hung in the void...

"The missionary group of Sacred Light School..." Gangula slightly changed his face.

"I've not imagined the Saint Herner Island will become more boisterous now. Darling younger brother. I heard you chopped off the heads of Sacred Light School. You'd better not run about in Saint Herner Island. If you died, that old wild bear and I would feel painful for sure." Sabrina sighed faintly as she took out of 200,000 gold checks and passed it to Gangula. After throwing another glance at that huge ship with the banner of the mace muling of Sacred Light School, she entered the cabin.

Gangula's face slightly changed and looked a bit solemn. At this moment, everybody could imagine the heads of mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe were in that huge ship.

...

The old wild bear and the head of fire bear tribe were sitting in a top cabin of Chief while watching that huge ship which was hanging the banner of the mace muling of Sacred Light School.

"Old fire bear, did you see that? Someone has already forgotten about the honor of Slavs for the sake of profits. They would flatter any party as long as they could share profits. It's said that the creed of Sacred Light School was that everything in the world was created by their God, including the followers' wives and daughters. If Sacred Light School could root in Ice and Snow Wilderness one day, those jerk clerks and mulings would be entitled to enjoy the followers' wives and daughters on behalf of the God. I wonder whether the wives and daughters of the heads of those tribes have been enjoyed or not!" Old wild bear Dali said scornfully. As he gnawed a fat fish, he wiped the fish oil onto his mustache. Closely after that, he blew his nose using the hand.

The head of the fire bear tribe blushed as he felt this old wild bear had some implications. If not the last message from Elder Turin which woke up fire bear tribe, he might have been the one who flattered Sacred Light School.

"Come on, enjoy yourself!" The old wild bear heroically tore apart the fish that had been touched by his hand which had just been used to blow his nose and put one half of it into the plate of the old fire bear.

Watching the half "juicy" fish in his plate and the old wild bear's oily hand, the old fire bear then forced a smile, "Hmm, I've eaten breakfast, I'm not hungry for the time being..."

...

On the ship of Sacred Light School, the mace muling was holding a golden mace in a golden, brilliant robe that was embroidered with a complex religious pattern which represented sun and brilliance. Meanwhile, he also watched the Chief while a sharp light flashed by his golden pupils...

"Those in that ship have abandoned the opportunities spared by the God of Brilliance. Therefore, they have to take the punishment of the God of Brilliance!" The mace muling told the other 3 people in the room after turning around.

"We've not seen God at all. However, the duel will start soon. We only want to know what can we get from this bet." One bad-tempered guy couldn't help but ask.

Narrowing his eyes, the mace muling of the Sacred Light School accented, "Ally!"

"Ally?" The three guys repeated as they exchanged glances with each other.

"After Peter loses the bet. Golden Roc Bak can ensure Peter to perform the contract. However, they cannot ensure whether someone would find the winner some troubles after Peter performed the contract. Doesn't the winner require some allies from Ice and Snow Wilderness to ensure their rights and interests along the Tribal Axis Railway? Isn't that what we're seeking for now?" The mace muling of Saint Light School explained with a profound look.

After hearing that, the other 3 guys understood it right away. One of them had one more doubt, "As there are 8 bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, why should the winner choose us as their ally? We're not the most powerful ones."

"Because we can help them win the battle; of course, we can share the fruits of the victory with them. This is the condition for us to be their allies!" The mace muling explained calmly.



"But no other party is allowed to join the battle apart from the two fleets!"

The mace muling didn't say anything; he just clapped his hands twice.

A person in the cloak of ascetic slowly walked out of a shadowy corner of the room...

Meanwhile, an invisible vapor spread over the entire room...

...

# Chapter 738: Another Gathering

---

Besides the two heads of the wild bear tribe and fire bear tribe and their entourage, 6 women who were gifted to Zhang Tie by Spencer Clan along with great hopes also arrived here by Chief.

Seeing Zhang Tie being always together with Ms. Olina and the increasingly shiny skin of Ms. Olina these days, Elder Turin told the 6 women of Spencer Clan to gather with Zhang Tie in Saint Herner Island. The longer they stayed with Zhang Tie, the more likely they would have Zhang Tie's babies and the safer the Spencer Clan would be in the future.

The Chief directly anchored in the exclusive berth of Saint Herner Harbor. Closely after that, all the passengers disembarked and headed for Navyblue Castle by cars.

The moment the luxury fleet set off the dock, Gangula had seen a row of huge rolling numbers on a high building outside the dock.

When he caught sight of that number plate, it stopped at 715987240.

"What's that number?" Gangula asked the driver.

"It's the total amount of cash being used for this bet from all parties!" The driver replied.

'Seven hundred and fifteen million, nine hundred and eighty seven thousand, two hundred and forty gold coins?' After counting that number seriously, Gangula almost passed out. He knew that those major clans on Ewentra Archipelago were rich after hundreds of years of accumulation; however, he had not imagined that they could be so rich.

'F\*ck, compared to those major clans in Ewentra Archipelago, those bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness are simply beggars. If Peter won, he would become the richest guy in the north water; the Tribal Axis Railway could bring Peter a bonus of 270 million

gold coins. Additionally, among the over 700 million gold coins, the Tribal Axis Railway alone could stimulate at least 70% of the total amount of capital. How terrifying it is! Such an unrestrained gambling could not be met for a millennium. No wonder why so many people arrived here. Even though being just onlookers, they've felt it proud to talk about it for the rest of their lives.

Gangula's eyes turned red in a split second, even his nostrils expanded.

"Where to chip in?" Gangula gritted his teeth while touching the 200,000 gold coins that he borrowed from Sabrina.

"You can do that in Navyblue Castle. Golden Roc Bank set a chip-in point especially in Navyblue Castle!"

When he recalled the huge ship which hung the banner of mace muling of Sacred Light School, Gangula controlled his impulsion.

The streets of Saint Herner Island had never been so boisterous before. Barbarians who heft huge axes and young masters of major clans followed by a lot of bodyguards and retinue were crowded closely. Few people had seen such a scene before.

...

The huge ship of the mace muling of Sacred Light School didn't gain a berth at the dock. Therefore, it only anchored in the open water. Soon after it anchored, a large airship from Saint Herner Island landed on the deck of the huge ship and carried those passengers to the Saint Herner Island...

...

10 minutes later, two big pitch-black ships with sharp steel-clad rams drove in the open water of Saint Herner Island and queued up for the vacant berth. Someone recognized that they were flagships of two pirate forces near Sinaira Island. It seemed that even pirates couldn't help but watch the battle.

However, at this moment, Saint Herner Island was converged

with powerful forces. By contrast, the two pirate ships were as docile as wolf pups entering a tiger's den.

...

After half an hour, over 20 freaks stopped near the dock by mutated billhead sharks.

The moment these freaks appeared, a small turmoil was aroused in Saint Herner Harbor. Many people poured in and watched those people who rode mutated billhead sharks, each of which was longer than 10 m with frightening dark blue tiger stripes.

Those freaks just wore a waterproof hide while being covered with grease. Under the gaze of the onlookers, those guys got off the billhead sharks and took off their waterproof package. Closely after that, they took out the clothes from the package and changed their looks soon.

After changing their clothes, those guys left the dock.

Soon after those guys left, those mutated billhead sharks that were swimming near the dock sunk in the water and disappeared.

"These guys are all from sea bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Only powerful fighters of sea bear tribes could tame mutated billhead sharks!" Someone shouted.

With the arrival of the duel on October 10th, more and more people poured into Saint Herner Island.

...

The group of people in Chief soon arrived at Navyblue Castle.

Elder Turin and Elder Gouras were waiting for those people from Chief in Navyblue Castle. Due to their dignified status, Elder Turin and Elder Gouras would not go to welcome them at the dock unless the knight elders of the wild bear tribe and the fire bear tribe arrived. However, due to the intense situation in Ice and Snow Wilderness, the knights of the wild bear tribe and fire bear

tribe had to stay in their nests in case of an emergency.

In a backroom of Navyblue Castle, the heads of the wild bear tribe and fire bear tribe were talking with Elder Turin and Elder Gouras.

"The mace muling of Sacred Light School and the three stupid old bears are on the way!" Dali introduced what he had seen just now to the two elders in a restrained way.

After hearing his words, a killing qi flashed by Elder Turin's and Elder Gouras' eyes at the same time.

"Does Sacred Light Empire really think that we dare not kill their knight?" Elder Gouras said with a killing intent.

After knowing that three knights in Saint Herner Island were hostile towards him, the mace muling of Sacred Light School still dared to lead his missionary group here in Saint Herner Island. If he was not extremely powerful, he must have felt that Ice and Snow Wilderness dared not deal with the mace muling of Sacred Light Empire. What a presumptuous guy!

Elder Turin also narrowed his eyes, "Let's talk about it when Peter comes back!"

"What? Peter is not in Saint Herner Island?" Korman, the head of fire bear tribe asked with an amazed look. He thought that Peter, as the most important person, should stay in Saint Herner Island at this moment.

After exchanging a glance with Elder Turin, Elder Gouras nodded, "Our head has left Navyblue Castle 3 days ago. We declared that he's in cultivation these days!"

"Where has he been?" Dali asked out of amazement.

The two elders shook their heads.

"When he left, he said he would come back tonight!"

...

In a parlor of Navyblue Castle, feeling the weird atmosphere, Gangula, whose nickname was "mad dog", shrugged and slipped away as it was not a proper place for a man to stay.

8 women were sitting in the parlor. 7 of them were looking at the female owner of Navyblue Castle, Olina, who was known as an enchanting fox. Ms. Olina also watched the rest 7 women. The atmosphere was subtle.

Probably, when all the women who established connections with each other due to a man would be in such a subtle atmosphere when they saw each other for the first time.

Those women just tried their best to show their elegance and beautiful look by chinning up and chesting out; meanwhile, they glanced over the other women and made comparations stealthily on the figure, breasts, skin, face, temperament, and skills on the bed. At this moment, no women would refer to bullsh\*t talents.

"Now that you are here, Peter is yours tonight. I cannot stand him any longer after these days of torture!" Ms. Olina put it straight firstly as the host of this castle and the one who had a close relationship with Zhang Tie.

"Given your enchanting look, if he came back tonight, he would never let you sleep alone. How about finding a bigger bedroom?" Matia, the one who looked more like a dowager in Spencer Clan revealed a faint smile.

"Hmm, good!" Ms. Olina nodded frankly.

"Sabrina, do you like to join us tonight?" Matia watched Sabrina with a faint smile.

After hearing this, Sabrina felt bashful, "I'm uncomfortable these days, I will sleep alone!"

...

Zhang Tie really returned to Navyblue Castle quietly in the deep night.

Elder Turin and Elder Gouras felt that Zhang Tie was a bit fatigued. However, he looked calmer than before. It seemed that he had been fully relaxed about the coming duel.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to see the two elders of the wild bear tribe and fire bear tribe. After knowing that Zhang Tie had promoted to a knight and mastered a powerful gentle strength——supreme protection, the old wild bear and that relative of Spencer Clan showed their respect to Zhang Tie so much that completely transcend the estrangement of age. In this age, power meant everything. Even a 2-years old knight could win the respect of everybody else, not to mention a 20-years old knight.

After talking with the other 4 people in the backroom for about 2 hours, Zhang Tie left.

Before he left, the old wild bear stealthily drew Zhang Tie to one side as he told Zhang Tie with a mournful look, "Sabrina once told me, since she fell in love with you, she could not accept others in her heart any longer. Alas...she's very regretful about her previous shameful experiences. She's hoping that you do not mind her past. However, she felt bashful to tell you about that herself; therefore, she was very anguished...As her father, I don't know what to say...I only hope...you could console her and expect you two could have a complete result!"

After hearing these words, Zhang Tie became stunned for a couple of seconds. After that, he glanced over this old jerk from his head to toe seriously. No matter what the gossips were, he was the only one who knew Sabrina's secret. Although they had a close relationship with each other, they had not gone to bed. Actually, Sabrina was still a virgin...

'How could Sabrina tell this old jerk about this? Obviously, it's fabricated by the old wild bear so as to trap me...'

Looking at the average look of Dali, Zhang Tie finally understood that people could not be identified from his look.

'Jerk! What a jerk!' Zhang Tie swore Dali inside hundreds of times...

...

After leaving the backroom, it was already too late. Under the guidance of a maid of Ms. Olina, Zhang Tie came to the bedroom of Olina. The moment he opened the door and entered, Zhang Tie, even being a knight, almost spurted out his noseblood...

...



# Chapter 739: Take the Bull by the Horns

---

On the next morning, Zhang Tie saw Sabrina whose eyes turned swollen. After 5 years, Sabrina still remained unchanged. Her change could not match that of Zhang Tie, who had triggered his body-changing bloodline.

"What's up? Didn't you sleep well?" Zhang Tie asked her with a big smile.

Among those women, although Sabrina was the only one who had not made love with him, the two people had a very tacit understanding. Therefore, after 5 years, Zhang Tie could still greet her in a casual way like how they did 5 years ago.

"I slept on someone's neighboring room last night and enjoyed a symphony overnight!" Sabrina rolled her eyes towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he put his arms around Sabrina, "You've not changed at all!"

Sabrina let out a sigh before she cupped Zhang Tie's face and looked into his eyes seriously, "You've changed so much. You were a sunny big boy 5 years ago; however, you're a real man now!"

"Isn't it good?"

"No, it's not good at all!" Sabrina shook her head as she added, "I treated you as a naughty younger brother several years ago. I could play with you at that time; however, I dare not play with you now!"

"Why?"

"I'm afraid that I will fall in love with you. After that, just like other women, I will treat you as the center of my whole life. From then on, I will lose freedom and be slaved by love. I will treat your sorrow and happiness as mine. This is not the life that I expect for!" Sabrina stroke over Zhang Tie's lips with one finger as she added, "Each woman is an angel; if a woman falls in love with a man, it's equal to cutting off her wings. I don't want to have my

wings cut off for the time being!"

Zhang Tie watched Sabrina seriously before faintly kissing her face. Closely after that, he let off his hand, "You know that I will never force you to do anything. In my heart, you're always that mermaid who can swim in the river freely!"

Sabrina responded with a smile.

A warm feeling surged in their hearts at the same time.

"And, I saw your father last night. Guess what did he tell me?"

Before Sabrina opened her mouth had Zhang Tie imitated what the old wild bear told him last night in front of Sabrina. After awakening his imitating bloodline, Zhang Tie's tone and expression were very vivid when he imitated the old wild bear.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Sabrina gritted her teeth, "The old jerk!"

"I also felt so at that time!"

After exchanging a glance with each other, the two burst out laughing once again.

"Do you know that I've chipped in over 1 million gold coins for you? It's all of my wealth. If you lost it, you would have to compensate it for me!" Sabrina said as she pointed at Zhang Tie's chest.

"The opponent is too powerful. That mace muling of the bullsh\*t Sacred Light School arrived here yesterday. I'm afraid that he's here to find me trouble. It seems that I have to compensate for you. If I went bankrupt, could I compensate you with my body?" Zhang Tie sighed with a greivous look.

"No way!"

"If not, accompany me to watch the North Wind Fleet in the afternoon!"

"Nice!"

"I found that you've changed a bit!" Zhang Tie said with a solemn look.

"Ahh, what has changed?" Sabrina became amazed as she wondered whether it was Zhang Tie's trick or not.

"Previously, it's E-cup, now, it's bigger. I wonder how it feels!" Zhang Tie lowered his head and watched her breasts.

Sabrina's face blushed at once as she instantly pushed Zhang Tie away, "You're also a jerk!"

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

...

In the afternoon, Zhang Tie, Elder Turin, Elder Gouras, the two heads of the wild bear tribe and fire bear tribe, Ms. Olina and the head of Bell Clan left Navyblue Castle for the dock of Saint Herner Harbor. They then embarked the flagship of North Wind Fleet——Snow Bramble Battleship. After that, the entire North Wind Fleet set out for the open water of Saint Herner Island.

In less than 1 day, the number on the notice board in Saint Herner Harbor had already reached 800 million gold coins.

Zhang Tie had no feeling about that terrifying number. As to others' expressions, only the head of Fein Clan looked a bit anguished.

Olina and old Bell had chipped a lot in Zhang Tie. In order to clarify his instance, Fein Clan also had to chip a lot in Zhang Tie. However, honestly, Fein Clan looked good on the battle force of the allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago. As the old saying went, it took 10 years to establish the land army and 100 years to establish the navy. Navy could never be improved simply by steel and gold coins. This could be indicated by the odds in Ice and Snow Wilderness, which was always 10% higher than that on Ewentra Archipelago, no matter how many knights were in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

The 10% was determined by the difference in the battle force between two fleets such as firing rate per minute, firing error, comprehensive strength of sailors, commanding and judging ability of commander...

The difference of 10% in both literature and military was decisive in a real fight.

Snow Bramble Battleship was a steel giant whose displacement was 86,000 tons. Its maximum speed was 21 nautical miles per hour while being driven by 4 steam turbines. Its main firepower was three 37 cm-wide supervoltage steam centrifugal cannon; each cannon could fire 2 shells at the same time. Additionally, it was matched with many steam ballistas.

In the command center of the battleship, the commander and the captain of the North Wind Fleet were reporting to Zhang Tie about the preparations of the fleet during the past few days with solemn looks.

After knowing that they shouldered such a great task, the North Wind Fleet prepared and trained around the clock these days like having taken viagra.

"How's your preparation?" Zhang Tie asked the commander of the fleet.

"All the crew members of North Wind Fleet have tried their best from the captain to the boilersmith for this duel!" The commander replied.

"Are you confident to win the battle?"

After being silent for a second, the commander opened his mouth, "If I tell you that I'm confident to win the battle, it's like cheating myself. Although Slavs are not the best sailors, we are the bravest sailors for sure. I won't promise you that we will win the battle, but I can promise you that each soldier of North Wind Fleet will fight to the death for victory!"

After making the promise, all the captains in the command center of North Wind Fleet looked highly spirited.

"Good!" Zhang Tie nodded satisfactorily, "As long as we have such a dauntless spirit, North Wind Fleet is always the winner in my heart!"

Having not imagined that Zhang Tie could comment North Wind Fleet in this way, all the commissioned officers in the command center of North Wind Fleet became spirited as they chinned up and chested out.

"Have you carried out live-fire drill these days?"

"We carried out live-fire training every day during the past few days. Navyblue Castle prepared us some targeted ships for us every day so as to ensure the effects of the drill. Please allow me to extend my thanks to Ms. Olina!" The commander faintly bowed towards Ms. Olina who was on his side.

"Hmm, nice!" Zhang Tie nodded as he threw a faint smile towards Olina. 'What a virtuous woman! She has already taken care of everything well for me.' When Zhang Tie was going to say something, he suddenly caught sight of the banner of the mace muling of Sacred Light School hanging on a ship in the open water miles away.

Watching that ship, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile over his mouth corners. He pointed at that 10,000-ton ship in the distance and asked the commander, "Have you tried such a huge targeted ship?"

The commander shook his head. Of course, the targeted ships were not complete 10,000-ton ships. If they used such a huge ship as their target, Navyblue Business Group might have already gone bankrupt.

"Now, that ship is your target, show me how long does it take for you to sink it!" Zhang Tie issued the order which shocked everyone

at the present.

After hearing this, the head of Fein Clan changed his face, "Tha...that is Sacred...Sacred Light Empire's..."

Zhang Tie changed his face instantly as he pointed at the commissioned officer of North Wind Fleet, "As an old Hua saying went, soldiers are the braveness of the general. If my soldiers are not afraid of the death, do you think that I'm afraid of the death? Do you think that I'm afraid of Sacred Light Empire?"

The head of Fein Clan became silent. By contrast, all the commissioned officers of North Wind Fleet became spirited as their faces turned red.

After saying that, Zhang Tie turned around and watched the commissioned officers of North Wind Fleet as he issued the order, "You can move closer to it and target at it precisely. Just f\*ck those b\*stards; remember not to have other ships involved!"

After making a military salute to Zhang Tie at the same time, the commander and all the commissioned officers instantly returned to their own posts. Only after a few seconds, the active alert of the Snow Bramble Battleship had sounded...

The huge ship with the banner of the mace muling of Sacred Light School could never imagine that they would almost be destroyed in a few minutes before they made any preparations in such a remote area, which lagged behind the western continent so much; although they could be unrivaled in the waters of the western continent...

...

# Chapter 740: Decisiveness and Strength

---

It was a good day with an azure sky and white clouds; seabirds could be seen everywhere...

The Snow Bramble Battleship issued the combat order to the entire fleet through lamp signals. After receiving the signal, the entire North Wind Fleet silently changed their formation. The four most powerful iron-blood battleships changed their formation into longitudinal from horizontal before cutting into the peripheral of the entire fleet. In this way, the fleet could register the greatest firepower output.

The key manufacturing techniques of the 4 iron-blood battleships and the 8 cruisers of North Wind Fleet were provided by Golden Roc Bank for free.

Although iron-blood battleships were not the most powerful battleships in this age, they could match the mainstream battleships of most countries in the Western Continent, besides those in Eastern Continent. In some special performance such as ice breaking ability, wind and wave-resistant ability, they were even better than common battleships.

After completing its formation adjustment, North Wind Fleet gradually moved towards the 10,000-ton ship of Sacred Light Empire. However, none of the ships in the entire open water of Saint Herner Island had realized its aggressive intention. Because North Wind Fleet always carried out the drill in the open water. It was normal for it to change its formation.

At this moment, so many luxury cruises were converging in the open water of Saint Herner Island. Many passengers were sunbathing on the cruises as they watched the formation change of North Wind Fleet. Meanwhile, they discussed the wager and the odds.

The distance between North Wind Fleet and the huge ship Sacred

Light Empire gradually narrowed from 7-8 miles to 2 miles.

At this moment, some people who were watching North Wind Fleet by a telescope on deluxe yachts felt something was wrong.

They found that all the four battleships of North Wind Fleet were targeting at one direction with killing qi. Additionally, they were on the horizontal line of the formation "T", from where the fleet could output its firepower to the utmost. They all had the same target—the huge ship hanging the symbol of Sacred Light Empire which arrived here yesterday.

'What's this for? Are they...'

In less than 2 minutes, North Wind Fleet had already been less than 1,000 m away from the huge ship of Sacred Light Empire.

For such battleships which could destroy their target from over 20,000 m away, 1,000 m was almost like the bayonet charge between two people from 1 m away. The moment the bayonet was thrust, it would arrive at the opponent's stomach.

The crew on Sacred Light Empire's huge ship didn't notice anything was wrong though...

Nobody could imagine that North Wind Fleet would dare fire towards the ship of Sacred Light Empire under the watchful eyes of the people at this moment...

With a loud "boom", the entire open water of Saint Herner Island was disrupted over dozens of square miles.

Common steam centrifugal cannons would not make such a loud noise. Take steam centrifugal cannon for the purpose of city defense as an instance, its shell was driven by the great momentum and speed brought by the carrying flywheel driven by the steam turbine. However, the steam centrifugal cannons on battleships were different than that of common steam centrifugal cannons. After the first acceleration brought by the flywheel, the shell gained the second acceleration through the super high-pressure



steam pressure regulating valve inside the turret of the battleship.

The first acceleration of the shell was granted by the linear velocity through rotating flywheel actuator. The second acceleration of the shell was due to the transient release of the super high-pressure steam inside the long snout. Such a transient release principle was similar to the explosion of boiler due to excessive carrying load, which would also cause a loud boom. Compared to the explosion of a boiler, the release of super high-pressure steam from the snout of the turret was actually imitating an artificial exploding effect by using a complex actuator inside the snout. The secondary acceleration, plus the initial speed and power could grant the shell weighing above 700 kg of the main cannon with a speed of at least 800 m/s, which was very destructive.

In this age, the super high-pressure centrifugal cannons being matched on battleships were very destructive. Besides, the loud boom could almost match that of the main cannons on battleships before the Catastrophe.

...

All the battleships of North Wind Fleet shot the huge target at the same time. If they missed such a huge still target in the best formation "T", those cannoneers would better commit suicide by jumping into the sea.

Closely after that loud boom, the huge ship of Sacred Light Empire was hit by 24 armor piercing gel shells, each of which weighed 734 kg, causing fierce flames rising from that huge ship.

With a great momentum, the armor-piercing gel shells penetrated through the hull of the huge ship before burning it everywhere. The combustibles in the shells were same as the substances in the white phosphorous gel firebombs used by airships. When they were attached to steel, they would keep burning until they melt the steel.

After being struck, the glass fragments of that huge ship sprayed

over 100 m away. The casualties were inestimable...

In the daytime, the open water of Saint Herner Island seemed like setting off a huge firework.

All the onlookers on the luxury cruises and deluxe yachts became stunned. At the same time, someone exclaimed due to the excitement.

After 20 seconds, the battleships of North Wind Fleet shot off another 24 armor-piercing gel 734 kg firebombs towards that huge ship of Sacred Light Empire once again.

The flames on the huge ship grew fiercer while the high temperature caused by the armor-piercing gel firebombs boiled the surrounding seawater. Closely after that, seawater poured into the cabin through the big holes on the hull. The huge ship started to incline. After only 2 minutes, the huge ship of Sacred Light Empire had disappeared...

The heavy cruisers of North Wind Fleet warmed up; instead of saving people, they kept shooting off dense high-speed steel beads by the distributed striking weapons on the vessel around the place where the huge vessel had sunk...

After doing all this, the North Wind Fleet adjusted its direction and headed for the open water like nothing had happened...

...

"Ballsy, motherf\*cker ballsy..." Watching all this, a rich guy in a pair of sunglasses and a floral shirt being surrounded by a lot of model-level beauties from Ewentra Archipelago forcefully threw his cigar into the sea as he shouted, "Steward, chip in 2 million gold coins on North Wind fleet for me in Saint Herner Island. F\*ck, even if I lost the bet, I would adopt it given that North Wind Fleet dared to fire towards those jerk priests..."

'North Wind Fleet sank the flagship of the mace muling of Sacred Light Empire!' All the onlookers were shocked by such a heroic and

dauntless deed...

Saint Herner Island was shocked all over...

...

In a hotel outside Saint Herner Harbor, all the fighters of sea bear tribe threw their scorching eyes towards one person among them.

"Check out the rooms of the hotel tonight. We need to go to Navyblue Castle!" That person took in a deep breath before saying, "The prophet pontiff is right, this is the decisiveness and strength that the lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness should have! Only such a person could bring honor and dignity to Slavs!"

...

# Chapter 741: The Arrival of the Airboat

---

Zhang Tie and North Wind Fleet didn't return to Saint Herner Harbor until evening. After destroying that huge vessel of Sacred Light Empire, all the crew of North Wind Fleet were in a high morale. They performed extremely high battle skills in today's training. Of course, they won Zhang Tie's praise.

Zhang Tie paid an exclusive visit to the turrets of the main cannons and the core functional areas such as engine room on the battleship Snow Bramble so that he could have an overall recognition about the operation of the battleship. Zhang Tie then verified the name-list of the battleships that would attend the duel on behalf of the entire fleet tomorrow. After that, the fleet returned to the Saint Herner Harbor.

Zhang Tie watched the afterglow in the distance on the head of the battleship Snow Bramble while facing the sea wind.

He suddenly missed his family members, his dad, his mom, his elder brother, his wives and sons.

If possible, Zhang Tie really didn't like to be involved in such a massacre and conspiracy. 'If it was peaceful across the world, I could build a city on the Eastern Continent and pass it to Zhang's offsprings so that they could live like a landlord without any concerns. I could live a carefree life with my wives and those girls in the Hidden Dragon Island such as Lan Yunxi. We can go wherever we want and play, eat and buy whatever we want. In the evening, we will try our best to prepare for having babies. After that, I will have my parents be the heads of a kindergarten and teach the babies of mine and my elder brother. What a nice life it would be!'

'Pitifully, the damn holy war broke out so fast. Demons and those human b\*stards who want humans to succumb to demons have everything involved in such a chaotic world. I could barely find a

tranquil place in this world anymore. Therefore, I have to struggle forcefully.'

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard footsteps drawing closer to him from his back. 'It's Elder Turin.'

"The mace muling of Sacred Light School dispatched a person to Navyblue Castle to ask why North Wind Fleet would sink his flagship to the bottom with a very stern look. He even asked whether Ice and Snow Wilderness wanted to fight Sacred Light Empire?"

"Now that he can stand us sinking his flagship to the bottom, it seems that he has made preparations to handle us tomorrow. Therefore, he doesn't show himself up right away in case of more loss!" Zhang Tie smiled. Before he turned around had he combed off his train of thought.

Elder Turin became faintly stunned as he had not imagined that Zhang Tie had such an intention by ordering North Wind Fleet to sink the flagship of mac muling of Sacred Light School. By doing this, Zhang Tie was displaying the decisiveness and strength of Ice and Snow Wilderness and testing the mental bottom line of his opponent. Compared to that juvenile 5 years ago, Peter Hamplester was more formidable from both battle force and mode of thinking. This was what a real lord should have.

"Do we need to reply to him?"

Zhang Tie replied with a casual look, "Just fabricate a reason. Just tell him that one of our cannoneers made a mistake and aroused a chain reaction. We're very sorry about this. That cannoneer was forbidden to eat meat tonight. Hmm...how jerks of that Sacred Light School would be punished after their crimes were exposed...ahh...I got it, confess...raise high the birch for corporal punishment yet fall down slightly. We've already had that cannoneer confess about that..."

Hearing this, Elder Turin frowned. Although it seemed to be an

explanation and apology, it was actually nothing different than smacking the face of that mace muling of Sacred Light School. After destroying the flagship of mace muling of Sacred Light Empire, North Wind Fleet just told one cannoneer to confess about it. It was nothing different than insulting them.

"If we do that, we're going to be the enemy of that mace muling completely!" Elder Turin reminded Zhang Tie.

"So what? We're not friends either." Zhang Tie's eyes gleamed as his voice turned icy, "After the duel, I will chop off that b\*stard's head. I will see how many missionary groups would be dispatched to Ice and Snow Wilderness by Sacred Light Empire. Maybe they will dispatch a powerful expedition corps composed of over 10 mace mulings to revenge for that b\*stard?"

After taking a deep breath, Elder Turin slightly bowed towards Zhang Tie before leaving with a reverent look.

...

On the distant sea level, a familiar luxury cruise ship appeared in Zhang Tie's vision——Narwhal!

'Even Narwhal are interested in that?"

Touching his nose, Zhang Tie entered his exclusive lounge in Snow Bramble.

The moment Zhang Tie entered, the 8 women who were chatting inside, turned around with tender and enchanting looks.

"What are you talking about?" Zhang Tie came to one side of a sofa and sat between Ms. Olina and Matia.

Actually, Zhang Tie had already heard what they were talking about outside the room. They were talking about professional topics about trade and commerce between Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago. Right in the chat, Navyblue Castle had already reached some commercial agreements with the business groups of Sabrina and Spencer Clan.

All the 8 women were smart.

"We're talking about you." Matia peered a small fruit using her tender and slim fingers and faintly pushed it into Zhang Tie's mouth.

The moment Zhang Tie came back, those women had transferred their attention to Zhang Tie.

"What are you talking about me?"

"We are talking about what other tricks would you play tonight." Matia replied with an alluring voice.

"Ahem..ahem..." Zhang Tie coughed under the teasing gaze of Sabrina before turning to Olin on his side, "Do Navyblue Castle have commercial relations with Western Continent?"

"Navyblue Castle will sell some spices and high-end coral products to Western Continent!"

"The relation between Ice and Snow Wilderness and Sacred Light Empire might be intense after a short while. You need to prepare for it in advance!"

Ms. Olin replied with a smile, "Navyblue Castle Business Group's trading partner in Western Continent was Grymes Republic, whose navy is even more powerful than that of Sacred Light Empire. Sacred Light Empire dare not find Grymes Republic trouble!"

"That's fine. Erm...does Navyblue Castle Business Group need more people now? I mean female graduates in commerce and accounting who have few internships."

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, all the women popped out their eyes. Closely after that, they blinked their eyes as they thought they were mistaken.

"How many?" Ms. Olin watched Zhang Tie with a faint smile, making Zhang Tie embarrassed.

"Three, right in the distant ship Narwhal. They're doing part-time jobs in the bar of Narwhal, their names are Veronica, Dalina and Wallies..."

With Zhang Tie's introduction, the other women watched Zhang Tie like having caught a love affair stealthily...

"Hmm, I need some female assistants. When I disembark, I will have people ask whether they would like to work for Navyblue Castle Bussiness Group or not!" Ms. Olina answered.

"Neither let them know that I'm helping them nor have them involved in a complex circle. As they live in Sinaira, just give them better jobs with higher treatment..." Zhang Tie hurriedly "rectified" his intention in case of being mistaken. If the 3 girls knew that he was the very Peter, the lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness, everything would change; perhaps he would barely see any passion, naivety, romance and shyness from the 3 girls. However, for Zhang Tie, these qualities were most precious in this world. He didn't mean to occupy all of them. Therefore, he just wished them and himself to take this as a good memory.

"Hmm, Navyblue Castle Business Group has a branch in Sinaira Island. I will arrange it for them!" Ms. Olina immediately understood Zhang Tie's meaning as her eyes turned tender.

Actually, Zhang Tie could give them more than that. However, for some female students who had just graduated from school, they might not be able to bear some sudden surprises. It might not be good for their later development. They would not feel happy by having so many brilliant things suddenly.

For each one, the proper luck with some surprises was the best and the most suitable.

Numerous young people would like to seek for jobs in big business groups such as Navyblue Castle Business Group which could rank among top places in Ewentra Archipelago. It was many young graduates' dream to enter such great platform and enjoy



such good treatment.

...

When North Wind Fleet returned to Saint Herner Harbor, all the people in Saint Herner City, including those on the luxury cruise ships and deluxe yachts raised their heads and watched that object suspending in the air above Saint Herner Island with shocked looks.

It looked like an airship; however, it had no air sac. Additionally, it looked like a steel battleship in the air.

Because of that object, the entire Saint Herner Island was shocked...

After hearing the report, Zhang Tie and the other two elders walked out of the cabin of Snow Bramble. Standing on the deck, they glanced at that object.

The moment Zhang Tie saw that did he remember a thing that his elder brother told him——Taixia's Airboat!

...

# Chapter 742: An Encounter between Acquaintance

---

Even Zhang Tie, who had known airboats before, was shocked at the sight of it for the first time, not to mention those commoners.

Since the airboat appeared, there had been over 100 traffic accidents in the urban streets across Saint Herner City in the next few hours. The moment those drivers caught sight of such an object in the air, they became stunned. As a result, they crashed into neighboring cars.

The moment Zhang Tie's group went ashore had he received the report that Golden Roc Bank dispatched a knight and some major figures by an airboat to supervise the duel between North Wind Fleet of Ice and Snow Wilderness and the allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago for the sake of the fairness of the duel and the effective execution of the agreement after the duel.

Holy sheer terror!

At this moment, the power of Golden Roc Bank was well displayed while the airboat suspending above Saint Herner Island became the best showcase of the wealth and background of Golden Roc Bank.

Soon after Zhang Tie returned to Navyblue Castle, Connar, the head of Rainald Clan, Brightman, the head of Willies Clan and all the representatives of major clans across Ewentra Archipelago had converged in Navyblue Castle once again.

Previously, as Zhang Tie didn't come back, Golden Roc Bank didn't arrange the communication between all parties; after Zhang Tie returned, in order to display Golden Roc Bank's impartial stance, the airboat landed as the big figures in the airboat would meet both parties on behalf of Golden Roc Bank.

In order to welcome all the parties, Navyblue Castle prepared a

grand banquet tonight.

When the dusk almost arrived, under the gaze of all the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago and all the big figures of tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness, that airboat slowly descended.

Everyone, including Zhang Tie, were raising their heads and watching that airboat descending slowly with all sorts of shocking eyes on the side of the airship base outside Navyblue Castle.

When the airboat was in the air, it made people on the ground less suppressive. However, when it slowly descended and showcased its complete body to the public, many people on the ground felt breathless.

Superficially, that airboat was completely like a steel battleship which was longer than 200 m. How magnificent it was!

With a raising, grim golden roc's head, the airboat's 4 sharp and beautiful streamlined waistlines and 2 wings were covered with golden plume-shaped grains. Like the relief "four-winged golden roc" of Golden Roc Bank, it was so brilliant that it made people dumbfounded. Meanwhile, it made people greatly depressed like the entire heaven was covered. At the bottom of the airboat were auspicious blue and white clouds which were featured by Chinese characters.

The airboat slowly descended silently like a stick of light plume.

"How powerful are Hua people!" Elder Gouras who was standing on Zhang Tie's side was shocked by that airboat.

"In front of such a giant, any airship is just a balloon. This airboat can destroy any kind of airships only by hitting them without having to use any weapons." Elder Turin let out a faint sigh.

In this age, the main raw material of airships, even battle airships was light wood. Even though the armors on the air sacs of hard airships could only be defensive to common bolts and light ballistas outside a certain distance. However, any airship was just

like a balloon in front of steel spike.

All the onlookers showed an awe-stricken look, including Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie was more proud of being a Hua people.

The airboat suspended when it was about 2 m above the ground. Under the illuminance of a lot of fluorescent lamps, the entire airboat became still. Closely after that, a metal hatch door slowly opened outward and finally landed on the ground, providing a ramp for passengers to disembark.

Zhang Tie walked over there firstly, followed by many big figures of Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago. In such a case, of course, Zhang Tie walked ahead of all of them.

Xu Tao, the manager of Golden Roc Bank's branch in Eschyle City, who had met Zhang Tie twice appeared at the hatch door and walked downstairs firstly while being followed by a Hua woman who was wearing a set of brilliant female armor and carrying a pair of swords on her back.

At the sight of that woman, besides widely opening his eyes, Zhang Tie was shocked because he felt a familiar sense——Knight!

That woman was a knight. It was Zhang Tie's first time to see a female knight; precisely, a female Hua knight.

Besides long, beautiful hair, she looked as tranquil as water with slim eyebrows, raised nose and a hot figure. Her age was unidentifiable. She might be at her 40s or 30s like Ms. Olina. She might also be several times elder than Olina. Knights could live as long as 400 years. As long as one promoted to a knight, one's physical functions would be activated completely. Knights would grow old very slowly. If that knight paid attention to daily maintenance using some rarities, her real age would be unidentifiable. Therefore, although she looked about 30 or 40 years old, that woman might actually be 130 years old or 240 years old.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to see a female Hua knight. Therefore, he couldn't help but gaze at her for a longer time. The female knight sensed it as she also threw a glance at Zhang Tie. The moment she caught sight of Zhang Tie, the female knight's eyes gleamed instantly. However, when she found that Zhang Tie moved his eyes onto her breast and stared at it for a short while, she became furious.

'Huge boobs. Additionally, they look very elastic.' Zhang Tie commented. When he moved his eyes back, Zhang Tie sensed the female knight's killing qi. Zhang Tie then felt a bit embarrassed as he transferred his eyes onto that person behind the female knight.

The one behind the female knight was an odd-looking man at his 60s in a cyan Hua robe. Zhang Tie noticed that the sleeves of the old man were embroidered with three ancient Hua coins which were round outside and square inside. Given his qi field, Zhang Tie knew that he was definitely a big figure in Golden Roc Bank.

The old man was followed by some retainers.

Zhang Tie then moved his eyes back from the hatch door. Closely after that, Zhang Tie saw a very familiar face that he could never imagine among the retainers.

That face looked a bit rounder after such a few years. It indicated that that guy lived well these years. However, no matter what, Zhang Tie could still identify the extremely familiar crafty and dreadful look.

In the clothes of the retainers of Golden Roc Bank, Donder looked forward seriously. However, when he caught sight of Zhang Tie, he rapidly blinked towards Zhang Tie.

'F\*ck!' Zhang Tie almost sprung up.

'How could Donder be here? How could he stay with the people of Golden Roc Bank? Additionally, that guy blinked towards me just now. Obviously, he had identified me. No way! Even Huaiyuan

Palace don't know about my real status, how come Donder know that?'

A series of questions occurred to Zhang Tie's mind. Zhang Tie became puzzled immediately.

"Your Excellency, this is Gongsun Liniang, the knight who's responsible for the execution of the agreement of this gamble on behalf of Golden Roc Bank..." Zhang Tie recovered his composure instantly when he heard Manager Xu Tao's introduction.

Besides Zhang Tie and the other two elders, all the others were shocked when they knew this beautiful Hua woman carrying double swords was a powerful knight.

All the rustics from Ewentra Archipelago were shocked so much that their mouths were widely opened. The heads of tribes from Ice and Snow Wilderness also popped out their eyes as they shrugged. A female knight, with her powerful qi field, made all the men below knights tongue-tied.

Zhang Tie cupped one hand with the other as all the other people around him made the same hand gesture towards Zhang Tie——Shaking hands was the greeting rite of Hebrews while cupping hands was the greeting rite of Hua people.

After throwing a faint glance at everyone else, Gongsun Liniang cupped her hands towards all the others.

"This is Guan Xiyi, the CEO of Golden Roc Bank who's responsible for all the affairs across Waii Sub-continent!"

Zhang Tie cupped his hands once again.

Compared to Gongsun Liniang's cold look, Guan Xiyi's smile was more comfortable when he cupped towards Zhang Tie's party.

Seeing such a big figure, all the representatives of major clans across Ewentra Archipelago looked honorable.

Manager Xu Tao then introduced all the major figures across Ice

and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago to that female knight and the CEO of Golden Roc Bank.

After this process, Zhang Tie welcomed the group of people of Golden Roc Bank into Navyblue Castle.

On the way, Zhang Tie peered at Donder in the retinue of Golden Roc Bank, who looked less attractive. Zhang Tie then threw a glance at Manager Xu Tao, who revealed a profound smile towards Zhang Tie...

'F\*ck! How could Golden Roc Bank know my real status?' Zhang Tie was still puzzled by this question until now...

'However, I'm sure that this group of people of Golden Roc Bank is here for me, instead of the battle...'

Zhang Tie became very depressed about his secret being exposed.

# Chapter 743: Gold Power Law

---

The welcome banquet in Navyblue Castle lasted over 1 hour. Guan Xiyi, the CEO of Golden Roc Bank, Zhang Tie, Connar the head of Rainard Clan and Brightman the head of Willies Clan who represented the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago, exchanged their opinions kindly in the public. In this banquet, Golden Roc Bank showed its great decisiveness to be the warrantor of the performance of this agreement. At least Golden Roc Bank had performed fairly superficially. Because of this, the representatives of the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago grinned when they left Navyblue Castle. It seemed that they were destined to win this battle.

Tomorrow, Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago would dispatch 100 people respectively to embark on the airboat of Golden Roc Bank and supervise the combat situation.

Everything would be clear tomorrow.

Zhang Tie looked absent-minded as Donder's look always flashed across his mind.

At an interval, Zhang Tie drew Ms. Olina's hand to one side and whispered in her ears. Ms. Olina looked at Zhang Tie and then peered at Donder who was staying with a representative of a major clan from Ewentra Archipelago. After that, she faintly nodded.

The key figure in the entire banquet was Guan Xiyi, the CEO of Golden Roc Bank and that beautiful female knight called Gongsun Liniang. Besides, Golden Roc Bank had dozens of retinues. Besides some managers like Xu Tao were a bit eye-catching, all the other retinues were low-key. Therefore, just 10 minutes before the end of the banquet, Donder received a glass of wine from a waiter of Navyblue Castle. After noticing that brief note under the glass, he left the banquet silently.

When the entire banquet ended and all the people left Navyblue



Castle, Zhang Tie recovered his composure before returning to a backroom on the 2nd floor of Navyblue Castle.

After standing a few seconds in front of the door of that backroom, Zhang Tie took a deep breath and entered.

The moment he entered, Zhang Tie saw Donder enjoying drinks alone near the gradevin with a bit blush. All the glasses of quality wine collected by Ms. Olina had been taken out by this guy. Some were already empty.

'What a jerk!'

After walking over there, Zhang Tie took a glass and grabbed away that bottle of wine from Donder's hand. After making a full cup of wine for himself, Zhang Tie finished it up.

"Ahh, don't waste such a rarity. Such top crystal tequila should be tasted at least half a minute in the mouth before you swallow it down..." Donder shouted as he instantly grabbed away that bottle from Zhang Tie's hand. Closely after that, he directly had one mouth of it, some of which were even dropped back into the bottle. He then put down the bottle and watched Zhang Tie pleasantly while raising his eyebrows, "Heh heh, nobody will grab it from me now!"

'Jerk! He is still unchanged. He's still a miser and always likes to occupy good items in disgusting manners.'

Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "How did you know it was me?"

"Do you think that only I know the ear-identifying skill?" Donder sparkled his eyes, "We've already known your status when you showed your talent in Ice and Snow Wilderness for the first time!"

"Manager Xu Tao?" Zhang Tie realized it at once.

Donder nodded, "Previously, Manager Xu Tao didn't know that you were Zhang Tie. After he passed your message to Taixia Country, we discovered that you were Zhang Tie!"

"Ahh, no way!"

"Your 'mental arithmetic by abacus' helped me make a great meritorious deed. Previously, I was thinking about gifting you some wealth and a bright future when you came back to Taixia for me after a few years. Therefore, I handed your complete information to the organization when I came back to Taixia so that you could register there firstly. That information contained your earprint code!"

Zhang Tie knew what was an earprint code. When one observed an ear using the ear identifying skill, one would find distinctive features and structures displayed in different parts and regions of the ear, which could actually be depicted by certain numbers. After the numbers were connected, they would form one's earprint code. In the eyes of experts, as long as they could see the earprint code, they would be able to paint the ear for details. Each one's earprint was distinctive. The chance that two ears had the same earprint was dozens of times lower than that of two people with the same fingerprint.

Donder sighed, "Although you used disguising medicament when you came to Ice and Snow Wilderness for the first time, your ear features and structure remained unchanged. Hua people's earprints are different than that of non-Hua people on some key parts. Therefore, the moment Manager Xu Tao saw you, he had doubted that you might have another status. Manager Xu Tao then passed Peter Hamplester's earprint code back to the organization for further analysis and confirmation. After Peter Hamplester's earprint code was input into that huge set of difference engine of our organization, it only took the engine a couple of seconds to identify that Peter Hamplester was actually the teenager called Zhang Tie in Blackhot City..."

After hearing such a reply, Zhang Tie became wordless. He had not imagined that his real status had been exposed when he came to Ice and Snow Wilderness for the first time. He finally

understood what Donder had warned him before, "No matter how skilled the liar was, he could only cheat everyone at some time or someone at any time; however, he could never cheat everyone at any time."

Zhang Tie also sighed as he took out a bottle of wine from the gradevin. After opening it, he drank a short while like what Donder had just done.

Donder watched Zhang Tie's face seriously, "Hmm, you might have used some advanced disguising medicament which slightly adjusted your facial muscles and skeletons. Honestly, if I didn't watch you carefully, I might not be able to recognize you!"

After hearing Donder's words, Zhang Tie recovered a bit confidence. 'Thankfully, no matter how powerful was the organization on Donder's back, they could not know everything about me. They have not known that I've awakened my body-changing bloodline. This leaves a figleaf to me at least.'

"Is the organization on your back is Golden Roc Bank?" Zhang Tie asked Donder.

"Actually, Golden Roc Bank is just a part of our organization!"

Zhang Tie was stunned as he widened his eyes, "Then, what's the organization on your back?"

Watching Zhang Tie's dumbfounded look, Donder revealed an obscene smile. It seemed that he enjoyed Zhang Tie's current look, "Have you heard about the seven major sects of Taixia Country?"

"Seven major sects?" Zhang Tie was confused.

"Heavens Fortune Sect. Demon Killing Valley, Taiyi Fantasy Sect, Heavens Holding Pavilion, Gold Power Law, Jade Building and Immortal Penglai Realm. Golden Roc Bank and I both belong to Gold Power Law!"

'Gold Power Law? How domineering and rich! Compared to other sects which sound like artists, Gold Power Law is more like a

nouveau riche.'

"Is Gold Power Law very powerful?"

"I can only tell you that 20% of all the properties of Taixia Country are traded through Gold Power Law's business groups and banks."

'What?' Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth. Even in Jinyun Country and Norman Empire, an organization that could run 20% of the total properties of the country was already terrifying, not to mention that of the entire Taixia Country. Zhang Tie could not imagine how powerful was Gold Power Law. 'No wonder why they dared add the word Law behind Gold and Power, because the extreme strength was close to the law. When the wealth of an organization could reach a great degree, it would be close to the law.'

"What's your purpose here?"

"You should have guessed it!" Donder smiled as he took out a brochure and put it in front of Zhang Tie, "Take a look at the introduction of Gold Power Law and the rights and obligations of its members."

As there was no word on its cover, Zhang Tie skimmed over the contents of the brochure. Due to his powerful memory and browsing ability, Zhang Tie finished the brochure of over 30 pages in less than 2 minutes.

After skimming it over, Zhang Tie was really shocked as the power of Gold Power Law had been out of his imagination completely. 'The boss, also the big dragon head of Gold Power Law is the finance minister, one of the top 9 chancellors of Taixia Country, who's responsible for the finance and trade of the country. The objective of Gold Power Law was as follows: Increase national wealth and absorb foreign wealth. Zhang Tie faintly felt that royal households were on the back of Gold Power Law...

The entire Gold Power Law was divided into different levels, big dragon head, dragon head, mountain lord, token lord, CEO, manager, deacon and disciple, etc.. 22 levels in total. Besides the big dragon head, all the other levels were further divided into copper, silver and gold; additionally, its members were divided into visible and invisible ones. Those who were exposed to the public were visible members; by contrast, those who were not exposed to the public were invisible members and could only be known by some people in the organization.

What was amazing was that one could join the other organizations and sects even if one had joined Gold Power Sect. The members only needed to keep the secrets of Gold Power Law. Of course, if you couldn't keep the secrets, someone would be dispatched to "help" you keep them.

"What was your status in Blackhot City?" Zhang Tie asked Donder.

"Invisible silver disciple!"

"What about now?"

"Visible gold deacon!" Donder replied with a proud look. After all, his current position was benefited from that "mental arithmetic by abacus" gifted by Zhang Tie. Otherwise, even though having stayed in Blackhot City for so many years, he was at most a visible gold or invisible gold disciple.

"What would be my level if I joined your organization?"

"If you joined in, you would be invisible gold CEO and enjoy the same rights with CEO Guan Xiyi. The only difference was that Guan Xiyi is visible gold; however, you are invisible gold!"

"How many people among these arrivers know my real status?"

"Nobody else besides CEO Guan Xiyi and me! Manager Xu Tao provided some clues to the headquarter; however, the headquarter didn't give him the feedback. Therefore, he only knows that this

trip is related to you; however, he doesn't know your real status. Of course, if he sees those members in Huaiyuan Palace who have blood-ties with you, he may discover something about you. However, he will not expose your information to the public as the organization has forbidden it."

Donder's answer was out of Zhang Tie's imagination as he thought that at least Manager Xu Tao and Gongsun Liniang had known his secret.

"Can I join it?"

"Okay, it's up to you!" Donder replied casually as he rapidly grabbed back that brochure from Zhang Tie's hand. Closely after that, he started to dig his nostril like a ruffian, "If you really joined in, this father would have to bow to you. How uncomfortable it would be! If not for the public affair, this father would not come here!"

"Heh heh heh heh..." Zhang Tie smiled, "Stop, don't play this trick with me. I will consider it!"

"Alright. After the public affair, it comes to my private affair now!" Donder clapped as he revealed an obscene smile, "Erm, as you've promoted to a knight so fast, you must have your secret. I won't ask you about that. But you only need to help me a bit. After staying a few years in Taixia, I found some resources and have already promoted to LV 5; if I could be one level higher, I would have a greater physical strength. As you have so many women on your side, you must understand what I mean...look, can you help me promote to LV 6?"

"Hmm, it's easy. You could attempt to be struck by thunderbolt a few times. If not being killed, you might obtain some special ability. You might directly promote to a knight!" Zhang Tie replied seriously.

Donder watched Zhang Tie with a dubious look, "Really?"

"Of course? But before you go there, you'd better tell me about that. I would buy you some more insurance. You taught me that. Even locust's legs are flesh. I cannot waste this chance to make money from a dead man, right?"

Donder watched Zhang Tie while gritting his teeth, "You've got so many big beauties around you, don't you know how to respect the old? Have you forgotten how this father helped you before?"

Zhang Tie also stared at him, "You old jerk, do you think the surging points on your body is my lanterns? Do you think that I can light your surging points whenever I want? If you want to have a good physical strength, I have a recipe for you. Run 50 miles and do 10,000 push-ups per day and don't think about making love for 3 years. When you lose your weight, I'm sure you will be as ferocious as a tiger on the bed!"

The two people stared at each other for a couple of seconds.

"You jerk!"

They swore at the same time. Closely after that, they became stunned for a second and burst out into laughter...

Although so many years had passed, their friendship remained unchanged.

...

After accomplishing the task, Donder silently returned to the airboat which landed outside the Navyblue Castle.

'Now that even outsiders know my secret, I should find a proper time and chance to explain it to the elders in Huaiyuan Palace. If I kept covering it in this way, I would be blamed as being unable to identify who's closer to me.

After this event, Zhang Tie also understood one thing, some things in the world could not always be under control. Nobody in this world could have everything proceed according to his own will.

Similarly, those major clans of Ewentra Archipelago who expected that the result of the duel would proceed according to their will tomorrow might be disappointed.

...



# Chapter 744: An Encounter between Enemies

---

10 am, October 10th, 100 representatives from Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago respectively gathered on the airship base outside Navyblue Castle. They then embarked on the airboat of Golden Roc Bank with various moods.

Besides Zhang Tie and the two elders, the three heads of the wild bear tribe, fire bear tribe and sea bear tribe also joined in the side of Ice and Snow Wilderness. The sea bear Tribe arrived at Navyblue Castle yesterday, which indicated that the sea bear tribe, which had always been hesitating, finally fixed its stance in this crisis which was involved with the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness.

After Zhang Tie showed his battle force and gentle strength as a knight, the scale slowly tilted towards his side. Plus the sea bear tribe, Zhang Tie had 5 of the 8 bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness on his side—the huge bear tribe, iron bear tribe, wild bear tribe, fire bear tribe and sea bear tribe. Because of this, the heads of mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe who followed the mace muling of Sacred Light School and the other representatives of major clans of Ewentra Archipelago in the airboat looked embarrassed.

"Peh..." The old wild bear spat on the ground with a disdainful look at the sight of the three heads and the mace muling of Sacred Light School.

The mace muling of Sacred Light School watched Zhang Tie with a grim look. Given that Zhang Tie sunk his flagship to the bottom and the casual reply, of course, he didn't look good today.

Watching the mace muling's look, Elder Turin narrowed his eyes while bad-tempered Elder Gouras' battle qi almost boiled.

"Today, all the animosity and contradictions between the two parties will be handled by the two fleets. Everything depends on the result of this duel. After boarding the airboat, Golden Roc Bank expects you to not make any obsessive movements. Nobody in the airboat is allowed to find troubles!" Manager Xu Tao hurriedly stood in the middle of the lounge and clarified the rules so as to relieve the intense atmosphere.

"No problem. Our clans across Ewentra Archipelago will fully respect Golden Roc Bank's judgment on the result of this duel!" Connar, the head of Rainard Clan revealed a smile generously as he threw a glance towards Zhang Tie.

After promoting to a knight, Zhang Tie didn't pay attention to those who were below knight, especially among the opponents. Those who were below knights were as trivial as ants. Even though some of them were a bit powerful, they were still as weak as chicken or dogs. After calmly glancing over the heads of mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe, Zhang Tie finally focused on the face of mace muling of Sacred Light School.

The mace muling wore a whole set of the religious ceremonial robe which was as eye-catching as a peacock. His robe was embroidered with all sorts of patterns such as sun, moons and stars. Additionally, he wore a high golden religious crown which looked like a fish head with a golden mace in hand. It looked like that he was going to preach his religion.

"Was that you who found trouble in Ice and Snow Wilderness and instigated some idiots to plunder the Tribal Axis Railway?" Zhang Tie put it straight.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, everybody else became quiet.

"Ice and Snow Wilderness has been covered with evil and dark forces. As long as the sunshine can reach there, I will spread the halos of the God of Brilliance over there. I will lead people out of the dark!" The mace muling explained with a sacred look while he

raised his mace, "Peter, what you've done yesterday has offended the dignity of the God of Brilliance. As long as you could confess in front of the mace, the God of Brilliance will purify all of your guilts; otherwise, you will have to face the scorching copper pillars and sulfuric flames in the hell. You will wail mournfully in the hell for 10,000 years ."

Narrowing his eyes, Zhang Tie directly pointed at the mace muling with one finger while his tone grew sacred like making a judgment, "The God says you're the blasphemer. Your head will be chopped off today. Your fresh blood will spray over the waves of the ocean. Your blood and flesh will be the food of fishes and shrimps. What guilts you've made will be judged today!"

The mace muling of Sacred Light School instantly changed his face as he replied with a cold voice, "Is Ice and Snow Wilderness declaring war towards Sacred Light Empire?"

"The God says the entire north water would become the tombs of all those people who made evil things and profaned deity in the name of a deity. All the blasphemers will be cursed and punished by the deity after entering the north water. The deity will display his fury in the sea."

All the onlookers became silent, including the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago. The dialogue was the collision between Sacred Light School and Ancient God School. Religious conflicts and wars were cruelest and most terrible. Nobody dared involve themselves and their family members into religious wars.

"I'd like to see who will be the winner today and whom the ocean will lose its temper to!" The mace muling of Sacred Light School revealed a grim smile as he walked upstairs on the gangway with full confidence.

Zhang Tie also boarded the airboat from the other gangway.

Nobody would like to miss such a rare chance to witness a historical event by the airboat. Zhang Tie spared 10 people for both

Bell Clan and Fein Clan. Ten elites and major figures were elected respectively by the two heads and boarded the airboat...

Ms. Olina, Sabrina and the 6 women from Spencer Clan also followed Zhang Tie in.

All the major figures on Olina's side and Navyblue Castle Business Group were so excited about boarding this legendary airboat.

Zhang Tie was also full of curiosity as it was also his first time to board an airboat.

The inside of the airboat was really spacious. Due to the complex design of pipelines, turrets and waterproof cabins, even battleships' inside space was not spacious. However, the inside of this airboat was completely like a spacious theater and steel fortress. All the passengers were shocked. They just looked around out of curiosity. Golden Roc Bank might have known about the mentality of these people who boarded airboat for the first time. Therefore, they arranged for some people to show them around in the airboat, causing exclamations constantly.

Such an airboat was really much safer than airships. When they saw clouds moving outside, they realized that the airboat had already taken off. The whole process was quiet, comfortable and steady.

"How did it take off?" The old wild bear touched here and there before asking that question.

It was Donder who showed Zhang Tie's party around. Seeing that guy's solemn look, Zhang Tie felt very hilarious. 'Apparently, Golden Roc Bank arranged Donder to get close to me. From then on, nobody would doubt it even if someone found Donder being close to me later on.

"The airboat is driven by a special metal in the deep underground world which is called air-floating metal. All the resources of air-

floating metal are in the hand of the military and the royal households of Taixia Country!" Donder introduced seriously.

"Can we buy an airboat in Taixia?" The old wild bear asked while licking his lips.

"Of course you can. But it's strictly limited in Taixia. Only after meeting some conditions could you buy it!"

"What conditions?"

"Generally, positions above prefectural governors and commanding generals, titles of nobility above marquis, royal members and major chancellors are qualified to purchase it. Some airboats will be gifted by Emperor Xuanyuan in Taixia Country. As it's a symbol of honor, stricter requirements are made on common major clans!"

"How strict?"

"Only when those major clans paid the tax of more than 100 million gold coins per year consecutively for 20 years could they purchase airboats!" Donder replied seriously.

'What? After paying the tax of more than 100 million gold coins per year consecutively for 20 years? What the f\*ck! Even the total of revenue of the 8 bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness might not reach 100 million gold coins per year. However, in Taixia, this figure is just one year's amount of tax payment of certain major clans.' All the passengers became dumbfounded by the wealth and prosperity of Taixia Country.

Right then, exclamations also drifted from the party of Ewentra Archipelago. Someone might have asked the same question.

Zhang Tie knew that one of the purposes of this airboat was to have the wealthy and prosperous image of Taixia Country deeply rooted in the heart of those people from both Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago. It was a seed, which would sprout sooner or later.

The airboat flew much faster than airships. Only after a few minutes, it had already reached above the water where the two fleets were going to fight over 100 miles away in the west of Saint Herner Island...

# Chapter 745: Fire

---

The duel was arranged in the water which covered about 900 sq miles. Since this early morning, numerous cruise ships and yachts had followed the selected North Wind Fleet and the Rainard's clan fleet towards that water.

The water had been surrounded by buoys as the border. Besides the two parties' navy fleets which were going to attend the duel, no other ships even airships were allowed to enter this waters.

North Wind Fleet dispatched two battleships headed by Snow Bramble and four heavy cruisers, which accounted half of the total battle force of North Wind Fleet. Rainard Clan also dispatched 2 battleships and 4 heavy cruisers to participate in the duel. As for the loss of Rainard Clan in this duel, those major clans' representatives across Ewentra Archipelago expressed that they would provide the fund for Rainard Clan's fleet to recover its original battle force before the duel.

The rest navy ships of North Wind Fleet and the allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago would cruise around the water so as to maintain the order. They would sink any ships who dared enter the duel in the water.

Of course, the onlooking ships dared not break in the duel. They were all gathering about 2-3 miles away from the duel water. The rich passengers and onlookers climbed onto the masts or stood at high places. They directly took out high-performance telescopes and cameras and prepared to enjoy the big game.

The airboat of Golden Roc Bank was suspending about thousands meters high above the duel water.

With many people's exclamations, a huge cabin roof slowly slid off, exposing a patch of blue and vast sky. As a result, the enclosed cabin instantly became an exposed deck, which allowed people to watch downside through the windows on both sides of the deck.

Besides, a huge optical imaging device slowly rose up from the ground of the deck, which was about 5-6 m high. Like a multi-edge crystal pillar, it had many sides, which reflected the complete duel situation. It was much more advanced than the exclusive periscope of the captain. At least it was Zhang Tie's first time to see such a huge optical imaging device.

That huge optical imaging device was surrounded by rows of seats. Passengers could sit on the seats and watch the battle. Besides, there were some high-end drinks prepared by Golden Roc Bank. This was like a small amphitheater suspending in the air.

When the roof was opened, Gongsun Liniang the female knight of Golden Roc Bank had already released a water green enshrouding battle-qi. She directly suspended in the air and monitored the battle situation.

Guan Xiyi, the CEO of Golden Roc Bank and a group of retinues were also watching here.

The two fleets whose boilers had not died out were emitting a red flare respectively from the southwest and the northeast corners of the duel water, which indicated that they had already prepared for the duel.

All the onlookers held their breath when they saw two flares rising into the sky.

"Your Excellency, can we start now?" Manager Xu Tao asked Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie nodded while the other member of Golden Rob Bank who inquired about the opinion of the representative of Ewentra Archipelago also nodded towards Xu Tao. Xu Tao then nodded towards Guan Xiyi. Guan Xiyi also nodded towards Xu Tao.

Zhang Tie noticed a faint sneer on the face of mace muling of Sacred Light School when Connar nodded towards Zhang Tie with a genial look.



Zhang Tie also sneered as he really wanted to see their trump card.

The airship then emitted a red flare downwards...

When the flare touched the sea water, the two fleets moved. At the same time, dense smoke came out of their chimneys. Like full-armored cavalries on battle horses, the two fleets started to accelerate towards the opponent.

In such fixed water, the two fleets were both within the visible range of the opponent. Unless the opposing commander was an idiot or made major commanding mistakes, neither of the two fleets could grab the T-shaped formation.

Therefore, the two fleets directly surged towards each other at the beginning.

After a few minutes, when the two fleets were still 15,000 m away from each other, the main cannon on the flagship of Rainard Clan's fleet had smoked...

After a few seconds, one main cannon on Snow Bramble of North Wind Fleet also smoked...

After another a few seconds, two booms drifted to the airboat.

Almost at the same time, a high water column rose from the sea water over 70 m away from North Wind Fleet...

A couple of seconds later, the same kind of water column rose from the sea water over 100 m away from the fleet of Rainard Clan...

The moment they heard the booms, the onlookers had been boisterous—the duel finally breaks out.

Everyone on the airboat became intense...

"This is just a trial fire of the two fleets' main cannons. Through the trial fire, they could measure the point of fall and error of the trajectory. They will rectify the fire parameters. After the fire

parameters on the flagship are confirmed, they will pass the fire parameters to the other ships through lamplight signals. After adjusting their fire parameters, all the ships could fire at the same time!" Elder Turin whispered to Zhang Tie.

"Given the trial fire, it seems that Rainard Clan was in a dominant position. That fleet fired 4 seconds earlier than North Wind Fleet. Additionally, the first shell fell closer to the opponent!" Zhang Tie turned around.

"Yes. The comprehensive strength of the fleet of Ewentra Archipelago is indeed a bit greater than North Wind Fleet. We are not in the dominant position!" Elder Turin looked faintly gloomy.

"Don't worry. It's just the beginning!" Zhang Tie revealed a casual smile.

After the first round of trial fire, the representatives of major clans across Ewentra Archipelago also whispered to each other after seeing what happened through the imaging device. Connar, the head of Rainard Clan had revealed a faint smile. However, he still nodded towards Zhang Tie in a very gentle way, so did Zhang Tie.

After over 10 seconds, the two fleet started the first round of fire with the gap of 1 second...

At this moment, the booms which were much louder than before reverberated across the duel water. As the two fleets accelerated forward, they fired rapidly...

Within the first minute, the two fleet both finished 3 rounds of the salvo. In the first round, the fleet of Rainard Clan was 2 seconds earlier than that of North Wind Fleet. When the 2nd round of salvo started, the gap expanded to 4 seconds. When the 3rd round of salvo started, the gap increased to 6 seconds.

The shells fell on the water surrounding the opposing fleet, arousing huge water columns. Given the distribution of those

water columns, the commanders of the two fleets both focused their salvo on the opposing battleships. At such a critical moment, as long as they could destroy or disable one opposing battleship, they would have the scale tilt to their side.

Besides battle force, luck was also a very important factor for the two fleets. It seemed that North Wind Fleet had a good luck. In the 3rd round of salvo, a flame rose from the head of a heavy cruiser in the fleet of Rainard Clan.

Those on the side of Ice and Snow Wilderness cheered up at once in the airboat.

"Well done, North Wind Fleet..." The old wild bear shouted.

Unless a shell could hit the ammunition stowage of the battleship and arouse a big explosion or coincidentally fall onto the key parts near the propeller below the draft line of the battleship, it could never disable a battleship.

It seemed that the heavy cruiser's speed was not influenced. The optical imaging device directly targeted at that burning battleship and zoomed in. All the passengers on the airboat could see clearly that the sailors were rapidly putting out the fire so as to reduce the loss. In this critical moment, the fleet's loss controlling ability was also a key component of the battle force and viability of the fleet.

"North Wind Fleet is a respectable opponent!" Connar, the head of Rainard Clan talked to Zhang Tie with the same genial look.

"Connar doesn't seem to worry about that!" Zhang Tie smiled.

Connar blinked his eyes with the same faint smile, "It's just a start, isn't it?"

"Do you believe in luck, clan head Connar?"

"Luck is very important; however, the most important is the battle force!"

"A good start means a half success. Additionally, luck is a part of

the battle force. I feel that luck favors me today."

"Let's see it!"

...

Although they argued with each other on the airboat, the duel still didn't come to an end.

The loud booms were still reverberating in the water below.

After 3 minutes, the fleet of Rainard Clan finally showed its advantage in the battle force than North Wind Fleet. During the period, North Wind Fleet completed 9 rounds of salvos; however, Rainard Clan's fleet completed 10 rounds of salvos. In the 10th round of salvo, one shell precisely fell on the Snow Bramble battleship.

This time, all those on the side of Ewentra Archipelago cheered up.

...

The first battle lasted 15 minutes. After that, the two fleets both moved out of the opponent's fire range. During this period, North Wind Fleet was struck by 5 shells while Rainard Clan's fleet was struck by 4 shells. Both fleets' losses were not fatal.

After leaving the opponent's fire range, the two fleets changed their directions at the same time and prepared for the second battle...

In the second battle, North Wind Fleet struck the opponent by 7 shells while being struck by 6 shells. The middle main cannon of Snow Bramble was disabled while a battleship of the opponent caught a ferocious fire.

After the second battle, both parties gradually came into their own, causing a more miserable loss.

The two fleets changed their directions once again and fired the next round of battle. However, at this moment, the two battleships

in front of North Wind Fleet slowed down. The formation of the entire fleet was disrupted at once.

"What happened?" All the others sprung up from their seats intensely except for Zhang Tie...

"Zoom in the two battleships of North Wind Fleet!" CEO Guan Xiyi, who was always silent, opened his mouth at this moment.

Gradually, the Snow Bramble and the other battleship enlarged on the optical imaging device...

After seeing it clearly, everyone on the side of Ice and Snow Wilderness felt being struck by a lightning bolt.

Numerous 1-m wide pitch-dark starfish and conches were floating up from the seabed and were attaching to one side of the two battleships of North Wind Fleet. Besides slowing down, the two battleships started to tilt towards one side...

# Chapter 746: The Will of the God of Brilliance

---

In such a fierce duel, as long as one battleship lost its speed, even though it kept firing, it could be easily targeted.

The starfish was a mutated iron-magnetic species. As heavy as a rock, each of them could firmly attach to the metal bottom of ships. Generally, there were always sea creatures like starfish and conch at the bottoms of those big ships. However, at this moment, there were countless starfish and conchs over the bottoms and one side of the two battleships. As a result, the battleships increased their weight sharply, causing a greater resistance in seawater. Additionally, the two battleships faintly tilted. In this state, the battleships slowed down and had a poorer firing precision.

When the front 2 battleships slowed down, the other 4 cruisers behind them had to slow down too, causing a chaos in the formation of the entire fleet at once.

Nobody could imagine such an event before.

Gongsun Liniang had already rushed downside there as fast as a meteor and directly dove into the sea...

All the passengers of the airboat could see many sailors rushing to the decks and flushing off the starfish and conchs from the shells using water cannons. However, it seemed not to work. Because the starfish and conchs being flushed off only accounted a small part of the total amount of starfish and conchs. Actually, more starfish and conchs were attached to the bottoms where water cannons could not reach.

As a result, the speed of two battleships of North Wind Fleet gradually decreased from above 20 nautical miles per hour to about 10 nautical miles per hour.

Seeing this, not only people on the side of Ice and Snow

Wilderness sprung up, even the numerous onlookers outside the duel water were in an uproar. Due to the far distance and poor perspective, many people could not see the true situation facing North Wind Fleet. Therefore, they didn't know why the North Wind Fleet slowed down abruptly. This was nothing different than committing suicide.

When the North Wind Fleet slowed down, the fleet of Rainard Clan kept accelerating towards their opponent as heroic as cavalries on battle horses...

Starting from 15,000 m, the cannons of the two fleets roared once again. When the fleet of Rainard Clan got out of the firing range of North Wind Fleet, a sharp difference appeared between the two fleets——Rainard Clan's fleet was struck by 3 shells; however, North Wind Fleet was struck by 9 shells.

All the passengers on the airboat witnessed such a cruel outcome. The big fires on the two battleships seemed to predict the outcome of North Wind Fleet. Given such a situation, with 3 more rounds, the two battleships of North Wind Fleet would be disabled completely. They would be sent to the bottom sooner or later.

All the people on the side of Ice and Snow Wilderness were driven mad.

The old wild bear roared as he pointed at those guys on the side of Ewentra Archipelago and asked, "B\*stards, did you do that?"

"I don't know what you're talking about." Connar, the head of Rainard Clan replied calmly, "I could only command my fleet; instead of those sea creatures!"

After Connar expressed his stance, Gongsun Liniang, the female knight of Golden Roc Bank, had already flown out of the sea.

"Nobody is found at the seabed of the duel water." Gongsun Liniang said icily.

When the two fleets fired, Gongsun Liniang had already searched

over the water. However, she didn't find anybody else over there. It didn't mean that nobody found the trouble, though. As for such a vast ocean, if someone really hid underwater away from this narrow duel water, he would be hardly discovered by even 10 knights, not to mention Gongsun Liniang herself. If someone really hid there, he might be a marine animal controller now that he could drive these marine creatures. Given such one's diving skill, viability and hiding ability underwater, this one must be a rare master among animal controllers. He could even order these marine creatures to make aggressive behaviors from hundreds of miles away.

Of course, this was just a possibility. As no evidence was discovered, it was not persuasive.

Elder Turin stood up with a grim look, "This duel has already lost its fairness and justice. I request Golden Roc Bank to terminate this duel!"

"I disagree!" A representative of a major clan on the side of Ewentra Archipelago stood up, "By far, there's no evidence of unfairness!"

"What's wrong with those starfish and conchs?"

"Only the sea would answer you!" That representative replied calmly as he bowed towards Guan Xiyi, "According to the agreement, neither of the two fleets are allowed to leave the water since it starts unless someone who has nothing to do with the two fleets appears in the duel and attack one party's fleet. Only in that situation could the very party proposed to terminate the duel. Otherwise, the two fleets have to fight to the end. Although some interference happened, the interferences were just some marine creatures, instead of the crew of our party. These marine creatures are not exclusive to Ewentra Archipelago. They belong to force majeure. Therefore, Ewentra Archipelago doesn't have to take the responsibility for it. Neither does the opponent have the right to exterminate this duel due to this reason. Otherwise, it would



violate the spirit of the contract which we commonly respect. The spirit of the contract is the foundation of the prosperity of Ewentra Archipelago and the guarantee of the creditability of all parties. As the supervisor of this duel and the warrantor of the implementation of this contract, Golden Roc Bank should maintain the sacredness of the contract."

When that representative stood up and spoke, Donder, who always served the side of Ice and Snow Wilderness, silently displayed his palm in front of Zhang Tie as he took the glass. There was a line of words in his palm——As long as you have any request, we will be able to make another emergency to terminate this duel.

After reading it, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Donder and kept silent.

After saying that, the representative sat down. Everybody on the airboat then moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie remained calm as he watched Connar, the head of Rainard Clan and asked, "Do that guy's words represent the opinion of all the clans across Ewentra Archipelago?"

"The life of Ewentra Archipelago lies in the prosperity of commerce while the life of commercial prosperity lies in the spirit of the contract. I don't know whether it is like this in other places; in Ewentra Archipelago, as long as one contract is established, the contract would be most sacred. I'm very sorry for the emergency facing North Wind Fleet. However, the influence of marine creatures in North Wind Fleet indeed belongs to force majeure. Therefore, it's still fair. Ewentra Archipelago's choice implies with our contract!" Connar's eyes sparkled.

"Spirit of the contract? I like this opinion. Just keep it going. I indeed "admire" your "respect" to the contract..." Zhang Tie smiled as he accented the two words "respect" and "admire", making the representatives of the major clans from Ewentra Archipelago twist their bodies restlessly, "But do you know what is the real force

majeure?"

All the representatives of major clans from Ewentra Archipelago exchanged glances with each other as they were confused about Zhang Tie's meaning.

"Only the will of the God of Brilliance is the real force majeure!" The mace muling of Sacred Light School raised his scepter as he rushed to answer Zhang Tie's question, "You're still not too late to confess under my mace. The God of Brilliance has already displayed its will through the ocean. This is a warning, also your last chance!"

Zhang Tie threw a scornful glance towards that mace muling of Sacred Light School like watching a lump of shit being wrapped by brilliant silk, "Do you know why I didn't ask your name until now? Because all those blasphemers are worms on sacrificial altar in my eyes. They are not worthy enough for me to know their names!"

"You..." The mace muling of Sacred Light School was so furious that his face turned red. Gongsun Liniang threw a glance at him with narrow eyes. He then panted and glared at Zhang Tie, "I will see how long you can stand!"

Zhang Tie stood up. Looking up at the sky, he closed his eyes and stretched out his hands with sacred brilliance on his face like praying and embracing the endless void. At this moment, Zhang Tie uttered a magnificent sound, "Poseidon, I order you to display your will in a furious way in the name of the God of gods so that the blasphemers could see the true majesty of God and nonbelievers who only believe in money see the strength of the God..."

The moment Zhang Tie uttered this, all the representatives from both Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago watched Zhang Tie with a dumbfounded look—What does that mean? Could Peter order the sea god? Are you kidding me? Is he driven mad after seeing that North Wind Fleet is going to lose the battle?'

The mace muling of Sacred Light School fleered like watching a joke...

Donder revealed an unacceptable look. He had not imagined that this brat had mastered such a pretending talent only after a few years. 'Given his current pious and dignified look, he's completely different than the guy who felt guilty even by changing a new package for an old commodity...

Soon after Zhang Tie's words, a huge, terrifying shadow swam across the water...

...

# Chapter 747: Whip of the Fury

---

"F\*ck, this father chipped 2 million gold coins. What's wrong with North Wind Fleet?" The rich guy of Ewentra Archipelago who chipped 2 million gold coins in North Wind Fleet yesterday roared on the observation post of the luxury cruiser. Given the performance of North Wind Fleet, everyone knew that there was some emergency. However, due to the long distance and poorer visibility, this rich person could not see clearly what happened on the side which was closer to sea level. Therefore, he became very anxious.

Very few onlookers actually knew what happened. Some of them also caught sight of the huge iron-magnetic starfish on one side of the two battleships of North Wind Fleet; however, they only took in a deep breath.

"B\*stard!" That rich person on the observation post of that luxury cruiser forcefully threw his telescope into the sea while watching the flames and smoke on the two battleships.

It was a nice day. Under the bright sunshine, the sea water below the luxury cruiser looked crystal and blue. It was of a high visibility.

When he threw away that telescope, the rich person lowered his head and found that the sea water below the cruiser was a bit deeper than that just now. He thought it was the shadow of the clouds; however, he found no clouds when he looked up.

"What's wrong?"

When others paid attention to the duel water in the distance, that rich person glanced over seriously and found that this water was indeed a bit deeper than those in the surroundings. If he did not observe it seriously, he might not have recognized that. There seemed to be a huge shadow under the sea water.

All of a sudden, that rich person felt goosebumps all over while a sense of terror rushed to his skull from the sea water along the spine. He was frozen instantly while his face turned pale.

The shadow under the sea water was moving.

The front part of the shadow was like a cloud, which extended over 1 mile forward from the bottom of the luxury cruiser towards the deep water. The latter part of the shadow was still covering that water of that cruiser.

'This is not a shoal of fish as it is bigger and moving faster than the latter. Additionally, the shoal of fish always changes its shape during movement. However, that shadow is very large and moving as fast as a torpedo under seawater in a fixed shape. It's more like a moving mountain under the sea; instead of being a shoal of fish. However, mountain under the sea won't move. Therefore, that shadow must be something alive...'

'A living thing? Under the seawater? As large as a mountain?'

The moment this thought occurred to the rich person's mind, he froze and almost fell off the observation post.

Closely after that, the rich person shrieked miserably, "Move the ship, move the ship out of this water at full speed..."

Ocean was always mild; however, it would also become berserk sometimes. No matter what, this ocean was covered with a thick mysterious veil. Once this mysterious veil was exposed, the object behind the veil would bring people a sheer terror.

No matter what was that thing under the water, when it was large enough, it made everyone so scared and intend to escape away from it as far as possible.

When the rich person exclaimed, he slid off the mast and rushed towards the cab of the cruiser. As a result, the steward who was walking towards him with a glass of wine was knocked down, spraying the wine over the ground.

When that luxury cruiser turned around and started to escape at full speed, the North Wind Fleet in the duel water had to make a tragic choice—the four heavy cruisers started to leave the two battleships and accelerated towards the fleet of Rainard Clan.

Those who had experience in the sea warfare knew that North Wind fleet was going to create a chance for the two battleships to fire at the opponent in a short distance at the risk of losing the 4 heavy cruisers.

As long as the distance between battleships and target was less than 3 miles, the power, force of penetration and precision of shells would reach a new high. As a result, the battle would be extremely fierce. This was North Wind Fleet's only choice to have its main battleships offset the advantage of the opponent. Meanwhile, it meant that they had prepared for sacrificing their own vessels so as to attract the attention of the heavy cruisers of the opponent.

Fighters of North Wind Fleet were performing their promise to Zhang Tie at the risk of their lives—North Wind Fleet might not be the most excellent sailors; however, they are definitely the bravest sailors. North Wind Fleet could not ensure the victory of such a duel; however, it could ensure that each commissioned officer and soldier who participated in the duel would like to die for victory!

"Why?" A whiskered captain of a battleship of North Wind Fleet outside the duel water punched onto the diamond-shaped 1,000 mm-thick armor of the turret under the main cannon of the battleship, spraying blood all over...

All the commissioned officers and soldiers on the battleships of North Wind Fleet outside the ring dropped tears and wished to surge forward to replace their partners. They knew that they might lose the battle; however, they had not imagined that they would lose the battle in this way.

Those common soldiers and commissioned officers didn't know why so many huge iron-magnetic starfish appeared. But they were sure that it was a mean trap.

The airboat didn't send any signal to exterminate the duel, which meant this duel would continue.

...

On the airboat, watching Zhang Tie stretching his arms still, someone thought that Peters was driven mad due to the great stimulation. 'How could he order Poseidon to do something? Is he lunatic or wanting to exterminate this match in an expected way by pretending to be an idiot?'

The representatives of the major clans of Ewentra Archipelago were recalling that contract. They tried to remember whether there were some loopholes in the contract which could be used by Peter.

Zhang Tie remained still for 1 minute.

Even Ms. Olina watched Zhang Tie with a bit of sorrow.

With a glassy-eyed look, Elder Turin just glanced at that mace muling with a cold look.

Donder was also full of doubt. 'What the hell is this brat doing? Does he really think that he can change the situation just by pretending to be a jerk here? No way. Even if this brat has some precautions, he should at least have someone pass his message. Otherwise, his personal performance is nothing but a sh\*t. None of those at present are passing a message or sending a signal from Golden Roc Bank or Ice and Snow Wilderness. Is this boy playing telepathy?'

Donder moved his eyes on Guan Xiyi when he found the latter was just watching Zhang Tie with narrow eyes. 'It seems that Guan Xiyi is also confused about Zhang Tie's plan. Actually, Golden Roc Bank has precautions to exterminate this duel; however, the right

lies in Guan Xiyi's hand. Now that this brat doesn't need the help of Golden Roc Bank, Guan Xiyi kept silent. Therefore, we could only see what plan does this brat have.'

Gongsun Liniang had a despised perception of Zhang Tie. Given her look, she was obviously doubting, "How could such a rubbish guy become a knight?'

Among all the others at present, only Elder Gouras was still a bit confident about Zhang Tie, which didn't come from Zhang Tie, but from the prophecy of Pontiff Sarlin——Zhang Tie is the ruler of all the oceans in the world. How could such a person suffer a great loss in the north water of Blackson Humans Corridor?

'Pontiff Sarlin won't make a mistake!' Elder Goura tightly clutched his fist as he constantly implied himself, 'Pontiff won't make a mistake. Therefore, we will not lose this duel.'

"Ahh, what's that?' Old Bell's grandson shrieked while the eyes of all those at present moved back to the huge crystal optical imaging device on the airboat.

However, many people didn't see anything special.

"The shadow, the shadow under the sea water..." Old Bell's grandson shouted which aroused the attention of many people.

Right on the optical imaging device, they saw a huge, terrifying shadow moving towards the fleet of Rainard Fleet rapidly in the ocean.

The shadowy color was just a bit deeper than that of the sea water. Therefore, if not observed it closely, they could not notice it.

'Is that cloud's shadow?' The same thought occurred to many people's mind. It was really too huge that many people mistook it as a natural phenomenon at the sight of it.

"Zoom in..." Guan Xiyi uttered while the water where the fleet of Rainard Clan was gradually enlarged and became clear...



At this moment, Zhang Tie opened his eyes as he watched the representatives of the major clans of Ewentra Archipelago and said, "The whip of the fury of gods have already arrived!"

'What does that mean?'

Whereas, before the representatives of the major clans of Ewentra Archipelago realized that, an extremely terrifying black pillar rushed to the sky in a ground-breaking manner like a heaven pillar, causing an ear-deafening shrill shriek. When it reached over 1,000 m high above the seawater, it forcefully slashed towards one battleship of Rainard Clan's fleet like a flexible long whip when everyone widely opened their mouths...

The terrifying long whip moved so fast that the air above that water shrieked like a piece of cotton being torn apart, which was even louder and shriller than the booms of the salvos of the cannons of the two fleets and could be heard from over 100 miles away...

When a huge mass multiplied by a great speed, it would cause a terrifying, unimaginable destruction.

Almost nobody could see clearly what happened at that second. Everybody could only see a long whip slashing into the ocean, which caused a sea wave as high as dozens of meters rolling in all directions. The rest ships of Rainard Fleet were tossed high and fell down heavily. After that, they bumped helplessly like dinghies...

# Chapter 748: Force Majeure

---

The sudden terrorist attack was like spraying water over the burning oil, boiling up the entire duel water.

On those luxury cruisers and warships in the distance, even if those passengers and crew didn't use the telescope, they could see clearly the huge, black whip which was longer than 1,000 m. At first, it pointed towards the sky. Closely after that, it slashed down, arousing a huge wave of dozens of meters in height.

After falling down, the huge wave gradually faded when it reached miles away. However, the surging tide still bumped those luxury cruisers and warships.

In front of such a terrifying power, all the onlooker became dumbfounded. After that, all of them made the same reaction at the same time—escape away from that monster under the seawater as fast as possible.

Those onlooking deluxe yachts and warships were of different sizes. At this moment, they were escaping in all directions like tadpoles being frightened by crocodiles.

On the airboat, all the clan heads from Ice and Snow Wilderness and representatives of major clans from Ewentra Archipelago even CEO Guan Xiyi of Golden Roc Bank were stunned by what they saw. Connar, the face of the head of Rainard Clan turned pale. Meanwhile, he trembled all over. That mace muling of Sacred Light School widely opened his mouth, which could even hold a goose egg.

The huge shadow gradually showed its body out of seawater. Meanwhile, seawater flew off its body like a waterfall as it gradually raised as high as a mountain...

When that marine creature showed itself, Rainard Clan's fleet's nightmare didn't stop right away.

Before a heavy cruiser fell back onto the seawater, another extremely terrifying, long whip-like tentacle broke out of the seawater and rolled up that heavy cruiser. Closely after that, it directly threw that heavy cruiser over hundreds of meters away in the air like throwing its own toy...

Those on the airboat might not forget this scene for the rest of their lives——an over 10,000-ton heavy cruiser flew in the air, rolled and smashed onto the seawater over 1,000 m away. From then on, it didn't appear anymore...

All the sailors of the fleet of Rainard Clan cried due to despair.

In front of a monster, those onlooking deluxe yachts and civilian warships were fragile tadpoles while Rainard Clan's fleet was at most crayfish in front of a pre-historical crocodile.

That Rainard Clan's heavy cruiser being thrown away was lucky; because another two heavy cruisers were rolled up by that kind of terrifying tentacles and smashed against each other at the same time. The later two heavy cruisers were twisted at once. When they were raised up, the despaired sailors on the cruisers shrieked and hurriedly jumped into the sea.

The two twisted heavy cruisers were like an iron hammer and pontil in two hands. Closely after that, that hammer and that pontil were respectively smashed towards the rest battleship and heavy cruiser of Rainard Clan's fleet, causing a huge wave once again. When the huge wave relieved, everything came to an end. Rainard Clan's fleet had disappeared in the sea...

The whole process only took a couple of minutes.

Until then did that creature fully reveal its huge head which was as wide as 1,000 m like a hill.

Black body, monstrous, fiery, huge pupils, once being gazed by which, the crew members on the airboat would feel a great stress.

"Moo..." That creature uttered like blowing numerous huge

conchs on the sea at the same time. The loud sound caused seawater within hundreds of meters to jump like pearls in a jade plate and formed ripples.

That sound contained a bizarre strength. When it reached to the two battleships whose one side and bottom were covered with numerous starfish and conchs, those starfish and conchs hurriedly left the two battleships like receiving a dignified order...

When those starfish and conchs left the battleships of North Wind Fleet, a mysterious figure hiding in the seaweeds under the sea 7-8 miles away from the duel water was destroyed by the animal controlling method while his head exploded...

The bloody smell attracted the neighboring sharks. Only after a short while, that person had disappeared at the seabed.

...

"Poseidon...Poseidon's...pet..." A representative of a major clan on Ewentra Archipelago's side stammered while turning pale.

In Slavs' myth in the north water, the most powerful huge deep-sea monster was the pet of Poseidon, the sea god. Poseidon always rode this pet and cruised across all the waters. Whenever he reached a new water, he would display his dignity and order all the aquatic creatures by blowing the conch of sea god...

At this moment, all the representatives on Ewentra Archipelago's side became extremely flurried when they remembered what Zhang Tie said just now. Many people's calves were trembling. They dared not even watch Zhang Tie's face as Zhang Tie became dignified and sacred in the hearts of them.

"I'm so sorry about the accident facing the fleet of Ewentra Archipelago; however, marine creatures' influence towards Ewentra Archipelago belongs to force majeure. This will not break the fairness between two parties. Will Ewentra Archipelago continue to respect our spirit of contract?" Zhang Tie became

glassy-eyed as he asked in the expression similar to that of Connar.

Zhang Tie had displayed the so-called force majeure to everybody else!

With trembling pale lips, Connar looked around and found that all the representatives of Ewentra Archipelago were lowering their heads so as to avoid his gaze. At this moment, Connar realized how ridiculous and naive was what he had done. In front of this man, his tricks displayed nothing but his stupidity and shallow knowledge...

Connar thought, "Even if the entire allied fleet of Ewentra Archipelago expanded by 10 times, there's still a pile of building blocks floating on the sea, Do Ewentra Archipelago really expect to protect their interests and safety by a pile of toys?"

'Peh...' Connar forcefully swallowed his saliva...

Brightman, the head of Willies Clan in Gantiadu Island had already stood up and deeply bowed towards Zhang Tie. After that, he put his right fist onto his left chest, "Ewentra Archipelago will respect the sacred contract between us. From today on, the entire Ewentra Archipelago will be under the ruling of Peter Hamplester. You will be the only ruler of Ewentra Archipelago. I pledge to be loyal to Peter Hamplester on behalf of Willies Clan in Gantiadu Island!"

Closely after Brightman were the other clans' representatives of Ewentra Archipelago, who hurriedly stood up and expressed their stance, "On behalf of Gantis Clan..."

"On behalf of Sevey Clan..."

"On behalf of..."

If struggle became meaningless, no clan would be as silly as a mantis which ran towards the rolling wheels of vehicles. This was the survival of law of all the major clans of Ewentra Archipelago. With the protection of such a great man, it was actually good for

all the major clans of Ewentra Archipelago.

None of the representatives were idiots.

Connar, the head of Rainard Clan also stood up slowly, "On behalf of Rainard Clan in Akray Island, I pledge to be loyal to Peter Hamplester!"

At this moment, Connar finally understood why Peter selected his fleet to fight North Wind Fleet as it was a severe warning to Rainard Clan and the force on its back. 'Perhaps from the beginning, Peter had not planned to let Rainard Clan's fleet leave this water...'

After throwing a deep glance at Zhang Tie, Guan Xiyi's eyes flickered before he opened his mouth, " Now that both parties have no objection about the result of this duel, as the supervisor of this bet and the warrantor of the performance of this contract, Golden Roc Bank officially declares that Peter Hamplester and Ice and Snow Wilderness have become the winner of this duel. After that, Golden Roc Bank will continue to perform its duties and supervise both parties to fulfill the contract." Guan Xiyi then smiled at Zhang Tie, "Congratulations, Peter Hamplester, from now on, you will be the richest person in the entire north water of Waii Sub-continent. After deducting 0.5% of the 270 million gold coins that you won as the service charge, Golden Roc Bank will transfer the rest of money into your personal account. You can withdraw them from any branch of Golden Roc Bank on any continent. We can arrange a professional financial management team to serve you in the administration and use of such huge amount of money."

After hearing this, everyone on the airboat remembered that Peter Hamplester had taken his Tribal Axis Railway as a mortgage for this bet. Through this duel, Peter Hamplester still held the Tribal Axis Railway; besides, he made an additional enormous amount of money...

"Thanks!"

Soon after Zhang Tie's words, the mace muling of Sacred Light School noticed that Elder Turin and Elder Gouras threw malicious glances at him. Therefore, he instantly flew out of the airboat as fast as a meteor...

'You want to escape? No way!' Zhang Tie's eyes turned cold as he followed the mace muling out...

# Chapter 749: Killing the Mace Muling

---

Elder Turin and Elder Gouras also flew out of the airboat closely after Zhang Tie.

It seemed that mace muling had mastered a secret method to fly at a high speed. In a split second, he had reached 400-500 m away. Average knights could barely catch up with him; unfortunately, he encountered Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie had been noticing his movement. Therefore, the moment the mace muling moved had Zhang Tie moved as fast as him.

Holding the sword in his hand, Zhang Tie closely chased after that mace muling of Sacred Light School while his sword qi rushed to the sky and grew fiercer. When he narrowed the distance to less than 100 m, Zhang Tie wove his longsword while a sharp sword qi turned into dozens of sharp sword-shaped qi and flew towards the back of that mace muling, which directly blocked many directions around that person.

After feeling the power sword qi behind him, the mace muling had to change his direction. However, in such a split second, he was caught up by Zhang Tie, who had long prepared for that moment.

Zhang Tie directly accelerated and started the adventurous and cruel close combat while his longsword radiated the strong brilliance.

That mace muling of Sacred Light School greatly changed his face as he had not imagined that Zhang Tie could attack him so ferociously. For knights, the close combat was like a bayonet-charge. It was completely a match on strength, speed, defensive power, the power of battle qi, striking distance, perception and knight's consciousness on battle elements such as the relative relation between space and time. If any party made a mistake, he



would explode into pieces.

"Would Ice and Snow Wilderness fight Sacred Light Empire?" That mace muling shrieked with a solemn look when he responded to Zhang Tie's ferocious attack.

If his opponent was not Zhang Tie, that mace muling might be able to escape away; however, in front of Zhang Tie, who cultivated King Roc Sutra, he lost his advantage in speed.

After finding that Zhang Tie was not moving slower than him, that mace muling completely changed his face.

"What you've done in Ice and Snow Wilderness is no different than seeking for a war. Do you think that you can access to Ice and Snow Wilderness freely? From today on, the entire north waters will be the tomb of blasphemers like you!" Zhang Tie scolded as he kept releasing sword qi towards the mace muling.

At this moment, Elder Turin and Elder Gouras arrived. They didn't join the battle; instead, they just kept their eyes on Zhang Tie and the mace muling. When the two knights started the battle, the airboat had already retreated over 1 mile away. Gongsun Liniang was watching this battle without blinking her eyes above the airboat.

The words between Zhang Tie and that mace muling were transmitted to the airboat clearly.

"Attention, please. Golden Roc Bank will not interfere with the disputes between Ice and Snow Wilderness and Sacred Light Empire. Those who want to interfere with this dispute, please leave the airboat" Guan Xiyi glanced around and said faintly.

After hearing this, all those at present swore inside, 'Leave the airboat? What the f\*ck! The airboat is still in the air. Besides knights, who else could be able to leave it? All the knights are staying outside the airboat.'

However, more than 99% of those at present had witnessed a

battle between knights before.

Compared to the duel between two fleets, the fight between two knights was more intriguing.

Commoners could not see clearly the battle process in the distance. They could only sense two illuminating objects colliding with each other ferociously in the distance. When the two illuminating objects crashed, powerful, sharp sword qi and battle qi flew in all directions, all of those flying towards the airboat was blocked away by the female knight.

'What the hell! How could the aftermath of the battle reach beyond 1 mile?'

Everyone in the airboat was shocked by such a battle.

The heads of bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness and the representatives of major clans across Ewentra Archipelago were all fascinated by such a battle, 'Compared to steel and steam, this is the real top strength in this age.'

Watching the battle in the distance, Guan Xiyi's eyes flickered. Nobody knew what he was thinking about.

After experiencing the "life or death" duel with the demon knight, Zhang Tie had completely consolidated his knight's realm. Additionally, during this period, Zhang Tie didn't stop his cultivation. Although having not formed his earth chakra yet, Zhang Tie's cultivation base still improved a bit.

The mace muling was powerful. At least in Zhang Tie's knight's consciousness, this mace muling was a bit more powerful than Jaray, the No. 1 knight of Raymlan Empire. Zhang Tie made his conclusion from this mace muling's speed and responding ability in the air.

However, he was still unable to defeat Zhang Tie as Zhang Tie's strength was also in speed and responding ability. By contrast, that demon knight, who had been killed by Zhang Tie, was more

powerful and robust.

Perhaps having been used to the dignified and tricky life, this mace muling lacked rudeness a bit.

Rudeness could only be formed on the battlefield at the cost of countless blood and lives. It was the coagulation of arrogance, confidence, killing qi, fierce and powerful battle force.

All the knights were powerful. However, Zhang Tie felt that the most important spiritual quality of knights should be rudeness instead of power.

In others' eyes, Zhang Tie was very rude. Besides his powerful and sharp swordsmanship, Zhang Tie could attack his opponent through each part of his body. Sometimes, he could collide with others at a high speed...

Through constant collisions, the mace muling's battle qi gradually grew thinner and tumbled-down...

However, Zhang Tie's killing intent remained unchanged...

At the same time, the mace muling's face turned grimmer.

...

Seeing Zhang Tie slashing his longsword towards him, the mace muling of Sacred Light School suddenly clasped the blade using his hands at the risk of wounds as he shot his eye light towards Zhang Tie and roared, "Go die..."...

At the sight of this, Elder Turin and Elder Gouras changed their faces at the same time.

Right then, Zhang Tie felt something rushing into his mind and targeting at his mind sea. However, it was blocked by that shield incarnated by his god's rune "Fixing Soul" and disappeared immediately, leaving a bell ring reverberating in his mind.

Zhang Tie became shocked, 'Spiritual attack?'

Zhang Tie didn't stop his movement. He continued to push

forward his longsword and stabbed it into mace muling's body after breaking through the remaining protective battle qi.

"You..." The mace muling widely opened his eyes which seemed to say that he didn't believe that Zhang Tie was not influenced by his spiritual attack.

'No way, no way!' If he could, he really wanted to ask Zhang Tie about the reason...

However, Zhang Tie didn't spare any chance to him. He drew out the longsword and chopped off his head right away with a sparkling light...

Zhang Tie caught his head by another hand while the headless corpse of the mace muling dropped off. When it reached about 1,000 m above the sea level, a huge tentacle broke out of the water and rolled it into the bottomless mouth...

After that, the legendary marine lord, the pet of Poseidon raised his huge eyes and looked up into the sky. Closely after that, he slowly sank to the bottom and disappeared in the vision of the public.

With the mace muling's head in his hand, Zhang tie flew back to the airboat.

Watching Zhang Tie kill a knight of Sacred Light Empire within half an hour in front of the public, all the representatives of Ewentra Archipelago looked at Zhang Tie with an indescribable look, which contained too many things such as awe, shock, fear, excitement, worship, etc..

"Bang!" Zhang Tie threw that head with open eyes onto the ground, which rolled towards the feet of the heads of mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe.

The three guys were on the side of the representatives of Ewentra Archipelago. However, when the representatives of Ewentra Archipelago pledged to be loyal to Zhang Tie, the three guys

became isolated like dirt instantly. They just stood in the airboat in an embarrassed way. Even though they wanted to leave, they couldn't do it.

At this moment, watching the head in a brilliant fish-head hat rolling to the side of their feet, the three heads felt weak all over. They even had no ability to resist if Peter wanted to kill them.

"We..." The head of mountain bear tribe finally squeezed out a word.

However, Zhang Tie waved his hand to stop him.

"In front of the tomb outside Eschyle City where over 1.3 million Slavs are buried in. I've said that I will not have Slavs chop Slavs. Therefore, I will not kill you. After the airboat lands, you can leave for free. However, from today on, you [three tribes] are not allowed to be crowned with the name of bear tribes. Because you've betrayed the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness and all the Slavs instead of me. You are not qualified to use the totem and symbol of Ice and Snow Wilderness and Slavs as the name of your tribe..."

Under the disgusting gazes of other tribes' heads and retinues of Ice and Snow Wilderness, the three heads of bear tribes quivered...

# Chapter 750: If I Come

---

On October 12th, after having a crazy day in Saint Herner City, Zhang Tie and 1,000 people of Ice and Snow Wilderness boarded the airboat of Golden Roc Bank and passed through the demon north wind belt of Oro Strait, targeting for Eschyle City.

On that day, although it felt a bit cold, the entire Eschyle City held a carnival. All the residents of this city came out of their homes. Even the neighboring tribes and foreign immigrants poured into Eschyle City as they wanted to witness the dignified lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Since the result of the duel was transferred back, the entire Eschyle City had been boiling up. Peter Hamplester's reputation reached a new high.

Exterminating Demon Snake Island, having Poseidon's pet appear in the duel water, cleaning the fleet of Rainard Clan in a split second, conquering Ewentra Archipelago and chopping the mace muling of Sacred Light Empire, all the above were major events in the north waters and were extremely mysterious and legendary. Through mouth-to-mouth talk, it evolved into many versions. No matter which version it was, Peter Hamplester was always resplendent. In some versions, Peter Hamplester almost became the incarnation of God; especially the process of the appearance of the intriguing huge deep-sea monster was regarded as a sacred symbol and an indisputable god's manifestation.

After 5 years, when Zhang Tie reappeared in Ice and Snow Wilderness at this moment, his dignity and influence had reached a new high and shocked the entire north waters.

Although Zhang Tie's airboat had not arrived, this didn't weaken the onlookers' passion. Additionally, besides witnessing Zhang Tie, they also wanted to take a look at the legendary aircraft from Eastern Continent which passed through the devil north wind belt.

...

"It's time to establish a country!" Guan Xiyi told Zhang Tie as he pointed at the territory of Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago in front of a huge map in a room of the airboat, "The land area of Ice and Snow Wilderness covers more than 20 million sq mile; plus 10 million sq mile of water in Ewentra Archipelago, as long as you decide to establish a country, your country will cover 30 million sq mile which contains both water and land. Oro Strait will become the inland sea of your country. In a long period after Waii Sub-continent collapses, this territory will become the key tunnel that connects Eastern Continent and Western Continent. The value of Ice and Snow Wilderness will also stand out. Additionally, this territory can be a key base for humans to pin down demons on Waii Sub-continent! Based on the current situation, the relation between Ewentra Archipelago and Ice and Snow Wilderness has to be unified and administered by an alliance, administration or nation so as to make everything official."

It was a secret talk between Guan Xiyi and Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie had already joined Gold Power Law of Taixia Country and become an invisible gold CEO of Gold Power Law in Waii Sub-continent. Therefore, Guan Xiyi, as a visible CEO, became Zhang Tie's only contact person.

After joining God Power Law, Zhang Tie had to pass a period of probation, after which, Gold Power Law would open more secrets and resources to Zhang Tie. After joining this organization, the higher one's position was, the more one would know, the more resources one would be able to use and the more power one would have in the organization. In the words of Guan Xiyi, if one reached the level of mountain head, that person would have a great influence in position and energy in Taixia Country, not to mention Gold Power Law. If one wanted to reach higher levels, besides comprehensive strength, his contribution to Gold Power Law

would also be referred to. There were always many confidential organizational agendas in Gold Power Law, which determined many people and powers' life or death, rise or fall. Those who were able to push these agendas would gain according to contribution values. When one's contribution values reached a certain degree and other hard conditions were satisfied, that person's level in Gold Power Law would be raised.

Watching that huge map behind Guan Xiyi, Zhang Tie faintly nodded to Guan Xiyi's analysis. 'It's indeed the right moment for Ice and Snow Wilderness to establish a country. Elder Turin and Elder Gouras have implied it to me for many times these days. The heads of the wild bear tribe, fire bear tribe and sea bear tribe also implied almost the same thing to me. I have to integrate the power between Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago so as to have my followers being confident to face the increasingly more severe situation. The trouble and crisis caused by the mace muling of Sacred Light School in Ice and Snow Wilderness is the best warning. If Ice and Snow Wilderness was already a nation, the mace muling of Sacred Light School would not bring such a shock to the tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness, even if he was a knight. Because Ice and Snow Wilderness is not unified, that jerk found chances to make troubles in Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago. '

The nation was a barrier and fortress towards foreign forces and a set of stable profit distribution and guarantee system inwards.

'The current situation is as follows: outwards, Ice and Snow Wilderness faces the growing fierce battle flames across Blackhot Humans Corridor; inwards, Ice and Snow Wilderness faces the new development opportunities and the increasingly larger cake of interests due to the Tribal Axis Railway, a lot of immigrants and the improved survival conditions of Ice and Snow Wilderness. As a result, Ice and Snow Wilderness reaches a key cross.'

All the clans' heads and elders in Ice and Snow Wilderness had



figured this out.

"This time, my most important target is to integrate the strength between Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago!" Zhang Tie admitted frankly.

Zhang Tie didn't mention establishing a nation. It was acceptable for a knight to establish a nation though, actually, many nations across Blackson Humans Corridor didn't have knights at all. However, Zhang Tie didn't have such an ambition to establish a nation. So many people's belief in him became a heavy responsibility for Zhang Tie, which drove him to do something. When what he wanted to do became difficult, he might encounter powerful opponents at any time. Therefore, he had to handle them with tricks. This stimulated him to grow mature.

Zhang Tie didn't have the ambition to establish a nation; however, the reality forced him to display a great ambition. Because if he didn't have such an ambition, it was equal to sparing chances to other ambitious guys. Actually, many times, when you learned to do what you didn't want to do, you were growing mature.

Every time he came to Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie felt that he would grow mature a lot.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Guan Xiyi burst out into laughter, "I'm always curious that those major clans of Ewentra Archipelago actually have other solutions to deal with this conflict. However, it seems that their proposal of betting on the duel seems to be especially prepared for you. Through this bet on the duel, you could not only handle the problems facing Ewentra Archipelago instantly at the minimal price, but also handle the crisis facing Ice and Snow Wilderness at the minimal price when you put the Tribal Axis Railway as the mortgage. If this is a trick, it's really perfect. You alone have played it so well. How terrifying you are, young man!"

"Ho...ho...perhaps this is the so-called coincidence!" Zhang Tie put it off.

Actually, whether it's in Eastern Continent or Western Continent, there are some secret methods that could influence others' minds without being discovered. They could influence someone to do something in the unconsciousness according to the will of the caster..." Guan Xiyi explained faintly.

Zhang Tie was shocked; however, he still pretended to be innocent, "Ahh, is there such a secret method?"

"Affection Fascinating Valley, Bloody Soul Temple, Dream Stealing Sect, all of these marvelous sects from Eastern Continent have such secret methods!"

"Ahh, If I come to Eastern Continent, I will definitely pay a visit to the three sects for such secret methods. How amazing they are!"

Guan Xiyi revealed a benign smile...

Zhang Tie also replied with a smile...

The topic then came to an end. The two people had a privacy.

Since the beginning, Guan Xiyi didn't ask Zhang Tie how he could control that terrifying huge deep-sea monster. Neither did Zhang Tie explain it to him. Each person had his own secrets, especially knights.

At this moment, a faint knock drifted from outside. Xu Tao's voice sounded outside the backroom, "We're arriving at Eschyle City!"

Before the two people walked out of this room, Guan Xiyi told Zhang Tie, "If you want to establish a nation, the three bear tribes will be a trouble. If you did not handle them properly, you might have a big trouble later on!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "When I step into Eschyle City, the three bear tribes will not be any trouble anymore; instead, they will be

guilty!"

Guan Xiyi faintly frowned as he didn't know how Zhang Tie could be so confident.

...

After a few minutes, under the cheers and gazes of numerous people in Eschyle City, the airboat of Golden Roc Bank slowly landed on a large-scale airport outside Eschyle City.

When the cabin was put down, Zhang Tie appeared outside the hatch door firstly.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, the entire city burst out ground-breaking exclamations.

After waving towards them, Zhang Tie walked downwards along the gangway...

When Zhang Tie's feet touched the ground of Ice and Snow Wilderness once again, all the golden sea-buckthorn trees in the periphery of the entire airport, on the roadsides and in the wild of Eschyle City put forth blossoms at the same time ahead of the flowering phase...

The entire Eschyle City was like a dreamland in a split second...

The loud cheers and uproar slowly stopped while everyone was shocked by what they saw.

The followers of Ancient God School outside the airport, especially the earliest followers of Zhang Tie had burst out into tears due to extreme excitement. At the sight of Zhang Tie, all of them felt the real God descending as they all knelt down piously...

Someone started to recite the contents in "Book of Eternity". Gradually, the sound could be heard all over the Eschyle City as loud as thunderbolt...

"The God says, I stand among you in the face of a commoner. I am a member of you. The divinity is also in your hearts and in

everything else!"

"The God says, I will not manifest my dignity in terms of my throne. However, if I come, you will see it for sure. Because that's a marvel. Even grasses and woods will know it..."

...

Almost at the same time, all the golden sea-buckthorn trees' petals withered within the territory of the demon bear tribe, mountain bear tribe and black bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness...

# Chapter 751: The Power of Belief

---

On October 13th, only after less than 1 day in Eschyle City, Zhang Tie had already left for Gozdari Plain in the north once again along with all the representatives of Ewentra Archipelago and the heads, elders of all the bear tribes and priests of hierons of Ice and Snow Wilderness.

It could be said that all the big figures in the north waters of Blackson Humans Corridor were sitting in this exclusive luxury train.

Those who guarded this train on both sides were the cavalry regiment—Thor's Hammer, the most powerful force in Ice and Snow Wilderness. As the train set off, more than 7,000 strong xiphodons also started to move, causing a ground-breaking sound.

At this moment, even without the protection of Thor's Hammer, no force across Blackson Humans Corridor dared find this train any trouble. Because almost 6 knights from Ice and Snow Wilderness were on this train, which could scare anyone else.

After getting on the train, Zhang Tie relaxed himself in the luxury carriage after leaving the most important question to those clan heads, knights, priests of Ice and Snow Wilderness and those representatives of Ewentra Archipelago—How to establish the nation.

Zhang Tie clarified two principles about establishing the nation.

First, he would fulfill his promise to the major clans on Ewentra Archipelago. After establishing the nation, Ewentra Archipelago would have an autonomous parliament. The basic rights of major clans and the commercial prosperity and vitality on Ewentra Archipelago would be guaranteed.

Second, Ancient God Church would be the national religion of the new country and the largest religion in the north waters of

Blackson Humans Corridor. The new country would unify the state and the religion.

After posing the above two principles, Zhang Tie left the other questions to those people such as the garrison, taxation on Ewentra Archipelago, the adjustment of the trade relationship between Ewentra Archipelago and Ice and Snow Wilderness, the integration of the battle forces of both parties, the guarantee of the interests of all the tribes on Ice and Snow Wilderness and the manifestation of the rights of clan heads and elders in the new country...

As long as those people being involved with these topics reached their agreement, Zhang Tie would accept their consensus.

Everybody was clear that Zhang Tie had made a great sacrifice and concession to the reunification of the Slav tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness. In the eyes of all the Slavs, this was a great, brilliant decision. As for the two principles that Zhang Tie had posed, they were actually almost the established facts.

After the train set off for less than 5 minutes, even though it was a few carriages away, Zhang Tie could still hear the old wild bear roaring, "If all the bear tribes divide their own territory clearly, who will manage those small and medium-sized tribes on their territory?"

"Small and medium-sized tribes should have the right to free migration. They would be under the control of that bear tribe whose territory they entered!" Elder Rodolfo replied.

"If so, your iron bear tribe will have a great benefit. Because of the existence of the Tribal Axis Railway, most of the small and medium-sized tribes will choose to settle down near the railway. In this way, your power will expand greatly. By contrast, no small and medium-sized tribe would like to settle down in our sea bear tribe as we even lack food. If you have the right to manage those small and medium-sized tribes within your territory, we will be lagged far away by you in the future!" The head of Sea Bear Tribe

protested.

"Iron bear tribe always develops fast due to many reasons; instead of our right to manage small and medium-sized tribes. Even five fingers on a palm have different lengths, when do the tribes have the same strength?"

"Can we make a compromise? Fox and leopard tribes are not allowed to migrate without the consent of bear tribes whose territory they are in. Wolf, eagle and rat tribes have the freedom to migrate!" The head of fire bear tribe opened his mouth.

"This would cause a big chaos. As fox and leopard tribes are free in Ice and Snow Wilderness, bear tribes have no right to manage fox and leopard tribes. We cannot forbid them to migrate freely!"

"What else? Do we need to spare a territory for each tribe starting from rat tribes?"

"I disagree!" Elder Rodolfo protested, "Iron bear tribe has so many small and medium-sized tribes in its territory, what else do we have if each small and medium-sized tribe has one territory? As we all need to submit the same exit fee when we leave Eschyle City, why do we have different territories?"

"Don't distinguish territory then?" The head of fire bear tribe murmured.

"Without clear division of territory, how do our bear tribes protect our rights?" Some elders instantly protested.

...

In another carriage...

"Ms. Olina, through the negotiation of the major clans in Ewentra Archipelago, we decided to select you as the speaker of the autonomous parliament in Ewentra Archipelago. Please take our advice!"

"Yes, this position is very suitable for you, Ms. Olina!"

"Only when Ms. Olina takes this position will it be the largest guarantee for the interests of Ewentra Archipelago!"

Closely after that were the praises in unison...

...

Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile as he shook his head. Compared to the party of Ewentra Archipelago, the party of Ice and Snow Wilderness was in a chaos, which made Zhang Tie puzzled.

'Forget it, let them go and quarrel, as long as they could reach the conclusion.'

After putting his powerful knight's consciousness from all the carriages, Zhang Tie started to appreciate the scenery on both sides of the railway.

In each a few meters, a tall and strong fighter stood on both sides of the railway.

Compared to 5 years ago, Ice and Snow Wilderness had changed a lot.

Zhang Tie saw towns and villages and smoking plants on both sides of the railway after leaving Eschyle City. Many villages had roads while more vehicles were running on the road in the wild. It was prosperous everywhere, which could not be seen several years ago.

Watching the train passing by, many people waved their hands towards the train. Many of them knelt down on both sides of the railway and prayed piously.

Zhang Tie even saw the emblem of Ancient God Church on the roofs of the churches in those villages and towns.

Actually, Zhang Tie didn't know the emblem of Ancient God Church until yesterday. However, each time he saw it, Zhang Tie would look strange; because the emblem of Ancient God Church was square outside and round inside compared to the emblems of



other religions such as a cross. It looked like a copper coin in ancient Hua times. However, an ancient copper coin was round outside and square inside.

The emblem of Ancient God Church originated from the big stony tanks being used to store water when Zhang Tie manifested the God's will in the underground ruins. At first sight, it was absolutely the vertical view of a big stony tank. However, as an emblem of Ancient God Church, it was also granted with a sacred religious meaning like a cross.

——The round shape symbolizes each one's complete divinity while the square shape symbolizes that the divinity is indestructible. Additionally, the four corners of the square symbolizes the four sacred, brave deeds recorded in the "Book of Eternity", namely, one's sacred deed to himself; one's sacred deed to others; one's sacred deed to all the creatures in the world and one's sacred deed to the mother nature and the universe. The first sacred deed refers that one could completely abandon all the evil things; the second sacred deed indicates the perfection of righteousness; the third sacred deed implies the perfection of affection while the fourth sacred deed means the perfection of intelligence.

Even though the "Book of Eternity" was expressed by Zhang Tie orally, Zhang Tie was still dumbfounded by that pattern and its meaning. All this was "discovered" by his followers, who believed that everything that Zhang Tie did in the underground ruins contained fantastic meaning, including the 7 tanks being used to hold water. After their careful study around the clock, they finally "deciphered" the sacred code hidden in the big tanks. They were driven ecstatic like having discovered the truth.

As to why there were 7 big tanks instead of 6 or 8 or other numbers, in the eyes of the followers of Ancient God Church, this also contained a sacred meaning. Everyone believed that Zhang Tie was actually telling everybody else that the ancient god created

everything——because all the lives of pregnancy cycle were integral multiple of 7; for instance, mice's pregnancy cycle was 3 multiple of 7; rabbit's pregnancy cycle was 4 multiple of 7; cat's pregnancy cycle was 8 multiple of 7; dog's pregnancy cycle was 9 multiple of 7; lion's pregnancy cycle was 14 multiple of 7; human's pregnancy cycle was 40 multiple of 7. Humans had 7 holes on their face; ladybug had 7 spots on their back...

The ancient god created sound; therefore, music was composed of 7 musical notes...

The ancient god created colors; therefore rainbow had 7 colors...

The ancient god created everything; therefore, the periodic table of elements took 7 as a cycle...

After returning to Ice and Snow Wilderness this time, Zhang Tie sensed the terrible strength of that religious seed that he had sowed for the first time...

...

## Chapter 752: Better Men

---

After hearing the knocks from the door of the carriage, Zhang Tie moved his eyes away from the roof of a church in the distance.

Before any person came in, given the footsteps, Zhang Tie knew whom they were.

"Come in!" Zhang Tie said calmly.

Waajid, Zhang Tie's bodyguard, also a bear-killing fighter of the huge bear tribe, pushed open the door and took some guys in.

"Lord, I've brought them here!"

"Hmm, you can leave now!"

After receiving Zhang Tie's order, Waajid threw a glance at those guys as he seemed to warn them to be polite, before moving back quietly. After that, he closed the door.

Zhang Tie was familiar with those guys, those condemned criminals who were sent to Selnes Theater of Operations as cannon fodder—Hillman the old dog, Michelle the warehouse keeper, Figo the vet, Dinar the manager and Da Vinci, the broker of the slave trade in Stars Viewing City of Huaiyuan Prefecture.

Zhang Tie saved these guys in Selnes Theater of Operations and took them to Huaiyuan Prefecture and told them to execute a task with Da Vinci—buy a steamer ticket for those poor slaves and transport all of them to Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Over the past two years, they had been doing this. With the coordination of Spencer Clan, they had already transported more than 200,000 slaves to Ice and Snow Wilderness. Furthermore, they established 3 towns outside Eschyle City to hold those slaves.

After 2 years, all of these guys had changed. Hillman the old dog looked like a real businessman of a major clan; Michelle the warehouse keeper looked a bit more shrewd; Figo the vet looked as

tender as a real doctor; Dinar the manager looked a bit merciful while Da Vinci the broker in the slave trade in Stars Viewing City looked fat.

They all wore wholly new elegant clothes. When they entered the carriage, after knowing that Peter Hamplester was going to meet them, they all looked a bit restraint and scared. After all, there was such a great gap between them and Peter Hamplester in status. Peter Hamplester was the Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness. They had heard about the legends of this person on the first day they came to Ice and Snow Wilderness. By contrast, they were just small figures who worked with slaves. In their eyes, even the steward of Spencer Clan was a big figure, not to mention Peter Hamplester.

They wondered how Peter Hamplester knew their names and why would Peter Hamplester want to meet them.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, these guys were all shocked as they found that this Peter looked similar to Zhang Tie.

When the others still looked unbelievable, Hillman, who responded it firstly lowered his head and dared not see Zhang Tie's face any longer. The others also discovered something as they lowered their heads too. Da Vinci immediately changed his face. In a split second, his forehead had been covered with fine sweat beads.

They all understood what outcome they would face if small figures like them discovered something that they shouldn't have known.

"Take a seat..." Zhang Tie said kindly as he pointed at the two rows of luxury sofa inside the carriage.

After hearing Zhang Tie's raw voice, these guys' hearts palpitated at once. Hillman the old dog's lowered his head while Da Vinci almost fell down.

"You..." Figo the vet became stammered while being kicked

slightly by Dinar on his side. He then hurriedly shut up.

Sitting on the sofa in a restraint way, they all looked strange which contained both shock and fear. They dared never see Zhang Tie's face.

"I'm very satisfied with what you've done these couple of years!" Zhang Tie opened his mouth.

Although Zhang Tie was sitting still inside the carriage, his battle qi had already penetrated through the walls and deck and covered all the sounds and shocks inside the carriage. This was a usage of battle qi which could only be mastered by knights, also a practical skill being used to prevent eavesdropping during conversations.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, these guys didn't know what to say. Only Hillman the old dog sighed as he raised his head once again, "Your Excellency, we've not lived up to your expectation; perhaps this is the only thing we feel a bit proud of!"

"I heard you've changed a lot!"

"Actually, during the past two years, many people said we changed many slaves' lives; truthfully, we were changed by slaves!" Hillman watched Zhang Tie as he said, "Michelle married a girl who lost all of her family members in the war. He's now a police sergeant of a police station. He has become a father this year. Figo became a real vet; he teaches many students how to cure diseases for livestock and how to survive in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Dinar invented a senior papermaking technology with twigs and leaves of sea-buckthorn trees. He's now a boss of a factory with over 3,000 employees. In some harbor cities in the south of Blackson Humans Corridor, the name Da Vinci has become many slaves' hope to shake off pains!"

"What about you?"

After thinking for a second, Hillman replied, "Previously, my only target was to make money; however, now I find that there're

many other things that one desires for. When you walk in a small town, if all the residents that you see smiles towards you, appreciates and respects you, trusts you and watches you with their sparkling eyes, shakes your hands with warm, exciting and quivering hands, you will also change. Although it's good to have money; it's even better to be appreciated and respected by others!"

Zhang Tie knew that Hillman's words were true. When they took those slaves to Ice and Snow Wilderness by ship, they were actually changed by those slaves. These condemned criminals who were destined to be cannon fodder on the battlefield seemed to find back their lives as they entered another stage of life.

After Michelle, the former thief lord, became the police sergeant of a police station, all the thieves disappeared from the town. The security of the town almost became the model of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Figo the pervert reaper had become the most respectful vet in the places neighboring Eschyle City. Besides those slave students, many small and medium-sized tribes and villages dispatched young men to learn vet skills from him. Dinar, who survived on making and selling fake certificates and documents had also put his talent in the right place. The senior paper that he made with golden sea-buckthorn twigs and leaves were exported to Ewentra Archipelago and became the best printing paper for high-end commercial documents. Da Vinci founded two primary schools in those slave towns. Hillman the old dog who had almost made Cross Star Commercial Bank go bankrupt became the key person in the overall plan of slave redemption.

The redemption of those slaves and those righteous deeds made every one of them strive to be a better person.

Actually, anyone could become a better person as long as he wished to change.

Zhang Tie was very pleasant as he witnessed these people's change. Although these guys' quick development was out of Zhang Tie's imagination, they were doing something meaningful to the

final analysis.

"Hmm, we have no vet school in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Figo, do you wish to be the headmaster of the first vet school in Ice and Snow Wilderness?" Zhang Tie asked which shocked everyone else at present.

Figo raised his head immediately with an unbelievable look, "You won't kill us?"

"Killing is not the reward for those who are loyal to me! Additionally, you did pretty well, why would I kill you?" Zhang Tie blinked his eyes.

"Because..." Figo became silent at once.

"Because I look similar to someone that you know?" Zhang Tie smiled, "Do you think that one who took you out of Selnes Theater of Operations is that cruel and terrifying?"

'How could small figures still survive themselves after knowing this secret?' Hillman looked at Zhang Tie with a surprised expression.

"Perhaps, when you walk out of this carriage, you will forget about that secret completely!" Zhang Tie's voice became faintly penetrative.

Even senior hypnotism could help people forget about some specific memory, not to mention secret methods such as "Soul Forbidden Skill".

"Do...do I continue to do that?" Da Vinci stammered.

"Yes, you can. You can expand it but in a different way. You may have a better effect if you do this on behalf of the government!"

"On behalf of the government?" Da Vinci watched Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

"For instance, you can do that as a deputy director general of National Immigration Affairs Bureau!"

After hearing this, Da Vinci became thrilled as his face blushed at once.

Zhang Tie then moved his eyes on Dinar, "I was told that your paper has a good market. You can expand the production scale and employ more people. If you could have some more inventions, I would consider to grant you with the patent right!"

Dinar also became thrilled.

"What about me?" Michelle asked in a bashful way.

"Don't you think it's the greatest undertaking for a man to be a good father and a good husband?' Zhang Tie watched Michelle.

Michelle's face blushed at once.

"But if you had too many babies and could not feed them in the future with your salary, I have a position for you which has a high payment. You can consider it!"

"What position?"

"Senior security advisor of the police station of Eschyle City. This title allows you to feed more than 20 babies!"

"Ahh..." Michelle also became thrilled as his lips quivered. He didn't know what to say while his eyes became watery.

Zhang Tie looked at Hillman, "I have many things to deal with in Ice and Snow Wilderness. I need a steward now..."

Hillman instantly stood up as he bowed towards Zhang Tie deeply by putting his right hand on his left chest, which was both elegant and noble, "Your Majesty, it's my greatest honor to win your favor."

'Your Majesty?' After hearing this appellation, the others just watched Hillman with a dumbfounded look. Only Zhang Tie burst out into laughter, "What a cunning old dog! You really have a sharp observation..."

...



When they left the carriage, besides Hillman, all the others felt that something had disappeared from their mind. However, they couldn't remember what had disappeared. They were all very excited about having met Peter and longing for their bright future...

Hillman felt a bit strange; because since they left the carriage, given their tones and looks, all the others seemed to forget some things when they talked about Peter...

A sound appeared in Hillman's ears at this moment, "As my steward, you can know a bit more than the others. You will have a broader vision and become clearer about your own instance. Never let me down!"

Hillman's heart pounded as he bowed deeply towards the carriage once again...

# Chapter 753: Arrival

---

The xiphodons' clop broke the tranquil wild of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Being escorted by Thor's Hammer, Zhang Tie rode a tall and mighty xiphodon and looked around the familiar wild while feeling hot.

At this moment, with a wind blowing over his face, Zhang Tie seemed to see the cold, stubborn and beautiful face under the mask.

It only took Zhang Tie one day to arrive at the south of Ice and Snow Wilderness by xiphodon since he got off the train. All the golden sea-buckthorn trees in the south wild of Ice and Snow Wilderness blossomed at the same time. All the golden sea-buckthorn trees were greeting their creator, the Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness in their own pattern.

On the way, wherever Zhang Tie passed by the train, the roadside golden sea-buckthorn trees blossomed in advance like a carpet being paved with fresh flowers.

Needless to say, at the sight of such a scene, everyone knew that it indicated the arrival of the most sacred God's manifestation and the God.

Each mile northward, Zhang Tie's great reputation would spread to all directions with the sacred halos. People would come from all directions and gather on the roadside of the railway in order to look at this fairytale in the secular world even from afar. Even if they could not see Peter, they would also feel satisfied when they saw his train.

The elders, heads of tribes and priests were still quarreling and bargaining with each other in the carriages when the twilight of the reunification of Ice and Snow Wilderness had already illuminated the land and made numerous Slavs blood boiled.

Gangula and a team of the wild bear cavalries were riding xiphodons ahead as Zhang Tie's vanguard. They passed by some small tribes and villages. All the residents poured out of their tribes and villages. Many of them were kneeling down in the wild and watching the mighty xiphodon cavalries rolling over.

Even if some tribes and villages didn't know what happened these days, at the sight of Childe Gangula the mad dog of wild bear tribe acting as a vanguard ahead of the team, they would know that the one behind Gangula and the xiphodon cavalries of the wild bear tribe was unusual. It would not be so majestic even if the head of wild bear tribe arrived.

Those who didn't know what was happening were just watching aside while those influential ones such as heads of small and medium-sized tribes within 1,000 sq miles had been spirited in most brilliant and solemn clothes and converged in the grey eagle tribe with their most trustful subordinates in the most humble way.

When Gangula's banner was still over 20 miles away from the grey eagle tribe, the vedettes of the grey eagle tribe in mountains had already rushed back one after another. When he arrived at the periphery of the base of grey eagle tribe, he couldn't stand but shout, "They're arriving; they're arriving; they're just 30 miles away..."

"They're arriving; they're arriving; they're just 29 miles away..."

"They're arriving; they're arriving; they're just 28 miles away..."

The vedettes rushed into the grey eagle tribe one after another, boiling up all the people in the grey eagle tribe.

Meanwhile, some guys were as anxious as ants on a hot pan.

...

Soon after Setton walked out of the residence of O'Laura had a lot of guys swarmed up.

"What's that? Doesn't O'Laura wish to come out?" Elder Juventus, in a grand dress, was oozing sweat all over his forehead.

Setton just shook his head.

"What should we do then?" Elder Olier became flurried as he threw his glance at Elder Mocco.

Elder Mocco glanced at those big figures from all the other tribes, then the residence of O'Laura. Finally, he let out a sigh, "Let's go greet them. O'Laura could wait for that person here but we cannot!"

After hearing Elder Mocco's words, all those surrounding O'Laura's residence let out a sigh like being remitted from a punishment as they hurriedly nodded.

"Elder Mocco is right. If we also waited here, it'd be really impolite to our Lord!" The head of wind wolf tribe, an uncle of O'Laura, who came here first also uttered with a benign look, "As O'Laura's uncle, I saw her growing up. Perhaps, O'Laura is still a bit nervous at this moment, we'd better not force her to do that. I will have some of her female cousins accompany her here; just spare some free time for her!"

As the head of wind wolf tribe explained, he threw a glance at a noblewoman on his side. The woman then called three 16-20-years-old beautiful girls to enter O'Laura's residence.

Watching all these, although those people from small and medium-sized tribes remained silent, they despised it very much, '5 years ago, without Peter, the grey eagle tribe had long been annexed by the wind wolf tribe. You want to show your friendship to O'Laura now? When O'Laura was struggling in the grey eagle tribe, where were you?' But it was a marvelous world. If O'Laura didn't go to work as a rewarded hunter for money, she would not recognize Peter and would not have all these today. Perhaps, this was the God's will.

Although they were having all sorts of thoughts, nobody was stupid enough to mention what happened 5 years ago. Otherwise, the shameless affairs about Elder Juventus and Olier might be exposed, which would be too embarrassing in such a situation. If anyone dared to make others unhappy at this moment, he had to escape away from Ice and Snow Wilderness from then on.

"Whether do we need to...greet them...now?" Elder Juventus looked at them one after another with a poor expression. The one standing in front of Juventus was much nobler than him. He dared not offend these people even when he held immense power in the grey eagle tribe, not to mention now.

"Let's go!" Elder Mocco nodded as all the others rode on their own horses and rushed out of the grey eagle tribe.

...

O'Laura in a mask was watching that "eagle's eye" finger ring on her finger in the room. Since she put on this finger ring 5 years ago, this finger ring had not left her finger.

At this moment, a maid reported to her from her back. O'Laura turned around and saw her aunt and some female cousins walking into the room with a big smile.

Watching these relatives, O'Laura recovered her composure as she asked, "What are you here for?"

"We are here to help you!" That noblewoman twisted her butt over here.

"Help me?" O'Laura asked with an amazed voice behind the mask like having heard something ridiculous.

That noblewoman then revealed a thorough smile as she comforted O'Laura faintly, "Don't you know that the man's 9 women could never match you? The enchanting fox is a widow, who's destined to be that man's mistress in Ewentra Archipelago. Sabrina's dissolute personality had been spread across Ice and

Snow Wilderness before she met that man. The 6 woman of Spencer Clan stays with him just for the interests and political demand of the clan. Therefore, you will definitely become the first queen of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Woman's fight in the imperial harem of the king is as ferocious as that between men on the battlefield. You will meet many opponents in the future. You need cousins to help you. As they are from the same clan as you, they will not betray you. Having them on your side, they will become your eyes and ears; they will help you manage the imperial harem of Ice and Snow Wilderness and enable you to be the most powerful woman across Ice and Snow Wilderness!"

...

Gangula's team encountered those who came out of the grey eagle tribe to greet them from 10 miles away. Although Gangula looked docile in front of Zhang Tie, it didn't mean that he also treated these people kindly. At the sight of them, Gangula didn't get off the xiphodon; instead, he just looked down at these guys in the grand dress who were trying their best to make a bitter smile.

These people also looked at him in the same way as in usual days. Therefore, Gangula didn't pay attention to these people.

After looking around, Gangula frowned, "Where's O'Laura?"

"We...the head...feels uncomfortable!" After the three elders of the grey eagle tribe exchanged glances with each other, Elder Juventus plucked his courage to reply.

Gangula's face changed. However, after thinking about something, he bore it.

After exchanging glances with each other, those people confirmed their suspicion.

...

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie arrived with Thor's Hammer. Everybody here was shocked by the mighty Thor's Hammer. The

Thor's Hammer was once the most powerful Cavalries Group in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Now, after Zhang Tie, they looked as overwhelming as being capable of breaking everything in front of them.

The arrival of Thor's Hammer made the horses of those who welcomed Zhang Tie moved backward out of panic. Their owners could almost not control them.

Zhang Tie stopped 20 m away from those people. After glancing over them from his xiphodon, Zhang Tie saw many familiar faces, Elder Juventus, Elder Olier and Elder Mocco who once tortured him a lot, Nurdo and Salem were also behind the crowd, who dared not look into Zhang Tie's eyes out of awe. Besides, many of them were unfamiliar to Zhang Tie. However, Zhang Tie could probably judge their status from their costumes.

"Setton, you look darker!" Zhang Tie smiled at Setton.

After hearing Zhang Tie talking to him firstly, Setton instantly chested out as he smirked and didn't know what to say.

"Elder Mocco, you look more spirited!"

Elder Mocco put his right hand on his left chest with a smile.

After hearing Zhang Tie greeting Setton and Elder Mocco, numerous admirable eyes fell on the two guys.

"Where's O'Laura?" Zhang Tie asked Setton.

Setton just threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then understood that O'Laura remained unchanged.

"Well, we will talk later when we come back!" Zhang Tie watched those who greeted him and issued the order. Closely after that, he clamped the belly of the xiphodon by his legs and rushed towards the base of the grey eagle tribe.

In this case, it seemed that they could be satisfied only by Zhang Tie's one word. Those guys then chested out and rushed back

towards the base of grey eagle tribe together with Thor's Hammer.

When they reached less than 2 miles away from the base, Zhang Tie caught sight of O'Laura.

O'Laura in a mask was riding a Xiphodon which was gifted by him and looking in this direction on a green hill, skirt waving in the air.

Zhang Tie raised his hand while the entire Thor's Hammer stopped.

Zhang Tie and O'Laura then looked into each others' eyes for quite a while silently.

Zhang Tie's blood boiled as he felt that they had departed for 2 decades instead of 5 years.

How many 20 years does a person have?

In the entire north waters, Zhang Tie only had 2 women in his heart, namely Olina and O'Laura. The latter's unlucky bygones and sensitive and lonely heart under the camouflage of her icy and stubborn appearance made Zhang Tie's heart ache.

Everything came to an end at this moment.

O'Laura moved. She didn't move towards Zhang Tie; instead, she rushed towards the wild in the distance, closely followed by Zhang Tie.

Without receiving Zhang Tie's order, nobody dared to move. Until Zhang Tie disappeared in front of them did they exchange glances with each other.

"Ahem...ahem...everybody, go back to the base of grey eagle tribe!" Zhang Tie's bodyguard Roslav coughed faintly.

"Erm...is that okay...do we need to dispatch someone to protect them..." A head of a small tribe uttered.

"Do you think that a knight who killed a mace muling of Sacred Light Empire need any bodyguard?" Waajid replied faintly.



Everybody was shocked and remained silent...

...

When the two xiphodons kept running at full speed, Zhang Tie and O'Laura soon rushed into the wild over 30 miles away from the base of grey eagle tribe. Additionally, Zhang Tie gradually caught up with O'Laura.

As Zhang Tie whistled, O'Laura's xiphodon stopped right away, causing O'Laura to exclaim. Zhang Tie instantly flew off his xiphodon and hugged O'Laura. Closely after that, they rolled into the 1.7 m high brushwood in the wild. Zhang Tie then pressed O'Laura under his body.

O'Laura struggled and started to kick and punch Zhang Tie. However, Zhang Tie tightly hugged O'Laura.

"Do you know when I cultivated in the tower of time, I always thought about you? During that period, I even dreamed about being beaten by you like this!"

Closely after hearing Zhang Tie's words, O'Laura stopped. With undulating chest, she just gazed at Zhang Tie firmly.

Zhang Tie watched her eyes behind the mask and said, "You missed me for 5 years; however, I missed you for 20 years!"

This word completely broke O'Laura's icy mental defense line...

They just watched each other in this way...

Some liquid flew off O'Laura's cheeks. Zhang Tie slightly took off O'Laura's mask, exposing that cold, beautiful face which had been covered with tears.

"I'm telling you that from today on you don't need to wear this mask as nobody can dare harm you anymore!"

The metal mask changed into iron filings and fell off Zhang Tie's hand...

They started to kiss forcefully. It tasted a bit salty...

...

On October 25th, that luxury exclusive train drove into Gozidari Plain, causing all the golden sea-buckthorn trees to blossom across Gozidari Plain on the same day...

Two hours before they got off the train, a complete plan for establishing the nation was finally brought to Zhang Tie. After Zhang Tie read it, with a distant steam whistle, the train slowed down and finally arrived at the terminal station in the north of Tribal Axis Railway.

When Zhang Tie read the plan, all the heads, elders of tribes of Ice and Snow Wilderness and the representatives of major clans of Ewentra Archipelago stood in Zhang Tie's carriage with solemn looks. They focused on Zhang Tie and waited for this man to make the final decision.

In usual days, nobody could allow these people to stand still for 2 hours. However, at such a critical moment, nobody complained about that. Because the 2 hours determined the future of a nation and refreshed the history of north waters of Blackson Humans Corridor. It would turn on a wholly new page of Slavs' history.

It was a great honor for them to stand here and witness how all this happening.

Nobody would feel tired at this moment...

After the train stopped, Zhang Tie raised his head and rubbed his temple by one hand. Closely after that, he replied, "I agree!"

...

# Chapter 754: Sacred Iceland Kingdom

---

After hearing Zhang Tie's opinion, everyone in the carriage felt relieved.

In this plan, besides the autonomous parliament in Ewentra Archipelago which enjoyed a great autonomy, the bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness also had a great autonomy. In this situation, even though Zhang Tie was coronated, he still didn't have too many rights on the internal affairs of bear tribes such as human transfer right, military power, property right and arbitration, except for that of the huge bear tribe and iron bear tribe. The power over major issues of bear tribes was still in the hand of tribe's heads and elders.

This was the bottom line for the fire bear tribe, sea bear tribe and wild bear tribe to support Zhang Tie.

Spencer Clan of the iron bear tribe had a neutral attitude while Elder Gouras of the huge bear tribe was a bit radical, who was unsatisfied with the three bear tribes' conservative opinions. However, Elder Gouras knew that it was already great for the three bear tribes to admit Zhang Tie's authority and have them support Slavs' great undertaking of unification. Without Peter and Peter's unusual battle force and marvels, the three bear tribes would never make such a compromise.

Peter Hamplester had been more like the great image of Lord of Slavs in the prophecy of the great prophet pontiff. Any person or tribe would face a great stress if they stood opposite to Peter Hamplester.

However, the fire bear tribe, sea bear tribe and wild bear tribe made the compromise on certain conditions. This plan of establishing a nation was actually built on an exchange. They would support Zhang Tie to be the supreme ruler of Ice and Snow Wilderness; Zhang Tie would support them to consolidate their

ruling on their own tribes. In the frame of the unification of state and church, the heads of the three tribes requested Zhang Tie to bestow on them the title of the supreme priesthood of Ancient God Church in the territory of their own tribes. The knight elders of the three tribes would take this chance to join the "College of Elder Cardinals". The position of "College of Elder Cardinals" was equal to the combination between the cabinet and the tribal joint meeting of the new country, which was entitled to interfere with the major affairs of the entire country. The three tribes actually expanded their tribes' influence and deepened the basis of their heads' power by this chance.

This was a bald exchange.

Only the huge bear tribe supported and trusted Zhang Tie completely. The powerful and mysterious knowledge left by prophet pontiff Elzida to the huge bear tribe was also requested to be integrated into the inheritance system of Ancient God Church by the huge bear tribe. From today on, all the priests across Ice and Snow Wilderness could only gain the mysterious knowledge from priests. The Ancient God Church which only had an inheritance in religious creed before would have an established powerful mysterious knowledge inheritance system now. This was an almost unnecessary step for all the powerful religions in Black Iron Age.

In this age, if the clergies of a religion couldn't master a powerful, unique mysterious knowledge, such a religion would be considered as a heresy or an informal religion, which could only be used to cheat others in small places. Being basically different than various battle-qi oriented mysterious knowledge and battle skills systems, religious mysterious knowledge inheritance system included various spiritual-energy oriented mysterious knowledge and skills. Higher requirements were posed on the inheritance in such mysterious knowledge and skills with the religious background than that in battle skills.

Compared to the complex situation on the side of Ice and Snow Wilderness, the situation facing Ewentra Archipelago was simpler. At this moment, the representatives of major clans in Ewentra Archipelago had no good card to play in front of Zhang Tie. They were only concerned about two aspects in the nation establishing plan, namely the tax rate and the social status of the private army in each clan in Ewentra Archipelago after establishing the nation.

With Zhang Tie's consent, the two aspects were finally fixed through Ms. Olina's intermediate communication.

In the future, Ewentra Archipelago's scot would be unified. Additionally, the upper limit of the scot in Ewentra Archipelago should not exceed 80% of the average scot across Ewentra Archipelago. Furthermore, the private army and fleet of each clan would be adapted to the mixed fleet of Ewentra Archipelago. The nature of the fleet belonged to local armed garrisons, whose expenditure would be paid by each major clan. Besides, the commander of each local armed garrison would be nominated by each major clan and appointed by the autonomous parliament of Ewentra Archipelago. Usually, these armed garrisons could only be dispatched and commanded by the autonomous parliament of Ewentra Archipelago. During the wartime, especially when Ewentra Archipelago was invaded by demons, these armed garrisons would accept Zhang Tie's unified command.

Compared to the bear tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, the major clans in Ewentra Archipelago knew their own limitations. They knew that they were not qualified to pose any request about Ancient God Church to Zhang Tie.

The full name of the new nation was Sacred Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago United Kingdom, briefly, Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Ancient God Church would become the national religion of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. The pope of Ancient God Church and the King of the kingdom would be unified into a wholly new name tsar, which represented the inheritance of the

bloodline of the ancient god and the supreme ruler of Slavs.

Zhang Tie would become the first tsar of Slavs in Black Iron Age and rule the entire Sacred Iceland Kingdom and Ancient God Church.

These were the outlines and general contents of the plan. More details about the system would be further improved after Zhang Tie was coronated. Additionally, as of now, Zhang Tie hadn't posed the concrete division of priesthood in the Ancient God Church. As Ancient God Church was founded by Zhang Tie, only Zhang Tie could determine the division of priesthood inside the church.

After Zhang Tie replied "I agree", the heads and elders of fire bear tribe, sea bear tribe and wild bear tribe actually were a bit shocked as they thought that Zhang Tie would make some limitations on the autonomy of the three bear tribes in the plan. They had negotiated privately. If Zhang Tie was really dissatisfied with the plan, the three tribes could actually make some compromise on some aspect.

Nobody had imagined that Zhang Tie could agree with their plan so fast.

Many people were amazed by that.

Zhang Tie smiled towards the heads and elders of the three tribes and said, "Let's get off the train. Pontiff Sarlin might be waiting for us in the railway station!"

...

Pontiff Sarlin indeed had waited a long time in the railway station.

The moment Zhang Tie got off the train, he caught sight of the familiar face of Pontiff Sarlin. Although it had been 5 years, Pontiff Sarlin, who had been a knight, didn't change at all. His eyes were still as profound as the ocean which seemed to contain many secrets.

The platform of the railway station was refreshed. Bear-killing warriors were standing on the platforms solemnly in two rows. There was no fresh flower, no cheer in the station. In the unusual silence, everything looked magnificent and solemn.

O'Laura followed Zhang Tie off the train.

Sabrina walked into the team of the wild bear tribe; Ms. Olina also walked together with the representatives of major clans in Ewentra Archipelago. Only the glamorous O'Laura closely followed Zhang Tie.

This time, O'Laura was accompanied by Setton, her two maids and 10 strongest fighters of the grey eagle tribe and her four cousins. Zhang Tie didn't know why O'Laura brought her cousins here. Whatever, as long as she liked it. As O'Laura was going to live in Gozidari Plain, Zhang Tie thought that O'Laura would not feel lonely with some relatives and friends on her side.

Zhang Tie didn't have any impression of O'Laura's cousins during so many days on the train. However, O'Laura's uncle and aunt who ruled the wind wolf tribe of about 300,000 people deeply impressed Zhang Tie only with a short contact. O'Laura's uncle was shrewd while O'Laura's aunt was also a smart woman.

All of them were scared by that solemn atmosphere when they got off the train and remained silent.

"Why is it too quiet?" Pontiff Sarlin revealed a faint smile when Zhang Tie walked towards him, "Please forgive their silence. Because the entire huge bear tribe had been expecting for your arrival for hundreds of years. When such an expectation finally turned into reality, each one here couldn't cheer up. Because cheers mean pleasure. However, for each member of the huge bear tribe, this is not a pleasure, but a destined nirvana!"

It was Zhang Tie's first time to land on the territory of the huge bear tribe——Gozidari Plain. 5 years ago, even though Zhang Tie had become the leader of the huge bear tribe, he still had not been

to Gozidari Plain until he left Ice and Snow Wilderness.

"A destined nirvana!" Zhang Tie murmured as he sensed the deep meaning of this word. He then watched Pontiff Sarlin seriously, "Hopefully, I'm not late!"

Pontiff Sarlin replied with another faint smile as he stretched out his hand to invite Zhang Tie to mount a tall xiphodon...

...

After mounting a tall xiphodon, Zhang Tie left the railway station while being escorted by rows of cavalries of Thor's Hammer like a moon being circled by stars.

Both sides of the roads outside the railway station were crowded. However, nobody made any noise. Although tens of thousands of people gathered there, it was as tranquil as an open forest. Only xiphodon's tidy and crisp footsteps could be heard on the streets. When Zhang Tie went out of the railway station, wherever his xiphodon arrived, those people over there would kneel down like dominoes being pushed down.

In the crowd, Zhang Tie saw many people cupping cinerary caskets and their ancestors' portraits. Those people were witnessing the arrival of the Lord of Ice and Snow Wilderness with their ancestors' ashes and portraits.

"Dad, grandfather, the person that the great prophet pontiff predicted finally arrives. Look, this is your will. Today, your ashes could also return to the land in a tranquil way. This person will lead our tribe and all the Slavs towards a bright and powerful future!" A kneeling tall man was cupping high two cinerary caskets among the crowd, seemingly wanting the dead ones in the caskets to see Zhang Tie clearly.

With knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie clearly heard that person's words. Watching those onlookers of the huge bear tribe on both sides of the road who were welcoming him together with



the remains of their ancestors, Zhang Tie looked more solemn.

This trust was too heavy that Zhang Tie felt a bit of stress.

'Can I save all these people in this holy war?' Zhang Tie wondered.

However, he would live up to these people's trust in him on this land.

Zhang Tie made a decision inside.

A prosperous town came into being around the railway station. The town was covered with high warehouses and commodities as high as hills, which indicated the great effect of Tribal Axis Railway to Gozidari Plain.

The two sides of the road as long as 40 miles had been crowded by solemn onlookers from the small town to the foot of the Elzida Mountain. Those people were standing in the wild and the farmland and watching Zhang Tie passing by.

It took Zhang Tie over 3 hours by xiphodon to finish the 40 mile's trip.

Right in the plain at the foot of Elzida Mountain, Zhang Tie caught sight of a magnificent hieron made of grey granites.

"This hieron is built by your followers. When in the great crack of Haidela Glacier, you told each of your followers to exploit a piece of grey granite as heavy as 200 kg and carried it to the huge bear tribe after passing through thousands of miles of wild. It was a rigid test of one's physique, spirit, will and religion. Many people have made it. As of now, all the followers of Ancient God Church take this process as a journey towards pilgrimage which can check their own souls. After carrying dried rations and tools, those pious followers will head for the grey hill and exploit a piece of granite as heavy as 200 kg. After that, they will come here with that piece of granite. As a result, more and more granites will gather here. Your followers then build a magnificent hieron using those granites.

This hieron is called the grey palace, also the hardcore of Ancient God Church!"

Pontiff Sarlin's voice entered Zhang Tie's ears secretly.

In the square outside the grey palace, Zhang Tie saw many earliest followers who looked totally different than that 5 years ago. In grey robes, they were holding a "Book of Eternity" and waiting for Zhang Tie's arrival.

The huge stony tanks were still standing in the square. The rims of the huge tanks had long been smooth like having been polished carefully.

Of course, they were not polished by people purposely; instead, they were the traces left by the followers of Ancient God Church. As followers came here for pilgrimage every day, each of them would touch the rim of each huge tank so as to sense the power of the God. Gradually, the coarse rims became smooth and radiated a special brilliance.

The power of religion could create miracles.

At each sunset, the earliest batch of followers of Zhang Tie who hosted the grey palace would inject fresh water into the sacred tanks by solemn awareness. On the next day, those followers who came from afar would scoop and drink a cup of sacred water from the sacred tank when they observed and touched the sacred tanks in a queue.

The legend that the sacred water in the sacred tanks could cure diseases and clean souls and evils gradually spread across Ice and Snow Wilderness. More and more people who had tasted the sacred water declared that it carried an unimaginable power. As more and more people visited here, Ancient God Church became more and more well-known.

When Zhang Tie arrived at the grey palace, he saw many people who looked fatigued yet fortitude while moving towards here from

the plain in the distance with a heavy piece of grey granite on their back. Those people were queuing up miles long outside the square so as to drink a cup of sacred water.

If one wanted to drink a cup of sacred water, he had to queue up here one day earlier. Therefore, the team always remained so long. Even if one day's sacred water was used up, those people would still wait there until the next day.

Watching the scenes outside the grey palace and witnessing the power of the religion, those representatives of major clans of Ewentra Archipelago who worshipped money were shocked, the heads and elders of tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness were more dumbfounded as they saw three bare-chested guys confessing in front of the statue of the Ancient God Church with rods on their backs. They were heads of the demon bear tribe, black bear tribe and mountain bear tribe...

Bearing rods and willingly taking the punishment was a Hua tradition. However, in Black Iron Age, under the influence of the Hua people and the domineering right of speech on Hua culture, this tradition had long been spread to each corner of the world.

2 days ago, the heads of the three tribes had come to the grey palace while being escorted by their own elders and started to confess as guilty ones. They had already knelt down here for 2 days without eating or drinking.

Watching the 3 people kneeling down there, everybody knew that all the obstacles before the coronation of Peter Hamplester had been cleared.

Zhang Tie ignored them just like having seen nothing.

The heads of the three tribes dared not raise their heads to look at Zhang Tie at all. They just knelt down there like waiting for the punishment.

Pontiff Sarlin whispered to Zhang Tie.

After hearing it, Zhang Tie raised his eyebrows and faintly nodded.

In the grey palace, Zhang Tie formally met the earliest batch of followers. Although Zhang Tie just encouraged them simply, it made them extremely spirited.

"After 2 days, in the hieron of Elzida Mountain, I will formally be coronated, the Ancient God Church will become a wholly new national religion by then."

In the grey palace, Zhang Tie formally declared the shocking news to his earliest followers.

After that, they left the grey palace and went up the Elzida Mountain...

# Chapter 755: The Eve of Coronation (I)

---

On the evening of October 26th, Zhang Tie sat together with the three elders of the huge bear tribe once again after 5 years.

Since Zhang Tie arrived at Elzida Mountain yesterday, he had been meeting all sorts of people the entire day.

Those who came to see Zhang Tie were major figures below the three elders of the huge bear tribe, backbones of Ancient God Church and the three elders of the demon bear tribe, mountain bear tribe and black bear tribe.

It was a necessary step for Zhang Tie to be completely familiar with the huge bear tribe and turn Gozidari Plain into his own territory by meeting the major figures of the huge bear tribe.

Gozidari Plain was the basis for the huge bear tribe to be the most powerful tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

In Ice and Snow Wilderness, Gozidari Plain, which covered over 1.8 million sq mile, was a treasured place which contained rich water and plentiful resources. This treasured land bred the most powerful huge bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Now, this treasured place would become the most important foundation for Zhang Tie to ascend to the throne of Tsar. If he wanted to control this foundation, he could not only rely on the three elders. After all, the three elders could not determine all the things across Gozidari Plain. Those who mastered the real power in huge bear tribe below the three elders were the heads, generals and priests. Priests were noble in the huge bear tribe, who directly influenced and controlled over 70% of the population and economic resources of Gozidari Plain. It was of great importance for Zhang Tie to get their allegiance.

When Zhang Tie settled down at the foot of Elzida Mountain, these heads, generals and priests queued up outside the hieron to be called in by Zhang Tie.

In such a case, in order to display that he thought highly of the huge bear tribe, Zhang Tie promised that each of them had a chance to talk with Zhang Tie alone. In this way, Zhang Tie could have a deeper impression of these major figures. Meanwhile, those guys could also have a chance to express their allegiance to Zhang Tie.

With the super great memory of knight, as long as Zhang Tie met these guys, he would be able to bear their names, looks, abilities and features in mind completely. Additionally, Zhang Tie's majestic image and authority would root in these guys' hearts.

It only took Zhang Tie a couple of minutes to meet each of them. However, It took him over 10 hours to meet all the 100-odd people.

After then, Zhang Tie called in the backbones of Ancient God Church, who were Zhang Tie's die-hard fans and treated Zhang Tie as the Ancient God. Zhang Tie fixed the sacred orders and classes in Ancient God Church with them.

After that, Zhang Tie met the elders of the demon bear tribe, mountain bear tribe and black bear tribe.

Nobody knew what Zhang Tie talked with the three elders. After their talk, the heads of the three tribes who had been kneeling down in the grey palace finally gained Zhang Tie's forgiveness and picked themselves up from the ground in an embarrassed way one after another.

...

After the secret talk with the elders of the demon bear tribe, mountain bear tribe and black bear tribe, it was already the evening of October 26. Soon after the three elders left, Elder Gouras, Elder Toles and Pontiff Sarlin had already entered the room.

It was a study room being used for holding classics in the hieron of Elzida Mountain, which was solemn and mysterious. Usually,

the three elders of the huge bear tribe would negotiate about major issues here. After Zhang Tie arrived here, this place was used to receive guests for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie had been receiving all sorts of people around the clock. Therefore, when the three elders came in, they had waiters served some food and drinks.

Watching the food in the room, Zhang Tie made a bitter smile. Thanks to the three elders, otherwise, he had forgotten that he had not eaten for a day.

As a knight, he could not eat or drink for 1 week. However, due to the super great ability of knight, he also had a much greater appetite and demanded more food that could supply his physique and energy.

Now that they had served the food and drinks. Zhang Tie directly devoured them like a wolf. As he would be coronated tomorrow, Zhang Tie wanted to be in the optimal state.

After eating some exotic fruits, two pieces of bread and some sea-buckthorn wine which carried some aura, Zhang Tie finally stopped.

"Across the Ice and Snow Wilderness, the golden sea-buckthorn in Gozidari Plain is the best. Compared to that in other places, the golden sea-buckthorn wine in Gozidari Plain is worth 20 more silver coins per barrel!" Elder Toles opened his mouth when he saw that Zhang Tie stopped eating.

When Zhang Tie was enjoying the meal, the three elders were waiting silently on one side. Perhaps, nobody else across Ice and Snow Wilderness dared let the other knight elders watch him eating.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile to Elder Toles as he had not imagined that people in Ice and Snow Wilderness could rename his mutated iron-black sea-buckthorn as golden sea-buckthorn. In the lab of

Castle of Black Iron, for the convenience of classifying and differentiating these mutated plants from its biological families, Zhang Tie marked it as sea-buckthorn No. 1.

Although the seeds of the golden sea-buckthorn trees were gifted by Zhang Tie, the three elders had reached a privy and didn't ask Zhang Tie anything about the seed.

"This golden sea-buckthorn wine is indeed nice!" Zhang Tie nodded as he put down the glass and started to watch the three elders, "Coincidentally, as the three elders are here, I have something to tell you!"

After exchanging a glance with each other, Elder Gouras uttered, "We also have something to tell you!"

Zhang Tie acted in an easygoing way in front of the three elders. Soon after Elder Gouras finished his words, Zhang Tie had continued, "Now that I mentioned first, I will tell you about that first. Hopefully, you will not be too amazed!"

The three elders nodded.

Zhang Tie triggered his spiritual energy and isolated the room from the outside with his battle qi in a split second. In this way, whatever they talked about would not be eavesdropped by others.

Before telling that, Zhang Tie hesitated, "Hmm, actually I've some secrets that you don't know!"

After hearing this, Elder Gouras' and Elder Toles's eyes flickered. Only Pontiff Sarlin revealed a faint smile. At the sight of his smile, Zhang Tie felt that Pontiff Sarlin seemed to have long known about that.

"My current look is not my original one. I'm neither Hebrew or Slav. I'm actually Hua. When I came to Ice and Snow Wilderness, I applied disguising medicament. My current look has also been disguised. I've not imagined that I'm the very person in the prophecy of Pontiff Elzida. Therefore, please forgive me for my



disguised look. I don't want to cheat you!"

After pouring out his secret frankly, Zhang Tie felt relieved inside.

Perhaps, he should keep this secret to others across Ice and Snow Wilderness; however, if he even didn't expose it to the three elders of the huge bear tribe, Zhang Tie didn't know who else could he believe in. Even after becoming a tsar, if he didn't have someone to trust in, it was actually a grief. It would be meaningless no matter how much power did he have. It was not even as cool as becoming a landlord with the billions of gold coins back on the Eastern Continent.

Whereas, although Zhang Tie exposed his secret, he had his bottom line. Zhang Tie didn't expose the secret of the body-changing bloodline, which he didn't mean to tell anybody else temporarily.

If a person didn't have anyone to expose his secret to, it would be a grief; however, if a person exposed all of his secrets, it would be silly.

Needless to say, given the expressions of Elder Gouras and Elder Toles, Zhang Tie knew they were shocked; however, Pontiff Sarlin looked relatively calm.

"Is that the meaning of the prophecy of Pontiff?" Elder Gouras slowly murmured after a short while.

"What prophecy?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"Although our lord's look belonged to himself, his original look could not be identified by others..." Elder Toles murmured, "This was a prophecy revealed by Prophet Sarlin when you came to Ice and Snow Wilderness 5 years ago."

"Pontiff Sarlin, you've long known that?" Zhang Tie looked at Pontiff Sarlin as he had not imagined that Pontiff Sarlin could see this.

"I just saw an obscure part, not all of them. I could see your two faces in different scenes!" Pontiff Sarlin said calmly, "Your original look is not important to Ice and Snow Wilderness. The most important is that you're the very person who could bring hope to everybody else. You are the only one who could change the fate of Slavs in Ice and Snow Wilderness. Your original status and look are just your appendages. Take your current name Peter Hamplester as an instance, it's just a symbol of you, but it doesn't represent all of you!"

## Chapter 756: The Eve of Coronation (II)

---

Zhang Tie had not imagined that Pontiff Sarlin had long known something. He was a bit shocked by Pontiff Sarlin's precise prophecy and these elders' fast reaction. It turned out that nothing was serious when his secret status was exposed. He couldn't bear the stress brought by the double status in Huaiyuan Palace and in Ice and Snow Wilderness 5 years ago. However, after promoting to a knight and mastering the gentle strength, Zhang Tie didn't feel anything serious by exposing the secret to these elders at least.

With a bitter smile, Zhang Tie watched Pontiff Sarlin, "I've not imagined that you've already known that. I wonder what else can you see about my future!"

"Future is a maze of time and space. Even the great prophet pontiff had limited control over the future, not to mention me. Last time, when I saw parts of your two looks, I gathered too many people's strength; meanwhile, it had reached my upper limit. After you promote to a knight, nobody can penetrate through the power of time and space which is full of possibilities and changes on you. By then, even if the prophet pontiff revived, he could not see clearly your future road, either." Pontiff Sarlin explained as he shook his head.

After hearing Pontiff Sarlin's words, Zhang Tie became faintly stunned as he had not imagined such an effect after promoting to the knight. However, Zhang Tie became reassured completely. No matter who he was, if he knew that his secret might be exposed by someone else at any time, he would always feel uncomfortable and feel being monitored.

"My true name is Zhang Tie, a member of Zhang Family, Huaiyuan Palace in Jinyun Country!" Zhang Tie put it straight.

After unveiling the secret of disguised look to the three elders, Zhang Tie didn't need to continue to conceal his real status to the

three elders. Even though they didn't know his true status for the time being, as long as he returned to Huaiyuan Palace to attend the chakra rotating ceremony and became one clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace, the three elders would guess something for sure. Additionally, the three elders had many methods to figure out his true status. Therefore, it was not as good as exposing it to them at this moment.

The three elders exchanged a glance with each other once again.

"What will you do if we cannot accept your true status?" Elder Gouras asked all of a sudden.

"It's simple. After the coronation, we can make a performance, telling others that Peter Hamplester committed suicide during meditation due to distractions!" Zhang Tie replied casually, "After all, by then, Ice and Snow Wilderness have been unified. Without me, the college of elders would also be able to manage all the affairs in the Sacred Iceland Kingdom. I've already finished the job that was entrusted by the Elzida, the great pontiff. I've also tried my best to change myself. As for the future, we have our own things to deal with. I'm now the creator who could save everyone. I will leave the Tribal Axis Railway to you. As I've gained too much here, I will not take anything away from here except my beloved women. I want them to deliver babies for me in the Eastern Continent!"

It was the three elders' turn to make a bitter smile this time. Only Zhang Tie could do that in such a handsome way. Actually, if a knight didn't feel free in Ice and Snow Wilderness, he didn't have to stay here. Wherever a knight was, he would always be a top person and would enjoy the best treatment. In his clan, he could become an elder; if he wanted power, he could command a corps of about 400,000 people. He could also establish a country in a remote place. If he wanted a social position and privilege, a lot of countries would strive for supporting a No. 1 knight. There were really not too many things to recall with nostalgia in Ice and Snow

Wilderness. Additionally, Zhang Tie was not obsessed with power and wealth since the beginning. Otherwise, he wouldn't go away from here for 5 years. During the past 5 years, Zhang Tie had a lot of chances to share the great benefit brought by Spencer Clan and the Tribal Axis Railway, even in Gozidari Plain. Actually, Zhang Tie didn't take away even one gold coin from Ice and Snow Wilderness these years; instead, he left the seeds of golden seabuckthorn trees and golden potatoes, which deserved to be priceless treasures in Ice and Snow Wilderness.

"Only we three know your real status now. It's the top secret in Ice and Snow Wilderness. We will help you conceal it. As Peter Hamplester is rooted in people's hearts deeply. Many commoners will not accept it if you suddenly change to Zhang Tie, which will also arouse a great turmoil in Ice and Snow Wilderness. You'd better continue to perform as Peter Hamplester. As for whether do we expose it to the public in the future..." Pontiff Sarlin also rubbed his forehead as he let out a sigh, "It depends!"

The other two elders both nodded.

Zhang Tie also nodded.

After putting it straight, the last concern after becoming the tsar was also handled.

They all let out a sigh then.

"What else do you want to talk with us?" Elder Toles asked.

Zhang Tie smirked as he rubbed his face, "Of course, I've got two more things to tell you!"

"Go ahead!"

"I want to build a capital city for the Sacred Iceland Kingdom in Gozidari Plain!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's wish, the three elders were shocked once again, 'It's truly a major event.'

After carding his train of thoughts, Zhang Tie expressed his opinion, "The only city in Ice and Snow Wilderness now is Eschyle City. It's the foundation of Spencer Clan. According to the agreement between us and Spencer Clan, although we cannot use Eschyle City as the capital, it's not proper as it feels like we're bullying them. It works for a short period; however, the relationship between us and Spencer Clan will be broken sooner or later. Father should not rob his son. Additionally, Eschyle City is too close to the sea. As long as demons attempt to break in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Eschyle City will be the destroyed firstly. As this city lacks strategic depth, it's not proper to be the political center of Sacred Iceland Kingdom."

The three elders just listened to him while nodding seriously.

"When I came here by train these days, I was always thinking about this question. After meeting the heads, generals and priests of the huge bear tribe, I fixed my decision!"

'If I want to rule the entire Sacred Iceland Kingdom, I have to build a magnificent capital city. Put it straightly, like how a booth is required for a roadside stall and a fixed office is required for a business group, how can I manage the entire country without a city as the reliance? If not build a magnificent capital city in Ice and Snow Wilderness, how can the ruling authority of the tsar be displayed?'

'If I want to rule the Sacred Iceland Kingdom, I have to rule Gozidari Plain first. If I want to rule Gozidari Plain, I have to build a magnificent capital city in Gozidari Plain first so as to convince all the members of the huge bear tribe and stabilize my dominant position.' Zhang Tie thought.

'Additionally, when we build a capital city in Gozidari Plain, the steel, cement, coal and mechanical equipment required by this city will greatly push forward the industrialization of Ice and Snow Wilderness and further release the development and war-making potential across Ice and Snow Wilderness. Over these years,

although that industrial area neighboring Eschyle City developed very fast, its scale has expanded by many times. However, a small industrial area covering over 100 sq miles is far from enough for the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness and the Sacred Iceland Kingdom. Additionally, that industrial area and Eschyle City are facing the same problem——being too close to the sea. As long as they are attacked by demons, the entire industrial area would stop its production, causing a series of chain reactions. By contrast, if we build a city in Gozidari Plain, we can play the full role of steel and steam based on the abundant resource in Gozidari Plain. After that, there would be an expectation for the industrialization of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Even a rabbit has three nests, not to mention a country's industrial development layout, which requires us to consider more factors.'

'Finally, a city requires many labor forces, which will create a lot of jobs. Besides, it could digest the surplus labor forces of the immigrants that keep pouring into Ice and Snow Wilderness and clear up some unstable factors. Additionally, it will drive more investment, consumption and inject new vitality into the development of Ice and Snow Wilderness.'

After being silent for a short while, Pontiff Sarlin coughed twice, Elder Toles then opened his mouth with a bit embarrassed tone, "Previously, the huge bear tribe was relatively isolated with poor commerce. We had fewer chances to make money. These years, after building the Tribal Axis Railway, the financial standing of the huge bear tribe indeed improved; however, the huge bear tribe could only afford about 40 million gold coins at this moment. It requires at least 60 million gold coins to build a large-scale city, especially a capital city. I'm afraid..."

'A huge bear tribe could only afford 40 million gold coins?' Zhang Tie finally understood how poor were these guys in Ice and Snow Wilderness...

# Chapter 757: Imagination about the Capital City

---

If a clan could afford over 40 million gold coins, it was definitely a top clan as it was an enormous amount of money in Ewentra Archipelago. Very few clans and business groups could afford such a huge amount of money. However, it would be too poor if an independent kingdom with about 20 million people could only afford such an amount of money.

Zhang Tie knew that such an amount of money included the profit of about 10 million gold coins that huge bear tribe had just won from the bet. After deducting this profit, it meant that the entire huge bear tribe could only afford 30 million gold coins, which could not be able to build half a capital city.

After hearing Elder Toles's report, Zhang Tie realized how poor were these tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness. 'Among all the bear tribes, the iron bear tribe is the richest tribe, followed by the huge bear tribe. However, the huge bear tribe could only afford a bit more than 30 million gold coins, not to mention other smaller tribes. No wonder the other tribes would covet the Tribal Axis Railway. As long as they were instigated by someone else, they would be driven mad. How motherf\*cking poor!'

'In this age, wealth accumulation could only be completed in two ways: first, through prosperous commercial trade, such as Ewentra Archipelago; second, through industrialization. A high-efficient industrial production could create wealth. Pitifully, before I came to Ice and Snow Wilderness, the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness far lagged behind the average level in this age from both commercial trade and industrialization. Otherwise, this place will not be named as wilderness. Whereas, without prosperous commerce and industry, how could they make money? Only by exchanging wool for herbal medicine? Of course not.'



"I wonder how the financial income of the huge bear tribe is accumulated?" Zhang Tie asked the three elders.

"The huge bear tribe is located in the hinterland of the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness. Although Gozidari Plain has fertile land, it's relatively isolated. Foreign businessmen could barely come in. Therefore, our trade is not developed. Previously, Ice and Snow Wilderness mainly had three sources for financial income: first, our tribe controlled the trade of xiphodons across Ice and Snow Wilderness; second, we sold surplus grains each year; third, we discovered a large-scale gold mine in the north of Gozidari Plain——Harimace Gold Mine. This mine provides us over 800,000 gold coins each year! Besides, we have silver and copper mines, which can produce about 150,000 gold coins in total per year..." Elder Toles replied as he took out a gold coin and gave it to Zhang Tie.

'Over 800,000 gold coins meant more than 20 tons of gold per year. It's good.'

After taking that gold coin, Zhang Tie found that its front side was marked with a huge bear while its backside was marked with Elzida Mountain. The two patterns were both composed of simple lines. The gold coin's tooting was not fine. Besides, there was a line of small Hebrew words around the two patterns——"Pure Gold Coin Cast by Huge Bear Tribe, 25 Grams in standard weight".

Compared to the delicate locomotive gold coins produced in Andaman Alliance, besides being enough heavy which allowed it to be circulated in the market, the gold coin cast by huge bear tribe didn't look nice. It might be related to the poor industrial power of the huge bear tribe.

After giving it back to Elder Toles, Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "As I made some money from this bet, I will assume all the fund for building this capital city. I prepare to spare 90 million gold coins to establish the new capital city. The huge bear tribe only need to fix the address in Gozidari Plain for me!"

At present, Zhang Tie was qualified to be the No. 1 tall, rich and handsome guy in the north water of Blackson Humans Corridor. As Zhang Tie joined Gold Power Law, Golden Roc Bank didn't ask for any service charge from him at all. Therefore, all the 297 million gold coins were transferred into Zhang Tie's personal account. He could withdraw them in the name of Zhang Tie or Peter Hamplester. Besides, he plundered an enormous amount of money from Senel Clan in Tokei City, the capital city of Titanic Duchy which was put in the safe of the palace tree in Castle of Black Iron. Those items contained 540 tons of gold, 14.68 million gold coins, gold checks which were worth 47.6 million gold coins and over 600 crates of all sorts of gems, jewelry and rare metals, the total of which were worth above 210 million gold coins. Thanks to the plunder, Zhang Tie almost gathered all the wealth of Titanic Duchy. As it was inconvenient for him to take them out, Zhang Tie just put them in Castle of Black Iron. Plus 297 million gold coins that he won in the bet, Zhang Tie's personal wealth had reached above 500 million gold coins. He was really as rich as a country!

He could completely bear it by taking out 90 million gold coins from such an amount of money to build his own capital city in Ice and Snow Wilderness. By doing this, he could consolidate his dominant position in Ice and Snow Wilderness and increase his influence in Gold Power Law.

'Additionally, after establishing this city, I could make money through many channels. I will make profits sooner or later. Eschyle City could bring over 2.8 million gold coins to Spencer Clan each year. I don't think the capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom at the cost of 90 million gold coins would bring me less income than that.'

After realizing that Zhang Tie was so generous, the three elders of the huge bear tribe became silent as they didn't know what to say. Even the total amount of money of the 8 bear tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness might not match Zhang Tie's total private

wealth.

"I suggest establishing the capital city in the delta region at the foot of Elzida Mountain which is close to Mari River and Ginqing Lake. This region covers over 80,000 sq miles. It is surrounded by a wide area of woods. There are some large-scale coal mines, iron mines, copper mines and silver mines not far from it. We only need to build two short-distance railways to connect these mining areas with the capital city and the Tribal Axis Railway. Given its good environment and great potential in development, after establishing the capital city, a lot of towns and industrial parks could form rapidly in Ginqing Lake Delta Region. Additionally, after establishing the capital city, the city could develop its water transportation based on the abundant water resource of Mari River and Ginqing Lake. Furthermore, Mari River is linked with Lankast Gulf in the northeast of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Although Lankast Gulf is very cold, it thaws in 8 months of each year, during which period all the vessels below 1,000 tons could access to the ocean..." Elder Toles said seriously. Although nobody was richer than Zhang Tie across Ice and Snow Wilderness, nobody was more familiar with Ice and Snow Wilderness than these elders at present.

After recalling the scene on the way here, Zhang Tie asked, "Isn't the grey palace situated in this region?"

"Yes!"

"Alright. Just establish the capital city in this Ginqing Lake Delta Region. It'd better contain the grey palace. I will entrust Golden Roc Bank to be responsible for the establishment of this city. You only need to supervise their work!"

"90 million gold coins. It's enough to build a much more magnificent city than Eschyle City. The urban area of the entire city could cover over 1,000 sq miles..." Elder Gouras sighed with full emotions.

The moment he imagined that he would have his own city in Ice and Snow Wilderness after a few years, Zhang Tie became a bit thrilled. However, he soon forgot about this event. Actually, he only needed to pay for that. All in all, in Zhang Tie's memory, Golden Roc Bank could make use of too many resources. As Zhang Tie didn't know how to build a city, he just left the work to experts.

Right then, Zhang Tie heard a voice which he had not heard for a long time in his mind, "Castle Lord, have you forgotten about that? Agan is the best building expert. If you hand the task to Agan, he must be very happy!"

In a split second, Zhang Tie became faintly stunned, "But can Agan leave Castle of Black Iron?"

"Agan cannot leave Castle of Black Iron; however, he could design the blueprint of the capital city for Castle Lord. As long as you spare some time to fly around the Ginqing Lake Delta Region, I will tell Agan about the topography of that region. Agan will then design the blueprint for you. You then hand the blueprint to the part of Golden Roc Bank!"

Zhang Tie really looked forward to the abilities of his three servants. 'Now that Heller, who's always meticulous, recommend Agan to finish such a task, I think Agan will never let me down.'

Zhang Tie then promised Heller...

# Chapter 758: A Real Piece of God's Star

---

After fixing the matter of the capital city, Zhang Tie told the three elders about the sacred order, items and classes in Ancient God Church.

The entire Ancient God Church was divided into three classes and contained 14 sacred items according to the feature of Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ancient God Church.

The commonest believers of Ancient God Church was the first class.

Among believers, those who could comply with the four sacred disciplines and four sacred deeds would promote to clergymen through sacrificial rites and church's consent.

Those who practiced the "Book of Eternity" at home and in their daily lives instead of taking positions in Ancient God Church could be White Clothes Clergymen. Those who joined in the branches and agencies of Ancient God Church and wished to be clergies of Ancient God Church were called Black Clothes Clergymen.

Black Clothes Clergymen were divided into four classes based on the length and performance when they did the four sacred deeds, iron-star clergyman, copper-star clergyman, silver-star clergyman and gold-star clergyman. It would take an iron-star clergyman at least 4 years to promote to a gold-star clergyman.

A clergyman was the second class in Ancient God Church and the foundation for the development of Ancient God Church.

Above clergyman was the most attractive magisterium class, also the third class of Ancient God Church.

The lowest rank of magisterium class was acolyte, which was closely above the gold-star clergyman. Acolytes could work as subsidiaries in rituals or branches of churches. They had certain rights just like deacons.

After accomplishing practice in the Grey Palace, acolytes could take the position of priest, who was entitled to build churches in villages which had less than 10,000 villagers so as to disseminate the creed of Ancient God Church.

The position above priest was "bishop", who could rule parishes of different ranks in the territory of tribes according to the power of each tribe.

Those who could rule rat-class tribal parishes were bishops of glory.

Those who could rule eagle-class tribal parishes were titular bishops.

Those who could rule wolf-class tribal parishes were diocesans.

Those who could rule Leopard-class tribal parishes were metropolitan bishops.

Those who could rule fox-class tribal parishes were garrison bishops.

Those who could rule bear-class tribal parishes were patriarchs.

The position above patriarch was helm bishop who could manage all the affairs across the Ancient God Church.

The position above helm bishop was pope, which, after being integrated with the secular diadem of Sacred Iceland Kingdom was called Tsar, like Zhang Tie.

The original priests in each tribe of Ice and Snow Wilderness were awarded the same ranks as that of their tribal bishops, namely, priest of glory, titular priest, parish priest, metropolitan priest, garrison priest, sect priest and pontiff.

Elder Mocco of the grey eagle tribe who once punished Zhang Tie was awarded "titular priest". Although Pontiff Sarlin maintained his title, his social status raised, who nominally ruled all the priests across Ice and Snow Wilderness and was only responsible for

Zhang Tie.

Once the framework of the Ancient God Church was confirmed, the entire Ancient God Church would enter a new stage.

...

"How are you going to deal with Ewentra Archipelago? Based on its scale, we need to dispatch at least one patriarch over there. Do you have a suitable candidate?" Elder Gouras asked Zhang Tie after listening to Zhang Tie's introduction.

"I don't mean to dispatch any bishop to Ewentra Archipelago. I will just dispatch a batch of priests over there!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

"Ahh, just priests?" Elder Gouras became faintly stunned.

"Yes, priests!" Zhang Tie nodded, "Actually, besides awarding the heads of the fire bear tribe, wild bear tribe and sea bear tribe as patriarchs, I will not promote any other members of Ancient God Church. I will just confirm their titles based on their achievements. Although Ancient God Church is disseminating widely across Ice and Snow Wilderness, its foundation is still weak. In the past 5 years, the best rank among my followers in Ice and Snow Wilderness was bishop of glory. Therefore, besides the three heads and the priests who paid allegiance to us, I will not award any other clergymen with ranks above bishop of glory. I will give them some time to show them the bright future. Their titles in the future will depend on their achievements!"

The three elders were all smart. Soon after they heard this did the three elders understand Zhang Tie's meaning. The reason why Zhang Tie didn't award others with high titles was that he didn't want to identify horses; instead, he wanted to race horses. He wanted all those above clergymen to compete fairly and display their own abilities. He wanted to have the real talented ones to stand out. If one could consolidate the belief of Ancient God Church and his status in a rat-class tribe, Zhang Tie would award

him with a bishop of glory. If one could consolidate the belief of Ancient God Church and his status in a wolf-class tribe, Zhang Tie would award him with a diocesan. Each one's title depended on his ability and achievements. In this case, Ewentra Archipelago would become the untilled virgin land and training field in the eyes of all the clergymen of Ancient God Church.

"If someone could really consolidate the belief of Ancient God Church and his status across Ewentra Archipelago, I would even award him with a helm bishop, not to mention a patriarch. However, if nobody has such an ability in Ewentra Archipelago..." Zhang Tie shrugged and said casually, "Just leave those bishops vacant. I prefer them to be vacant than use the wrong person! All in all, it would take a religion at least 10 years to consolidate its foundation."

The three elders nodded at the same time.

"Umm, I intend to adopt the 10,000 fighters of the bear-killing camp of the huge bear tribe into grey palace warriors as the direct force of Ancient God Church, how about it?" Zhang Tie asked.

Zhang Tie already had the Thor's Hammer. Plus the bear-killing camp, the two most powerful forces across Ice and Snow Wilderness would be in Zhang Tie's hand. The two forces were the pillar forces of the huge bear tribe.

"Sure!" The three elders agreed at once.

Zhang Tie became reassured completely as he patted his hands and said leisurely, "Well, that's what I wanted to tell you. I wonder what you want to tell me?"

After exchanging a glance with each other, Elder Sarlin slowly said, "Before the formal coronation, you should know something!"

"Ahh, go ahead?"

"This is the biggest secret of the huge bear tribe. Since so many generations, only tribal elders of huge bear tribe knows it!" Pontiff



Sarlin said with a solemn look.

"Ahh..." Zhang Tie became amazed as he asked, "What's that?"

"You will know it, come with us!" Pontiff Sarlin replied as he stood up. Watching the other two elders standing up, Zhang Tie also stood up.

Elder Toles left the room ahead of them, Zhang Tie just stayed with Pontiff Sarlin and followed Elder Toles.

This room was in the hieron, while the hieron was in the hinterland of Elzida Mountain. Therefore, the moment they left the room, Zhang Tie had entered the hinterland which had been excavated by people. Both sides of the aisle were inlaid with fluorescent crystals, which were of the highest quality and could only be found in the ice-capped continent. The tender, milky luster radiated by the fluorescent crystals illuminated the entire artificial aisle.

Elder Toles led them towards the depth of the hinterland. The crisp footsteps of the four people reverberated around the entire hinterland.

At the beginning, there were guards of the hieron on both sides of the aisle. Gradually, after entering a turnoff, the guards started to grow sparse with more doors on the road. Elder Toles had the keys of the doors. Each time he opened a door, Elder Toles would carefully close it after all of them passed through it. He acted very meticulously.

"Where are we heading for?"

"The backroom where the elders of the huge bear tribe enter meditation!" Pontiff Sarlin replied.

After moving about 1 mile ahead and opening more than 10 doors, they finally arrived at the backroom of elders. Elder Toles opened the hard alloy door with a key and entered it, followed by Zhang Tie and the other elders.

With a loud sound "bang...", the thick alloy door of the backroom was closed from inside. Zhang Tie started to look around the backroom.

This was an empty space being excavated, which covered over 5,000 sq meters. Like a big warehouse, it contained many simple tools. It indeed looked like where the elders usually entered meditation.

After looking around, Zhang Tie found nothing special about it.

When Zhang Tie was still curious, the three elders moved to three different places and put their hands on three trivial pieces of rocks on the walls of the backroom with a distance of dozens of meters. After that, they nodded towards each other and forcefully pressed down their own rocks.

At the same time, a stony table slid away more than 20 m from Zhang Tie, exposing a well to Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie walked over there and found the well was hundreds of meters in depth while a faint orange ray shot out of the pitch-dark underground space.

Zhang Tie looked at Elder Sarlin. Elder Sarlin nodded. Zhang Tie then jumped off.

As a knight, Zhang Tie directly flew downwards instead of free landing.

The closer he was to the entrance of the well, the brighter the orange ray was, Zhang Tie instantly rushed out of the entrance of the deep well and entered a natural mountain cave which was 2-3 times bigger than that of the backroom.

When he noticed the source of the orange ray, Zhang Tie widely opened his mouth.

A piece of orange crystal, which was as large as a 7-8-year-old boy, was suspending in the air over 50 m away from the entrance in the shape of a huge crystal bamboo shoot. It radiated the orange

ray, turning this underground mountain cave into a dreamland.

The moment he caught sight of that thing, Zhang Tie sensed the powerful and special energy filling this space. In a split second, that energy had penetrated into his body. It seemed to carry some exotic property, that energy penetrated through Zhang Tie's body like how the water flow penetrated through a broken ladle; however, it didn't cause any damage to his body.

Gradually, the ray of that item had turned into cyan from orange...

The three elders had already followed Zhang Tie in this space. They were suspending in the air beside Zhang Tie. The special energy also penetrated through their bodies freely...

"What's this?" Zhang Tie asked out of amazement.

"This is the piece of God's Star!"

"What?" Zhang Tie watched that huge crystal bamboo shoot floating in the air with an unbelievable look, "This is a piece of God's Star?"

"The one who discovered it first was Elzida, the Great Pontiff. It's also the most precious wealth left by the Great Pontiff to the huge bear tribe!" Elder Gouras watched that huge crystal bamboo shoot with an awe-stricken look as he explained with full respect.

'Alight. I remember that when I came to Ice and Snow Wilderness for the first time, Samaranth the Stars and Moons Sword Sage also came here for the God's Star. Pitifully, he didn't have a chance to even see the piece of God's Star after being trapped by Three-eye Association. It turns out that there's indeed a piece of God's Star in Ice and Snow Wilderness. However, it's in the secret cave of the hinterland of Elzida Mountain in the hand of huge bear tribe instead of the underground space of Haidela Glacier Crack. Of course, nobody else could discover it.'

Watching this huge crystal bamboo shoot floating in the air,

Zhang Tie became puzzled, "What's it used for?"

"This piece of God's Star contains a special energy, which could work in the realm of elements. The realm of elements in the place where the piece of God's Star lies in will experience some marvelous changes. After having this piece of God's Star, Slavs could promote to a new high in their battle force in a split second. The source that could drive bear-killing fighters mad came from this piece of God's Star. After your coronation, you will have this piece of God's Star according to the will of Elzida, the Prophet Pontiff..."

...

# Chapter 759: Double Statutes

---

On the evening of October 31st, the Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace, Yiyang Mountain...

Elder Muen, Elder Muray, Elder Muan and Elder Muyu were sitting together with crossed legs.

"The chakra rotating ceremony will start in 2 days, do we contact Zhang Tie at this moment?" Elder Muan asked with a faint frown. As Zhang Tie had left Huaiyuan Palace for over 1 month without any message, it was only 3 days left. If not Zhang Tie had already promoted to a knight, the 4 elders might have dispatched people to find him.

"As Zhang Tie said he would come back before November 1st, we will wait for another 3 hours. If he still doesn't come back at the dawn, we will contact him!" Elder Muen suggested.

As a clan elder, of course, Zhang Tie would not eat his words. Now that he said he would come back before November 1st, he would come back for sure unless there was an accident. Even if Zhang Tie had to prolong his schedule, he would also contact the clan elders in advance. Now that Zhang Tie didn't contact them, it meant that everything went well. If the elders asked him in advance, it would indicate that they were doubting his self-protection ability. It was okay if Zhang Tie was still the innocent teenager like before. However, as Zhang Tie was going to be a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace formally, they should pay attention to the degree. If elders had conflicts due to such a trivial affair, it would be embarrassing.

All the 4 elders thought about this point. Therefore, the moment Elder Muen mentioned it, the other elders nodded right away. They only needed to wait for Zhang Tie another couple of hours. They would contact him if Zhang Tie was still not back by then. In this way, they looked more meticulous and would not arouse

Zhang Tie's misunderstanding.

"Today, the elders of all the other 5 major clans of Jinyun Country have arrived at Yiyang City with their representatives. They've settled down in their own clan mansions. The elders of Li Clan and Dongfang Clan of Qilan Country also came to Yiyang City with their representatives. Norman Empire dispatched their crown prince to attend the chakra rotating ceremony. All the other heads of major clans or representatives of countries across Waii Sub-continent who had close ties with Huaiyuan Palace have arrived these days as well. Raymlan Empire and Berdi Empire also dispatched their royal members to Yiyang City with precious gifts!" Elder Muyu said.

"Raymlan Empire and Berdi Empire? But why?"

All the other elders became shocked when they heard the names of the above two countries. Although they were called empires, like the other empires of different sizes across Waii Sub-continent, their empires were not widely accepted by the outsiders. The two countries were in the poor national strength. Each of them only had one knight, namely their No.1 knights. Huaiyuan Palace didn't have close ties with the two countries either. Long Wind Business Group only had some trade contracts with the two countries. What were they here for?

"It's said that Zhang Tie met the two No. 1 knights on the way back to Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, although their No. 1 knights didn't have free time to attend the chakra rotating ceremony, they still dispatched some people here to attend it!" Elder Muyu explained.

After knowing the reason, the other elders smiled. 'After having one more knight, even two strange countries came here for establishing relationships by dispatching royal members, how majestic is the Huaiyuan Palace!'

"Pitifully, if not the holy war, the chakra rotating ceremony

would be much more solemn. Due to the threats of demons, many people could not attend it. The entire north region of Waii Sub-continent was in a chaos. Only Norman Empire arrived here from the north. I remember that 5 countries' representatives attended the chakra rotating ceremony from the north when Elder Muyu and Elder Muan promoted to knights!" Elder Muray sighed.

"In a chaotic world, knights would be more valuable. Although fewer people could attend this chakra rotating ceremony, everyone knew what it meant by having one more young clan elder in Huaiyuan Palace!"

"Umm, how's the battle situation in the north these days?" Has the super demon corps been discovered?"

"Since the battle in Upton City, the Demon General and the super demon corps have been disappeared. I'm afraid that they are recovering their loss. I've not heard any mesage about them these days. Those Three-eye Association clans in the north are reorganizing a lot of demonized puppets so as to gradually and steadily approach to Norman Empire. Norman Empire and all the other human countries in the north also accelerated their pace to evacuate the population. No major events happened in the north these days. However, there was an intelligence from Long Wind Business Group yesterday. The Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago in the north water had declared to be unified on October 27th. A new country called the Sacred Iceland Kingdom was founded. A person called Peter Hamplester has already been coronated as the tsar of Sacred Iceland Kingdom. He has ruled the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness and Ewentra Archipelago and been unrivaled across the north water."

"I remember that each Slavs' bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness has at least one knight. The most powerful huge bear tribe is said to have 3 knight elders. How did Peter Hamplester unify the entire Ice and Snow Wilderness?" The other elders were faintly shocked by the news.

"According to Long Wind Business Group, Peter Hamplester is the very hero who saved all the Slavs according to the prophecy of the Prophet Pontiff of Slavs. When he came to Ice and Snow Wilderness 5 years ago, he gained the allegiance of the huge bear tribe. Additionally, he pacified a tribe's demonized puppets disaster. Besides gaining the trust of the two major tribes in Ice and Snow Wilderness, he even founded Ancient God Church and won numerous believers across Ice and Snow Wilderness. This time, he convinced the entire Ewentra Archipelago. According to the legend, the process that Peter Hamplester convinced Ewentra Archipelago was marvelous. All the witnesses said that Peter Hamplester was the incarnation of the Ancient God. It was said that he even had Poseidon serve him by exterminating a fleet of Ewentra Archipelago. After that, he beheaded a knight of Sacred Light Empire. From then on, he convinced all the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago!" Elder Muan explained.

The so-called God's will was nothing but sh\*t in the eyes of the elders of Huaiyuan Palace. They knew clearly the rules in this world. If God's will indeed existed, there would not be a holy war. Just let the Ancient God clear all the demons.

"It turns out that Peter Hamplester is a fierce and powerful person. We'd better have Long Wind Business Group pay more attention to him!" Elder Muray suggested seriously.

"Guan Xiyi the CEO of Golden Roc Bank went to Ewentra Archipelago by airboat. Later on, he sent Peter Hamplester to Ice and Snow Wilderness by airboat. Guan Xiyi even attended the coronation ritual of Peter Hamplester in the hieron of the sacred mountain of the huge bear tribe..."

After hearing this, the other elders became faintly dumbfounded. They exchanged a glance with each other before forcing a bitter smile, 'Golden Roc Bank is really something. Now that CEO Guan Xiyi was there, it means that the Sacred Iceland Kingdom is supported by Golden Roc Bank. The two parties might have



already reached privy. The Sacred Iceland Kingdom might become a key base and spokesmen of Hua people in Waii Sub-continent...'

In this case, Long Wind Business Group should better make a plan ahead of Ice and Snow Wilderness and find an exit in north water for Huaiyuan Palace. It might have a great effect in the future.

"In this case, we can have Long Wind Business Group contact the Sacred Iceland Kingdom first and set a senior officer for the business group in Ice and Snow Wilderness. We can dispatch our right hand over there..."

"Hmm, we can have Zhang Taibai pay a visit to Peter Hamplester on behalf of Huaiyuan Palace at a proper time..."

"Fine!"

The elders determined a major event for Huaiyuan Palace briefly.

Right then, the four elders' hearts pounded as they exchanged a glance with each other. Closely after that, they walked out of the Shrine Palace at the same time...

When they reached the gate, they raised their heads at the same time and saw a meteor flying towards them in the dark sky.

"Whoo..." Elder Muen let out a deep sigh, "Thankfully, he's back!"

The 4 elders exchanged a smile with each other before feeling relieved.

The meteor soon arrived at Yiyang Mountain when a figure landed in front of them.

"Sorry for being late, 4 elders!" Zhang Tie cupped his hands towards the 4 elders with a smile when he stood outside the Shrine Palace.

Zhang Tie had just left Ice and Snow Wilderness before dawn today, after over 9 hours of flight and 7 hours of journey in the

ocean, Zhang Tie finally reached Huaiyuan Prefecture. Nobody would believe at such an amazing speed.

The 5 people returned to the room in the Shrine Palace where elders usually negotiated about events.

The moment Zhang Tie took a seat, Elder Muyu smiled, "We were talking about you just now. You've left for over 1 month; if you didn't come back in a couple of hours, we would have to contact you by the remote-sensing crystal!"

"Hmm, I've been to Ice and Snow Wilderness these days!" Zhang Tie replied as he rubbed his face. He thought that it was time to tell the truth to the elders of Huaiyuan Palace.

The other elders were stunned at the same time. As they were talking about Ice and Snow Wilderness just now, they had not imagined that Zhang Tie had been to Ice and Snow Wilderness these days.

"A big event happened in Ice and Snow Wilderness these days, have you met that Peter Hamplester?" Elder Muray couldn't wait but ask.

"Erm..actually...I'm that Peter Hamplester!" Zhang Tie scratched his head in a bashful way.

"Pah..." The teacup fell off Elder Muen's hand, spraying the tea water over the ground...

# Chapter 760: Long Sight Peak

---

The 4 elders felt like listening to a legendary story when Zhang Tie described his experience on the way from Huaiyuan Prefecture to the Ice and Snow Wilderness 5 years ago.

Zhang Tie only explained the God's will in the underground relics by a word "magic". Although being a magic, only Zhang Tie knew its true secret. As it was Zhang Tie's secret, the 4 elders didn't force him to expose it to them.

As for the huge deep-sea monster, Zhang Tie said it was a pet that he subdued in the deep sea.

'Pet?' The 4 elders had to accept this explanation.

As for others, Zhang Tie didn't want to depict the details. Therefore, he just briefed them all.

After telling them about his experience of establishing the Sacred Iceland Kingdom, Zhang Tie became unpredictable in the eyes of the 4 elders. Zhang Tie was like being covered by a mist. When they thought that they could see him clearly, actually they just caught sight of one small corner of the iceberg.

'Thankfully, this guy is a true offspring of Huaiyuan Palace!'

The 4 elders comforted themselves inside.

"That's all. Now, only CEO Guan Xiyi of Golden Roc Bank and the three elders of huge bear tribe know my true status, ahem...ahem...nobody else!" Zhang Tie concluded.

"You mean you could command all the tribes across Ice and Snow Wilderness and the major clans across Ewentra Archipelago?' Elder Muray watched Zhang Tie with an unimaginable look.

"The Sacred Iceland Kingdom is facing a complex situation right now. Those forces on my side can be divided into 5 parts according to the relationship between us: First, the huge bear tribe. I'm the

most influential in this tribe. The 3 knight elders of this tribe can provide me with the largest support when in need. However, I cannot have an absolute authority in this tribe until the capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom is established. Second, Ewentra Archipelago. None of the major clans on Ewentra Archipelago will be able to resist me. As long as my requests are not too excessive, they can always follow my commands and meet my requests. Third, the iron bear tribe. Nominally, this tribe belongs to me. I'm their protector. Additionally, this tribe will not have conflicts with me about interests. However, Spencer Clan, the domineering clan in this tribe has their own clan interests. Additionally, this tribe has a knight elder who's tricky and aggressive. Therefore, essentially, I'm cooperating with this tribe. Fourth, the mountain bear tribe, black bear tribe and demon bear tribe in Ice and Snow Wilderness. As these three tribes made a mistake before, they were compromising to me on certain conditions. To a certain degree, I could determine the candidate of the heads of the three tribes in the future. They would follow my order on trivial things. However, when it comes to big issues about interests, my words will not work. Fifth, the wild bear tribe, fire bear tribe and sea bear tribe. The three tribes still remain independent right now. They supported me to unify Ice and Snow Wilderness. I also supported them to establish their own regime. Everything between me and the three tribes is founded on common interests exchange. If I wanted them to do something, I could present the equal conditions for the exchange."

After hearing the introduction of Zhang Tie, the 4 elders of Huaiyuan Palace finally understood that the Sacred Iceland Kingdom was not as unified as it looked. Actually, the internal forces of each part had subtle relations with Zhang Tie. However, now that Zhang Tie could see through the camps in the Sacred Iceland Kingdom so precisely, it indicated that he had already been truly mature. He had a very precise judgment on the domestical situation facing the Sacred Iceland Kingdom. It seemed that the

throne of tsar didn't make him puzzled.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, it became a bit quiet as the 4 elders didn't know what to say for the time being. After being quiet for over 10 seconds, Elder Muyu faintly coughed, "This thing is about the top secret of Huaiyuan Palace. Only elders and head of Huaiyuan Palace know that, do you agree?"

"I agree!"

"I agree!"

"I agree!"

The elders nodded at the same time.

"Hmm, let's come to an end today. I'm afraid that Zhang Tie must be tired all the way from Ice and Snow Wilderness. Just have a good rest tonight!" Elder Muen told Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie nodded. Now that it was a sincere suggestion, he could not tell them that he was not tired at all. Neither could he tell them it only took him a bit more 10 hours to be here.

At this moment, something occurred to Zhang Tie's mind.

"Umm, I was told that knights should get their own crystal plates in the Mountain of Brightness, where's the Mountain of Brightness then?"

"The Mountain of Brightness is in Tianfang City within the territory of Lan Clan. It's indeed an unnecessary step for humans to promote to knights. If you are free tomorrow, I can take you there!" Elder Muray said enthusiastically.

"Fine, when?"

"6 am. Right in the Shrine Palace, we will fly towards there!"

"Good, I will wait for Elder Muray right here at 6 am tomorrow!" Zhang Tie cupped his hands towards Elder Muray.

Elder Muray replied with a smile...

...

Elder Muen took Zhang Tie away from the Shrine Palace towards the mountain peak behind Yiyang Mountain.

The two sides of the mountain path were covered with dense woods or flowers. The mountain path was composed of tidy stony stages. On both sides of the stony stages, there was a roadside lamp in each fixed distance, which illuminated the path. Some deacons on duty would pass by them with disciples. When they caught sight of Elder Muen, they hurriedly bowed towards Elder Muen and greeted him.

Zhang Tie found that they were heading for a different place than the attic where he lived in last time.

"Elder Muen, where are we heading for? It's not the same way that I walked last time!"

"There are 11 mountain peaks on Yiyang Mountain, each elder of Huaiyuan Palace has one mountain peak on Yiyang Mountain. As you're the 6th elder of Huaiyuan Palace, you deserve to live in Long Sight Peak, the 6th peak of Yiyang Mountain. When you came back last time, your elder's pavilion on Long Sight Peak had not been established, now it's okay. I will take you there. You will live in Long Sight Peak from then on!"

Zhang Tie replied with a smile as he had not imagined that elders of Huaiyuan Palace could enjoy such a great treatment here.

...

Only after a couple of minutes, they had arrived at his elder's pavilion on Long Sight Peak.

The elder's pavilion covered over 6000 sqm. It was a traditional Hua complex composed of terraces and open halls and crisscrossed gardens and bamboo woods. From the best location of Long Sight Peak, Zhang Tie could watch the ocean and the entire Yiyang City in the distance. He could also see the elder's pavilions of the other

4 elders.

Over 20 people were waiting for Zhang Tie and Elder Muen outside the gate of the elder's pavilion.

"These people are your servants and clan deacons who will serve you exclusively. From now on, you can have them do everything for you on Yiyang Mountain!" Elder Muen told Zhang Tie.

At the sight of them, Zhang Tie's look turned extremely strange at once. Because all of them were beautiful Hua girls in skirts aged between 20 to 30. At the sight of them, Zhang Tie felt entering a Shangri-la.

'Are all the elders' pavilions matched with so many beautiful girls? But they don't seem to have an interest in women...'

Zhang Tie glanced at Elder Muen in a strange look. Elder Muen blushed faintly as he seemingly had already guessed what Zhang Tie was thinking about. He then glared at Zhang Tie, "Erm..these are specially prepared for you. The servants in other elders' pavilions are mainly male!"

'For me?' Zhang Tie understood the intention of these elders right away. It seemed that these elders expected him to have more babies. Watching those beauties who glimpsed at him, Zhang Tie let out a sigh inside, 'The clan elders really think too much about this thing.'

Closely after that, Elder Muen escaped away.

The moment Elder Muen left, those glimpses became audacious. Zhang Tie could almost not stand that. However, after staying in Ice and Snow Wilderness for so many days, Zhang Tie was more immune to such romantic affairs. Zhang Tie just replied with a faint smile. After that, Zhang Tie told a plump woman in the deacon's skirt among them, "I'm a bit tired today. I want to take some rest first. Take me to my bedroom."

"Yes, sir!" That female deacon raised her head and glanced at

Zhang Tie before leading Zhang Tie into his elder's pavilion. She led Zhang Tie into a tranquil courtyard, where there was a 3-storey delicate attic. Zhang Tie lived there.

Everything in the attic was comfortable, simple and exquisite. Zhang Tie felt very satisfied with them. As elders had seen all sorts of scenes, being comfortable counted most in their own bedroom.

"Elder, do you like this layout and style? If not, this disciple will have someone change a new set tomorrow!" The female deacon told Zhang Tie respectfully.

"Hmm, nice, it's fine. No need to change. Is there a training room here?"

"The training room is in the basement. The entrance is in the study. Do you need me to show you there?"

"Hmm, no need. By the way, what's your name?"

"You can call me Yu Youlan, elder!" The female deacon rapidly glimpsed at Zhang Tie with a faint blush.

Zhang Tie rubbed his face as he was not used to listen to a woman who was much elder than him calling herself "disciple" in front of him, "You don't need to call yourself disciple in front of me in Long Sight Peak from now on. Just call yourself I or Youlan. The same to all the other girls."

"Yes, this disciple got it!"

Zhang Tie watched her helplessly for a second. She then realized what mistake had she made. Her cheeks became redder as she hurriedly corrected, "Yes, sir, You...Youlan got it!"

"Do you know why the others have dispatched you here?"

"Yes...I know a bit!" Deacon Yu lowered her head as her face turned completely red.

Zhang Tie patted his forehead, 'It seems that Huaiyuan Palace really takes me as a stud. I really want to know how those elders



issued this "order" to these women. No wonder why those women threw such a strange and bashful glimpse at me just now. It turns out that they have been ready to "sacrifice" themselves.' The moment Zhang Tie caught sight of these women, he had known that all the female here were virgins, including this deacon Yu.

"Given your look, you should have been LV 11. Where did you learn your battle skills from?" Zhang Tie asked casually.

"Youlan trained in Hidden Dragon Island 8 years ago!" Deacon Yu replied in a bashful look.

Zhang Tie faintly widened his mouth, 'It seems that this Yu Youlan is my senior sister apprentice when I was in Hidden Dragon Island...'

Zhang Tie didn't know what to say.

"Ahem...ahem...it's too late. I will go to bed. You go take a rest too!"

Deacon Yu bit her lips with a blush as she asked in a very low voice, "Elder, which girl do you prefer? I will have her here to accompany you!"

After being asked by a senior sister apprentice from Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie blushed, "Erm...no need. You can leave now!"

"Yes, sir..." Deacon Yu threw another glance at Zhang Tie before leaving the room in a restraint way. She closed the door, leaving Zhang Tie alone in the room.

Zhang Tie rubbed his face with a bitter smile, 'After the chakra rotating ceremony, I will become a clan elder. By then, I will find a chance to dispatch these girls to their original whereabouts. I really cannot bear such a special treatment...'

At this moment, Zhang Tie realized that he had not entered Castle of Black Iron for over one month. He wondered how many fruits could he get from the small tree after his trip to Ice and

Snow Wilderness...

'However, considering that I will go to the Mountain of Brightness tomorrow; additionally, it's inconvenient for me to enter Castle of Black Iron right on the Long Sight Peak. As the other 4 elders were on Yiyang Mountain, it'd be hard to explain it to them if I was found disappeared under their eyes.'

Therefore, Zhang Tie threw himself onto the comfortable big bed and fell asleep...

'To be honest, it was pretty comfortable to sleep on a bed alone...'

'Since I arrived at Ewentra Archipelago, I've not been sleeping alone on a bed for over 1 month.' Such a whim occurred to Zhang Tie's mind...

'Hmm, it sounds a bit shameless...'

He gradually entered a sweet dreamland...

# Chapter 761: Tianfang City

---

After having a sound sleep last night, the bit of fatigue caused by over 1 month's journey outside was cleared. Zhang Tie became spirited once again.

Knights could not just cultivate and fight. With proper relaxation, they could even maintain a greater vitality and more sensitive thinking.

So did Zhang Tie. As it was still far away from the formation of his earth chakra, Zhang Tie became relaxed. He just kept the regular rhythm. Many black iron knights could not break their realm for 100-200 years.

The morning air in Yiyang Mountain was as fresh as the crystal being cleansed by the thawed ice from the Elzida Mountain. After taking a breath of the refreshing air, Zhang Tie felt spirited all over.

After getting up, Zhang Tie took a bath. He then put on a new set of clothes before leaving the elder's pavilion on Long Sight Peak for the Shrine Palace.

There were all sorts of items in the elder's pavilion, including hundreds of clothes, hats, shoes and socks in different styles. All the daily goods provided for the clan elders by Huaiyuan Palace were real, top customized items. Take the black robe on Zhang Tie as an instance, although it looked similar to common silk robes, Deacon Yu told him that it was made of a special python silk in Eastern Continent. Python silk was a rarity. It was said that 50 g of python silk was worth 5 kgs of gold. In Waii Sub-continent, as python silk products were imported from Eastern Continent, they were more expensive and rarer.

Python silk could not be attacked by dust. Due to its special, dense flexibility, it could not be penetrated through by powerful bolts. It looked nice, clean and tidy like a piece of natural soft

armor. In Huaiyuan Palace, python silk products were special provisions. Only the clan elders and some big figures in Zhang Clan could use them.

Besides the robe, even the upper outer garment, lining and trousers were made of top raw materials in excellent workmanship. Even Zhang Tie's pair of cloud-ascending shoes was customized artificially, which was very delicate all over.

Since he came to Yiyang Mountain last night, only after half a day, Zhang Tie already had a feeling—How good it is to be a clan elder!

It was just the beginning. Zhang Tie knew that the privilege of elders of Huaiyuan Palace would not just be such a small material treatment and some beauties...

As he kept breathing the fresh air on Yiyang Mountain, Zhang Tie strode off the Long Sight Peak leisurely. When he arrived at the Shrine Palace, it was not 6 am yet. After waiting there a couple of minutes, Elder Muray arrived on time.

Realizing that Zhang Tie arrived here a couple of times earlier, Elder Muray nodded faintly as he appreciated Zhang Tie a bit more. Although it was a trivial thing, it indicated the importance of Huaiyuan Palace in Zhang Tie's heart.

Although he was satisfied, Elder Muray didn't show it on his face. After greeting Zhang Tie, he put it straight, "Let's go!" Closely after that, he rose in the air, followed by Zhang Tie.

Elder Muray kept flying ahead of Zhang Tie. After rising above the clouds tens of thousands of meters high, the two people rushed towards north like meteors.

Xian Prefecture of Lan Clan was neighboring Huaiyuan Prefecture. Taian City in the northernmost part of Huaiyuan Prefecture was adjacent to Shunjiang City of Lan Clan with Yuanjiang River between them. However, Taian City had been sold

to Norman Empire by Huaiyuan Palace.

Over the past 1 month, with the evacuation of a lot of Hua people, besides Taian City, Yunzhou City, Xince City and Qihai City were also sold by Huaiyuan Palace to Norman Empire. Norman Empire had connected Taian City, Yunzhou City and Qihai City and formed a firm base on the north bank of Yuan Jiang River.

Xince City was sold to the Mercenary Union of Blackson Humans Corridor. After selling the above 4 cities, Huaiyuan Palace only had 3 coastal cities, respectively Yiyang City, Golden Sea City and Stars Viewing City. Among them, Yiyang City was the core region of Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Clan. Golden Sea City was the significant industrial and manufacturing base of Huaiyuan Palace. Stars Viewing City was the northernmost portal and the encampment of the Hurricane Corps of Huaiyuan Palace. Like a firm steel tripod, the three cities became Huaiyuan Palace's final base on Blackson Humans Corridor.

Elder Muray moved as fast as 800 miles per hour which was higher than Zhang Tie's "cruising speed". After thinking for a second, Zhang Tie had realized that Elder Muray was testing his flying ability. This speed had already been much faster than the average speed of most of the black iron knights. 'As the Mountain of Brightness is not far away, Elder Muray doesn't need to fly so fast at the cost of his vigor.'

It might work if Elder Muray tested other new knights with this high speed; however, it was like testing whether a fish could swim for Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie's "cruising speed" would reach above 700 miles per hour, it was very easy for him to increase by a bit more than 10%.

It only took the two knights more than half an hour from Yiyang City to Taian City.

From their perspectives in the air, airships landed in Taian City from north one after another, unloading passengers.

At this moment, over 70% of fury-level airships produced by Huaiyuan Palace were sold to Norman Empire and were used for the evacuation of the population in the entire empire.

Anything, once reaching a scale, would be splendid just like the airships below Zhang Tie's feet at this moment.

Watching those airships, Zhang Tie couldn't help but imagine how he would shoot down these airships rapidly if they belonged to demons.

They soon flew over Yuanjiang River. After that, Elder Muray realized that Zhang Tie was not flying hard. Therefore, it refreshed his opinion about Zhang Tie's ability. He then decelerated to 600 miles per hour.

"You're cultivating Five-elements Earth-look Sutra?" Elder Muray talked to Zhang Tie in a secret soul-transmitting manner.

"Hmm, yes!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

Elder Muray then watched the white protective battle qi over Zhang Tie with a dubious look, "Could Five-elements Earth-look Sutra improve one's flying ability?"

"I don't know. Perhaps, my physique has improved after being struck by that lightning bolt. I also feel the difference between this "Five-elements Earth-look Sutra and the contents in the secret book!" Zhang Tie replied as he started to convert his battle qi. In a split second, the protective battle qi became as flexible as water as the white light which represented gold turned into purple-black which represented water. Closely after that, it turned into green which represented wood. Then, it turned into red like fire. Finally, it turned into yellow which represented earth.

Each level higher the cultivator reached, he would have a power of the five elements. After promoting to the knight, the cultivator could freely convert his battle qi among the five elements and advance his battle qi to five-elements battle qi. Zhang Tie was

displaying this ability.

Watching Zhang Tie's performance, Elder Muray didn't doubt him anymore; instead, he let out a sigh, "You'd better not reveal the secret that you were struck by a lightning bolt in the future. Otherwise, I'm afraid that many disciples of Huaiyuan Palace would like to be struck by the lightning bolt on purpose!"

"Haha, fine!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile.

King roc could be a fish in the water, a bird in the sky; King roc could go deep into the abyss and suppress all the evils or fly as fast as wind and thunders in the sky so as to devour the stars. It had numerous, mysterious changes. After promoting to the knight, Zhang Tie was granted with a special "knight's consciousness" by the "King Roc Sutra". He could almost imitate all kinds of battle qi below emperor-level secret knowledge that he was familiar with. As long as he read that secret knowledge of any battle qi, he would be able to imitate it easily. According to the difficulty of the secret knowledge, he could at least imitate 60% of them.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to display the powerful ability of "King Roc Sutra" in front of an elder of Huaiyuan Palace.

Real powerhouses usually hid their true talent. Therefore, Zhang Tie just imitated the "Five-elements Earth-Looking Sutra" by the "King Roc Sutra".

...

After flying over 700 miles towards northeast along Shunjiang City, Zhang Tie saw a city being surrounded by green mountains. It was not large but was featured by the nonchalant elegance of Lan cities.

Elder Muray landed on the top of a mountain outside the city, followed by Zhang Tie. After that, they went downhill and entered the city from a gate in the south.

The moment Zhang Tie stepped onto the cyan stony road in the

city, he had sniffed a rich fragrance of flowers. All sorts of exotic flowers were on both sides of the urban roads. The entire city was like a big garden as was indicated by its name Tianfang City.

'Is the Human Knights Union Mountain of Brightness on Waii Sub-continent located here?'

Zhang Tie had a limitless curiosity about the Mountain of Brightness as he imagined about the magnificent scenery on Mountain of Brightness.

After walking through the roads for over 20 minutes, Elder Muray stopped in a remote lane, "Here we are!"

Zhang Tie looked around with a vacant expression...

Elder Muray pointed at a medium-sized pawnshop in front of them...

There were three Hua characters on the signboard outside the pawnshop——在人间. Almost half of its primer faded away. It seemed a bit miserable.

Zhang Tie became stunned for quite a while...

'Is this...the Mountain of Brightness? The most powerful Human Knights Union on Waii Sub-continent?'

'My God, even the Sacred Golden Orchid Empire's embassy in Jinyun Country looks much more advanced than this place.'

If not the solemn look of Elder Muray, which reminded Zhang Tie that it was not a joke, he had long turned around and left...



# Chapter 762: Pushing Open the Door of Knight's World (I)

---

After entering the pawnshop, Zhang Tie saw a lad in cyan clothes and a hat dozing off behind the counter, leaving a puddle of saliva on the counter.

All the furnishings in the pawnshop seemed to have been old as they lost their gloss. The entire pawnshop was still filled with looming smoke and tea fragrance.

Besides some cheap items scattering in the containers behind the counter, nothing else could be found in the pawnshop.

After comparing the formidable term Mountain of Brightness to such a broken pawnshop, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Elder Muray.

"Ahem...ahem..." Elder Muray coughed.

But the lad still did not wake up.

Elder Muray looked a bit embarrassed as he coughed twice forcefully once again. This time, the lad finally woke up. When the arm that supported his head slid away, his head instantly pounded on the counter while his face fell into the puddle of saliva.

"Who...who's spraying me with water?" The lad shouted as he waved his limbs. When he saw Zhang Tie and Elder Muray clearly and noticed his saliva on the counter, he wiped it away from his face and tidied his sleeve.

'This is really...really...amazing' Zhang Tie was so shocked that he became silent.

"Where's your boss?" Elder Muray asked politely.

"6 new virgins arrived in Yihong Pavilion last night. The old thing has not come back yet!" The lad seemingly complained that the "old thing" didn't take him there. After losing his temper for a

short while, he looked Zhang Tie and Elder Muray up and down. When he gazed at Zhang Tie, his eyes gleamed, "Ze...ze...I've not imagined seeing a knight in Waii Sub-continent!"

Zhang Tie was doubting that this place had nothing to do with that Mountain Brightness. However, the latter words of that lad wavered his mind.

When Zhang Tie concealed his qi, even a knight could not recognize his status as a knight. How did this lad know?

Zhang Tie instantly cleared his suspicion.

"You are lucky. Now that a big deal came, the old thing would definitely know it. He will come back soon!"

Soon after the lad's words, Zhang Tie heard footsteps outside the pawnshop. Closely after that, an old, thin guy rushed in with white mustache in a scarlet robe with floral patterns on it. Besides, there was a faint mark of lipstick on his face...

What a shameless old thing!

"Ahh, who's that? Why did you come here at such a critical moment? What a killjoy..." The old guy kept swearing when he entered.

Even Elder Muray, the worst-tempered elder in Huaiyuan Palace was silent with a big smile in front of this old guy.

After throwing a glance at Elder Muray and Zhang Tie, the old guy muttered. After that, he told the lad to open a narrow burglarproof door beside the counter and entered.

The moment he entered the counter, the old guy knocked the lad's head with his finger, causing the lad to spring up due to a sharp pain, "You sleepyhead, whether you were speaking ill of me just now?"

"Ahh, never!" The lad touched his head with a pair of gleaming eyes like an innocent rabbit.

"Work hard. Don't always think about women. Look at you. You do not even have your pubic hair. As it's chaotic now, I will increase your salary by 2 silver coins next month. When you have 20 gold coins, I will find a class A virgin for you..."

After saying that, the old guy chased away the lad before sitting on the seat behind the counter and watching Zhang Tie and Elder Muray.

After this old thing entered, Zhang Tie realized through his knight's consciousness that the entire space of the pawnshop had been sealed. Although the door was open, all the sounds inside the door could not be leaked.

Elder Muray threw a glance at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then walked to the counter.

The old thing threw a serious glance at Zhang Tie before asking with an impatient look, "Name?"

"Zhang Tie!"

"Age?"

"22!"

"Your nominal age?" The old guy glared at Zhang Tie like watching an illiterate, "How could you not count the 10 months in your mom's womb? You, young men, who grew up in remote areas such as Waii Sub-continent are fickle. You know sh\*t! How do you not learn the essence of Hua culture? Again, age..."

This time, Zhang Tie was completely conquered by this old thing, "23!"

"Which clan were you born in?"

"Huaiyuan Palace, Jinyun Country!"

"Put out your right hand horizontally..."

Zhang Tie put out his right hand. The old thing then pinched each finger of Zhang Tie's right hand like touching his bones. After

that, he took out a needle from below the counter and rapidly injected into Zhang Tie's one finger. After squeezing out some blood, he took out a white dragon-shaped crystal plate from below the counter and dropped that blood onto the two eyes of the dragon-shaped crystal. After being immersed in Zhang Tie's blood, the white crystal instantly turned as blue as a sapphire.

"Inject your spiritual energy into the dragon-shaped crystal!"

Zhang Tie then injected his spiritual energy into the dragon-shaped crystal plate from his finger. The crystal then started to illuminate. Finally, dragon-shaped totem halos appeared above the crystal. After flying around the crystal for one circle, the halos finally entered the crystal and turned into a shiny dragon scale on the crystal. What a marvel!

After doing all this, the old thing fumbled out a bright yellow crystal from the counter and gave it together with the dragon-shaped crystal plate to Zhang Tie, "It's okay!"

Watching the bright yellow crystal, Elder Muray faintly frowned, "Why there's only one earth-element crystal? Shouldn't it be two?"

"The earth-element realm is breaking out a fierce war. Bless the God that you can have one earth-element crystal. It's just a benefit being used to encourage human knights. It's normal even if you could not get one. How many do you want, a crate?" The old thing rolled his eyes, which choked Elder Muray so much, "Well, where's the money?"

Elder Muray took out some gold checks and put them on the counter.

At the sight of the par value, Zhang Tie was dumbfounded, 'Each of 4 gold checks is 1 million gold coins. It's the largest par value that Golden Roc Bank could issue!'

'Are such trivial items worth 4 million gold coins? 100 tons of gold?'

Zhang Tie watched the two items which weighed less than 250 g in total with an unbelievable look. He could not connect the two items with the 4 million gold coins for the time being.

Even though Zhang Tie had a wealth of 500 million gold coins, as he lived a tough life when he was young, he knew clearly about the value of 4 million gold coins.

Even so-called major clans in many small countries could not afford 4 million gold coins. Even the major clans in Blackhot City could barely afford 4 million gold coins.

After putting away the gold checks, the old thing seemingly knew what Zhang Tie was thinking about. He then threw a glance at Zhang Tie before explaining unsatisfactorily, "Do you think that knight's crystal plate is common? You can never find the second one across the world except for the Mountain of Brightness. It's already deducted given that you're a human knight. This item is your access to the knight's word. After injecting your spiritual energy in it, you will see whether it's worth 4 million gold coins or not."

After hearing this, Zhang Tie directly injected his spiritual energy into the knight's crystal plate.

After entering the knight's crystal plate once again, Zhang Tie saw a paragraph of words in his mind sea. It introduced the significance and usage of this knight's crystal plate to Zhang Tie.

Due to his powerful spiritual energy, it only took Zhang Tie less than 1 second to figure out the entire paragraph. He then widened his mouth.

Generally, this knight's crystal plate had three functions.

First, this knight's crystal plate indicated Zhang Tie's status as a knight. Now, the knight's crystal plate had been completely bundled with Zhang Tie. Only Zhang Tie could use and activate some special functions of this crystal plate. Only people with

human's knight's crystal plates could access to many mysterious human regions in the underground world. It was like each human knight's legit certificate. Additionally, this knight's crystal plate had established a certain mysterious contact with Zhang Tie. If Zhang Tie died, the Mountain of Brightness would know that first.

The second function of this knight's crystal plate was more marvelous...

## Chapter 763: Pushing Open the Door of the Knight's World (II)

---

Although being a knight, Zhang Tie only had an obscure feeling about his cultivation progress. However, he could see his cultivation progress and level clearly on the knight's crystal plate.

Black iron knight's crystal plate was blue. When the knight was going to form his earth chakra, the shape of the chakra would be displayed as a round pattern on a plane. Due to different cultivation methods, some round patterns were simple, some were complex. Now that they were round, they were composed of 360 degrees. That was to say, generally, all the chakras could be divided into 360 smaller parts equally. After lighting the 360 parts, it meant that the knight had formed a new chakra and promoted to the next level.

The 360 parts of a round pattern referred to a concrete division of ranks and cultivation progress.

In knight's word, 360 units of a chakra were called scales, dragon's scales. 360 scales referred to the number of stages that a black iron knight needed to go up before promoting to an earth knight.

The forming progress of the chakra could be sensed and reflected on the knight's crystal plate.

On the dragon-shaped crystal plate, there was a dragon relief which had 360 fine dragon scales. When Zhang Tie activated the knight's crystal plate just now, one dragon scale turned into bright yellow. It indicated that Zhang Tie had just lit 1 of the 360 scales which were required to form the earth chakra.

If Zhang Tie formed the second chakra, all the 360 dragon scales on the dragon-shaped crystal plate would turn into bright yellow. The moment the earth chakra started to run, the entire knight's

crystal plate would turn into bright yellow from blue.

After water chakra, the third chakra was formed, all the dragon scales on the knight's crystal plate would turn into black...and so on.

By displaying the cultivation progress to the knight, the knight's crystal plate could urge each knight to continue their cultivation and fix the target of each knight in the distant cultivation process.

What an exceptional function! However, after figuring out the third function of the knight's crystal plate, Zhang Tie became more dumbfounded.

The third function of the knight's crystal plate reminded Zhang Tie of the description about the information network that humans established in technological means before the Catastrophe that he read in the library. Before touching the knight's crystal plate, Zhang Tie had not imagined that there could be such an item in this age. He thought that the remote-sensing mirror crystal was already high-tech.

The remote-sensing crystal that could be used for one-to-one information transfer was already rare. By contrast, this knight's crystal plate was more powerful with more specialized functions. Especially after combining with the super powerful spiritual energy of knight, this knight's crystal plate had some exceptional functions that Zhang Tie had not even heard about before.

After being shocked for 2 seconds, Zhang Tie injected his spiritual energy into the mirror space of the knight's crystal plate in front of Elder Muray and that old guy.

The moment his spiritual energy entered the mirror space of the knight's crystal plate, Zhang Tie had sensed his spiritual energy being linked to a special information sea through the mirror space inside the crystal plate after being elongated as slim as a noodle. His spiritual energy then turned into a special wave.



That information sea was filled with a special brightness, which seemed to be billions of miles away from Zhang Tie but felt like it was right in front of Zhang Tie.

"Welcome to the Mountain of Brightness, human knight!"

A masculine, dignified voice drifted in Zhang Tie's mind through the feedback of his spiritual energy.

After the voice disappeared, a paragraph of words about Zhang Tie appeared in the astronomical information sea. The words were radiating faint, blue light.

Owner of the knight's crystal plate——Zhang Tie

Race——Hua

Clan——Huaiyuan Palace

Current Level——Black Iron Knight

Cultivation progress——1 scale

Byname in Mountain of Brightness——Chakra's tiger

Personal account——100,000 gold coins.

This information appeared in Zhang Tie's mind sea in blue words.

Zhang Tie knew that only he could see his individual information.

The byname in the Mountain of Brightness was fixed with each knight's crystal plate. Instead of being selected by individuals, it's completely optional. This byname was one each human knight's secret. They could not even expose it to their parents, wives or children. More than one human knight had been killed after leaking their byname in Mountain of Brightness.

The personal account was Zhang Tie's individual account in the organization of Mountain of Brightness. Needless to say, the 100,000 gold coins was spared from the 4 million gold coins that

Elder Muray had just paid for him. He had to pay to activate some functions of this knight's crystal plate.

Each human knight's personal account in Mountain of Brightness could freely flow. They could deposit in or withdraw from it. Four banks were available for human knights in Mountain of Brightness, namely Golden Roc Bank, Xuanyuan Bank and Pangu Bank in Taixia Country and Intercontinental Bank in Western Continent. With their own knight's crystal plate, human knights could deposit in or withdraw out money from their exclusive personal account in any of the above banks.

After this information faded away, with the constant injection of his spiritual energy, Zhang Tie opened a wholly new paper's front page.

On the top of the front page, there were 4 Hua characters which radiated golden light——光明之山 1 .

There were some notices in the scarlet letter right in the most eye-catching place below the 4 Hua characters "光明之山".

The first notice was——"Lion Fortress in Earth-element Realm wants No. 1 knights"

The second notice was——"Knights who head for the 3rd abyss for capturing underground dragons, attention, please. Bronze-class far-ancient demon beasts are discovered in the 3rd abyss.

The third notice was——"Severe demonized puppets disaster broke out in Blackhot Subcontinent. 180 million people turned into demonized puppets. Mountain of Brightness and 37 human countries across Blackhot Subcontinent off a reward to suppress it"

Zhang Tie didn't know what earth-element realm was.

He didn't know where was the 3rd abyss either.

He knew that Blackhot Subcontinent was far away from Waii Subcontinent. It was much larger than Waii Subcontinent. However, Zhang Tie just read it on the map. As for the terrifying

demonized puppets disaster being involved with 180 million people, Zhang Tie felt goosebumps all over.

Zhang Tie injected a bit of spiritual energy into the first notice while some new lines of words gradually appeared in Zhang Tie's mind sea.

It was a very fine map, which led people from the world above ground to the Lion Fortress in the Earth-element Realm. Right below the map was the treatment for No. 1 knights.

Black iron knight——2 earth-element crystals per month; keep all the booties; only after staying in Lion Fortress for 5 years, you will be qualified to leave your name on the Heavens Fortune Namelist and be awarded as a lord.

Earth knight——1 water-element crystal per month; keep all the booties; only after staying in Lion Fortress for 2 years, you will be qualified to leave your name on the Heavens Fortune Namelist and be awarded as a lord.

The map was valuable. After glancing over it, Zhang Tie bore those details in mind. Closely after that, he retreated from the first notice and returned to the front page.

Below these notices were three green words, respectively reward for hunting; goods trade; information exchange.

Zhang Tie skimmed all of them by his spiritual energy.

As for Zhang Tie, everything in the knight's world was strange. It seemed that he had entered a new world.

In the section "reward for hunting", Zhang Tie saw a live, grim image of a demon knight, below which was an introduction in two lines and some photos. The background of those photos was an urban relic and numerous human corpses...

——Daruba, a black iron demon knight raided the capital city of Filin Kingdom, a state of the Saint Dias Humans Countries Alliance on September 27th, the 895th year of Black Iron Calendar and

exterminated the royal members of Filin Kingdom. Besides, it killed over 267,000 innocent humans in total.

——Daruba, who cultivates Black Demon Sutra, is powerful. It's estimated that he has lit at least 200 scales on its earth chakra.

——Amount of reward——45 million gold coins.

After promoting to a knight, people could issue and receive reward tasks.

Of course, if you really didn't like someone, you could add 10 million more gold coins under that guy's reward for hunting notice so as to have him killed as fast as possible.

Under this demon knight was a long name-list of demon knights or knights of Three-eye Association. The minimal amount of reward for them was 10 million gold coins.

When in Waii Subcontinent, Zhang Tie saw less than 10 demon knights and knights of Three-eye Association in total. However, the name-list for hunting contained at least 300 demon knights and knights of Three-eye Association...

Watching this name-list, Zhang Tie indeed sensed the sheer terror of the holy war and great threat facing humans. The over 300 knights were just identified at the beginning of the holy war. However, many demon knights were unidentified among the super demon corps. Many demon corps were still on the way. For instance, Zhang Tie didn't know the name of that demon knight whom he killed in the underground world where he discovered the tower of time. Additionally, many human knights who had surrendered to demons were not unveiled yet.

'The key point is that I can only see this name-list as a black iron knight. I cannot see those names which could be seen by earth knights.'

As for any black iron demon knight whose name was not recorded on the name-list, as long as you could kill it or had a

certificate of killing it and brought its head to any branch of Mountain of Brightness, you would be able to get 5 million gold coins as a reward.

After reading this introduction under the name-list, Zhang Tie realized that he had wasted 5 million gold coins when he killed that demon knight in the underground world.

In the section of "goods trade", Zhang Tie saw all sorts of demands and ads for rare materials and equipment. Each ad was involved with an amazing trading volume.

These ads, or posts before the Catastrophe could not be issued for free. According to the service regulations, each ad should be verified by Mountain of Brightness at the cost of 50,000 gold coins before being displayed in this section and be available to all the knights through the spiritual ties with their crystal plates.

This section contained many pages, which was more similar to that information stored in crystal books. The difference was that the contents in the crystal books always remained unchanged, however, the contents in this section kept updating around the clock.

It would cost a reader 1000 gold coins to leave any comment behind any post. Additionally, that reply could not be displayed under that post without the consent of the administrator of the Mountain of Brightness.

All the human knights could contact other human knights through the Mountain of Brightness. However, this contact had to go through the Mountain of Brightness. Each message would cost 1000 gold coins too. Additionally, it would have a time lag.

All the knights issued messages and joined all the activities in Mountain of Brightness by their bynames.

...

As for the section "information exchange", Zhang Tie saw the

notices on the top of the section that No. 1 knights were needed by over 100 countries on all continents and subcontinents. Those black iron knights who wanted to enjoy a respected life could select a country to serve.

There were all sorts of posts in the latter. Only by skimming over those posts' topics, Zhang Tie had felt like widening his vision.

Among the posts, the most remarkable one was called "The Comparative Analysis about the Battle Forces of the Knights in the Seven Major Clans of Taixia Country"...

This was a paid read. A great part of posts was paid read in the entire section "Information Exchange". Some of these posts were passages, some were photos, some were sections of scenes that knights kept by secret methods. Such sections of scenes could also be transferred to Mountain of Brightness by knight's crystal plates through remote spiritual links, the price of which varied from thousands to tens of thousands of gold coins.

The byname of the author of the famous post "Comparative Analysis about the Battle Forces of Knights in Seven Major Clans of Taixia Country" was ——Student Informed Black Iron. Its price was 10,000 gold coins. Its overall rating was 87 points. At the sight of the viewing times of paid read, Zhang Tie's eye corners twitched ——13614.

'A passage is worth above 100 million gold coins?'

When Zhang Tie retreated from the knight's crystal plate, he was still shocked by the value of the passage.

'Is this the knight's world?'

Although that passage was eye-catching in the section Information Exchange, not all the paid reads could be marked at such a high price. Some posts even had no view. However, Zhang Tie was still shocked.

Zhang Tie finally understood why a knight's crystal plate was

worth 4 million gold coins. Because the only crystal information network was established in Mountain of Brightness, the exclusive circle of the top figures in this age.

...

After half an hour, Zhang Tie and Elder Muray left Tianfang City. After walking out of the city, they blasted off and flew towards Huaiyuan Palace.

"Elder Muray, I will have Golden Roc Bank transfer 4 million gold coins to you when I come back!" Zhang Tie told Elder Muray after recovering his composure.

"No need. It's paid by Huaiyuan Palace out of respect. If Huaiyuan Palace couldn't afford such a payment, it's destined to be exterminated!" Elder Muray recovered his bad-tempered personality. After replying to Zhang Tie, he sighed, "But there's only one earth-element crystal!"

"Ahh, what's this crystal used for?" Zhang Tie took out that golden crystal and asked Elder Muray.

"Whether you could only get earth element from elements realm now?"

"Yes!"

"Earth-element crystal is a rarity exploited from the earth-element realm. It contains a large number of pure earth elements. It's the best tunic for black iron knights. When you enter meditation next time, you can hold this crystal by hand so as to extract the pure earth elements from it. After that, you can inject it into the earth chakra. In this way, you could accelerate your cultivation speed greatly!"

"Oh, I see!" Zhang Tie tightly held that earth-element crystal.

"As a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace, you can get 4 earth-element crystals per year. They could accelerate your cultivation speed greatly, although being less!"

"Can we buy it from somewhere?"

"As such crystals contained pure elements, no knights would sell them; instead, they will all keep them for themselves. Therefore, you can not buy them no matter how rich you are!"

"Mountain of Brightness is generous!"

"Ha...ha...if you want more earth-element crystals to accelerate your cultivation speed, you have to fight in the earth-element realm. It's also an incentive!"

"Earth-element realm?"

Zhang Tie recalled this name while the map that he saw through his knight's crystal plate reappeared in his mind. Zhang Tie remembered that there was an underground cave in Lanzhou Province, Taixia Country that led to the Lion Fortress in Earth-element Realm...

When he thought about Taixia Country, Zhang Tie waved his head once again. 'Based on my current situation, even though I want to go to the Earth-element Realm, I would not make it in a short period. Step by step. Just handle the current things first.'

The passage which was worth over 100 million gold coins reappeared in Zhang Tie's mind...

'What an interesting knight's world...'



# Chapter 764: Decision

---

Zhang Tie rubbed his eyes as he raised his head from the pile of books.

He was occupied in books for a whole day.

All the books were about human lives and network before the Catastrophe. Besides, there were some gnosis about cultivation and notes of clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace. Those books were collected in the library of Hidden Dragon Island while those gnosis and notes were collected in Yiyang Mountain; especially the gnosis and notes which contained many secrets of Huaiyuan Palace and various knowledge of the knight's world and could only be read by elders of Huaiyuan Palace.

Although it took Zhang Tie one day to read them, it was worthy.

Mountain of Brightness was human knights' union and the most powerful human organization. Additionally, the Mountain of Brightness could be described as a web server in the network term before the Catastrophe. The knight's crystal plate was the information access of this web server. Each knight could connect their spiritual energy with the web server of Mountain of Brightness through their own knight's crystal plate and shared the resources inside it.

Each knight was the registrant of this network forum. Each one's byname in Mountain of Brightness was their username or web name. Based on their levels, they could have different accesses. All the resources were open freely to the knights with higher levels; namely, knights with lower levels could not access to higher-level resources.

Earth knights could browse all the resources about the section of black iron knights; however, black iron knights could not access the resources which were open to earth knights.

That was a network!

The information network before the Catastrophe was electrical network; however, this network constructed by crystals was a quantum network.

Knights' strong spiritual energy, knights' wealth and purchasing power and knights' importance to humans determined that only knights could access to Mountain of Brightness.

Those with weak spiritual energy could not access to it; those lacking money could not afford it. What a reality!

This network could not be built by humans in this age. According to the notes of those clan elders of Huaiyuan Palace, Mountain of Brightness was actually a prehistorical secret treasure excavated from the underground world together with Xuanyuan Hill. It was a product of crystal civilization that humans developed by crystals numerous years ago. According to the legend, this Mountain of Brightness was an extremely huge piece of crystal right in Xuanyuan Hill of Taixia Country. Since the Mountain of Brightness was discovered, numerous elites in Taixia Country had been studying about its usage.

The main component of the crystal was silicon, which was the best carrier for information storage and transfer. Silicon was the most abundant element in this world. Actually, the entire land was mainly composed of silicon. Therefore, according to the opinion of an academism which was obsessed with the study about the functions of crystal, this world could be treated as a huge crystal in the universe. The pieces of this huge crystal were not independent; instead, they were exchanging information around the clock. These pieces of crystal could form a huge crystal information network in the unified energy field of the universe through intercommunication. In a certain period of human history, people used special functions of crystal to develop a brilliant civilization.

In black iron age, humans excavated and inherited some

functions of crystal such as lighting surging points, making long-distance communications and building the only information network.

In black iron age, human civilizations vanished and gained rebirth.

Zhang Tie's byname in Mountain of Brightness was Chakra's Tiger. Zhang Tie was curious about the bynames of the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace.

However, this question was forbidden in the knight's world. All the information about a knight in the Mountain of Brightness were confidential.

Those materials left by the elders benefited Zhang Tie a lot. Until then did Zhang Tie realize that he had entered the Knight's world completely.

Zhang Tie looked outside and found a golden sunglow hanging over the skyline, illuminating the windows of the study room on the entire second storey of the attic.

Zhang Tie picked himself up and leisurely went off the attic.

Deacon Yu and two beautiful servants of Long Sight Peak were waiting outside the attic. Watching Zhang Tie coming downstairs, the three women put their crossed hands on the left waists. After that, they lowered their bodies and faintly bowed towards Zhang Tie.

"Elder!"

Besides beautiful looks, their etiquette also made Zhang Tie comfortable.

When they lowered their bodies and faintly bowed towards Zhang Tie, they were displaying their delicate curves and special, enchanting feminine temperament. Each time Zhang Tie saw the greeting etiquette of Hua women, he would feel very special and polite.

All the women on Long Sight Peak had excellent figures, white skin and black hair, which fit the aesthetic standard of Hua people very much. Deacon Yu made a peony-shaped bun while the other two made a double conch-shaped bun and a flying fairy-shaped bun respectively. The peony-shaped bun was mature and elegant, the double conch-shaped bun was naive and witty, the flying fairy-shaped bun was brilliant and flexible. The three women's hairstyle matched with each other. Additionally, all of them were wearing fluttering long skirts while faintly exposing their plump breasts. Zhang Tie glanced over their bulged chests and curved butts as he stealthily swallowed his saliva faintly.

Honestly, Zhang Tie was impulsive to raise the three women's jaws by his finger.

"Ahem...ahem...get up!" Zhang Tie issued the order as he moved his eyes from their bodies. Meanwhile, he exclaimed inside, 'How sharp is the beauty trick of the elders! No man could bear not opening up and sowing on the 'fertile land' 1 while facing them all the year round.'

The three women got up with a faint blush. Due to the sharp instinct, they had sensed Zhang Tie's glance although they didn't raise heads.

"Elder, you've not eaten food for a whole day. Do you want to eat some?" Deacon Yu asked with a faint blush.

Zhang Tie touched his belly as he replied, "I will have some then. And, put away those books and secret gnosis and send them back to Hidden Dragon Island!"

Closely after Zhang Tie's order, someone had collected the books.

"Hmm, fine, are you going out now, Elder?"

"No, I'm just going to take a walk on the Long Sight Peak and breathe some fresh air!" Zhang Tie explained as he walked out of the attic.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking out, Deacon Yu threw a glance at the two women on her side. With a faint blush, the two women lowered their heads and followed Zhang Tie out.

When Zhang Tie came to a lookout pavilion in the courtyard, he looked at the beautiful mountainscape and the shimmering sea level at the foot of the mountain in the distance and let out a long sigh.

Standing on the Long Sight Peak, the scenery was pretty good with an open vision. Besides the scenery on Yiyang Mountain, the ocean in the distance could also be enjoyed. All in all, Zhang Tie felt pretty open-minded and relaxed here.

Zhang Tie felt that he had gotten rid of the pile of books and secret gnosis spiritually.

At this moment, Zhang Tie heard faint footsteps from his back. He looked back and found he was followed by 2 beautiful girls.

"Elder, as you've read books for a whole day, you must be tired. Ziyun and Ruxuan wish to help you relax yourself..." The beautiful girl in the flying fairy-shaped bun asked bravely with a blush.

"Fine!" Zhang Tie nodded.

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, the two girls moved into the lookout pavilion in an enchanting way. After that, one of them took out a jade flute from the wall of the lookout pavilion while the other took out a qin, a seven-stringed plucked instrument in some ways similar to a zither. In a split second, the flute and the qin sounded while a distant music reverberated around the lookout pavilion. The music was as melodious and soothing as white clouds in the air and as natural and elegant as pines in the breeze which matched with the scenery pretty well. Watching the golden sunglow in the distance and listening to the melodious rhythm, Zhang Tie was immersed in the nice realm.

'Knight is just the first step for me to climb towards my peak. It's

just a beginning. For the rest of my life, I will never live up to this body. I will definitely reach the highest mountain peak and see the scenery under it.' Zhang Tie muttered to himself.

After making this decision, Zhang Tie felt that he became spirited at once while an ecstasy filled his body.

After a while, the sun set off while the golden sunglow gradually faded away. The night breeze felt a bit cold. After hearing a pause in the music, Zhang Tie turned around while the two women stopped too.

The woman who was playing the qin was that with the flying fairy-shaped bun. Facing the cold night breeze, her movement slowed down a bit, causing a musical note to lose its agility faintly. However, she had not imagined that Zhang Tie could observe it. Watching Zhang Tie turning around, the woman's face became completely red. She had not imagined that this young elder was so proficient in music. Of course, she didn't know how Zhang Tie lived for 15 years in the tower of time with the imitating bloodline.

Zhang Tie came to the front of the woman. After that, he pressed down a string with one finger and plucked it by another hand, causing an agile, nice note from the long qin, leaving an elegant sound curl.

Both girls blushed. Only after hearing the very musical note, the two girls had already known that they met the real music master. They had not imagined that Zhang Tie was proficient in music besides having promoted to the knight at such a young age.

"Please forgive us!" The two girls exchanged a glance with each other before hurriedly getting up and asking for Zhang Tie's punishment by lowing their body.

"Ha...ha...ha, nice scenery, nice music and better people. How innocent you are!" Zhang Tie burst into laughter, "Get up!"

When the two women got up, Zhang Tie couldn't help but pat

their curved butts...

"Ahh..." They exclaimed at the same time as they almost sprung up.

"Hmm, it's getting cold. Remember to put on warm clothes later on. Although your skirts are nice, they are a bit thin. I'm enjoying such a good scenery, but I cannot make you catch a cold!" Zhang Tie joked as he left.

The two women blushed at once as they exchanged a glance with each other. As they realized that Zhang Tie was so fickle, they silently reminded each other.

...

In the dining hall, Deacon Yu had prepared well the supper for Zhang Tie.

When Zhang Tie ate, Deacon Yu just served him on one side.

"Have you eaten? Come on, let's have it together!" Zhang Tie asked casually.

"Youlan has finished supper!" Deacon Yu shook her head as she explained, "As we're going to hold the rotating chakra ceremony tomorrow, this supper should be made of vegetables according to the regulation. Are you accustomed to it, elder?"

Zhang Tie watched the over 10 assorted vegetable dishes and revealed a smile, "It doesn't matter. From today on, just prepare 3 dishes and 1 soup for me in each meal. No need to be so wasteful!"

"Yes, sir!"

...

After dinner, Zhang Tie took a bath and changed his clothes. He then entered meditation with closed eyes in the elder's pavilion and waited for the rotating chakra ceremony...

Incenses were burning in the elder's pavilion.

# Chapter 765: The Rotating Chakra Ceremony

---

Entering the void realm without any desire!

Zhang Tie entered meditation overnight with a clear mind. He became relaxed all over in a special state. Gradually, the day broke.

When the sound of footsteps drifted from outside the attic, Zhang Tie was muttering——The law of the heavens is mysterious; the law of the earth is stable. If the heaven was not extremely mysterious, the spirits of all things would not exist; if the earth was not extremely stable, all things would not be carried out. Due to the mystery of the heavens and the stability of the earth, all sorts of mysterious phenomena of sun, moons and stars appeared in the sky and elements of water, fire, soil and rocks formed on the earth. Due to the changing phenomena in the sky, all things were nourished. Due to all things' mysterious responses to the phenomena in the sky, they finally showed themselves to us. Therefore, the mysterious and stable abstruseness led to everything, accepted everything and contained everything.

"Elder, the blessed moment has arrived!" Deacon Yu's voice sounded outside the room.

After opening his eyes, Zhang Tie saw two teams led by Deacon Yu and Yiyang Mountain and those women in the elder's pavilion of the Long Sight Peak cupping all sorts of clothes and tools and watching him with a respectful look.

Zhang Tie had been familiar with today's procedure. At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie just stood up silently while stretching out his arms.

Those women swarmed up at once and started to dress up Zhang Tie as soon as possible.

After a few minutes, those women left. A deacon then passed a



mirror to Zhang Tie to let him watch himself.

A crown made of violet gold which symbolized the good fortune of a fighter, a robe with a python pattern, a jade belt and gold hooks on it; a double-colored jade pendant, a pair of shoes with auspicious clouds and a unicorn pattern on it, a demon-killing sword on his waist. Watching such an image in the mirror, Zhang Tie, aged just 16, was shocked by his majesty.

All the women in the elder's pavilion were obsessed with Zhang Tie's new image.

As the old saying went, "People became dignified by high-end clothes while horse became excellent by its saddle. Even Zhang Tie felt that he looked pretty handsome at this moment."

Zhang Tie nodded, "It's fine!"

After that, Zhang Tie followed the two teams of deacons out of the elder's pavilion on the top of Long Sight Peak.

When Zhang Tie walked out of the elder's pavilion on Long Sight Peak, the first ray of sunshine reached the Shrine Palace of Yiyang Mountain.

"Dong..."

A distant yet vigorous and firm bell ring drifted from the highest peak of Yiyang Mountain and reverberated around the entire Yiyang Mountain. Even residents in Yiyang City heard the sound.

When the bell rang reached the foot of the mountain, it sounded across Huaiyuan Prefecture at the same time.

At that moment, both sides of the square outside the Shrine Palace of Yiyang Mountain had been crowded with people. However, nobody uttered any sound. They were just waiting for the major character.

When the first bell rang, Zhang Tie, on the mountain path, started to release his battle-qi totem.

Even though it was daytime, a brilliant battle-qi totem could still be seen above Yiyang Mountain. Just like wanting to match with the sun's brilliance, it could be seen from 100 miles away.

It was a five-element battle qi that Zhang Tie imitated according to the "Five-element Ground-look Sutra". The "Five-element Ground-look Sutra" was just a viscount-level secret knowledge. Although it was not the most powerful one, it was extremely brilliant.

At the sight of the battle-qi totem rising in the sky from the mountain, all the onlookers on both sides of the square outside the Shrine Palace became faintly excited. Although so many people came to attend the chakra rotating ceremony, not every one of them had a chance to watch the knight's battle-qi totem rising in the air from such a short distance.

Watching the rising battle-qi totem, many people's eyes became eager.

"Dong..."

With another bell ring from Yiyang Mountain, everybody across Yiyang Mountain felt like their hearts were pounding.

With the constant bell rings, Zhang Tie walked frankly towards the Shrine Palace one stage by another on the golden carpet which extended from the Long Sight Peak. At every few meters, there was a disciple of Huaiyuan Palace in a ceremonial robe on one side of the mountain path, who would give a salute to Zhang Tie when Zhang Tie passed by them.

Under the guidance of the two rows of deacons, when Zhang Tie reached the outside of the Shrine Palace, the bell had rung 27 times as was scheduled.

Zhang Tie saw all sorts of onlookers on both sides of the square of the Shrine Palace, male or female, old or young, familiar or strange.

Zhang Tie instantly caught sight of those family members from the old mansion in Golden Sea City. They were in a special location. Zhang Haitian, the head of Zhang family, Zhang Haitian's wives, Zhang Tie's uncles, aunts, cousins, nephews and nieces, 50-60 people in total.

Zhang Tie was so thrilled that his face turned completely red. Even his mustache was quivering. All the other members of Zhang family were chinning up and chesting out and watching Zhang Tie with enthusiastic looks. Zhang Su was also watching Zhang Tie with an intricate and awe-stricken look.

Zhang Tie's powerful knight's battle-qi totem was oppressive to everybody below the knight. Those cultivators could sense Zhang Tie's power especially.

Zhang Tie faintly nodded towards those people from Zhang's old mansion, which made many of them excited.

What a clan's honor! From today on, Zhang family in Golden Sea City would be dignified and respected.

Actually, the family members in the old mansion of Zhang Clan had already sensed the honor from the number of onlookers.

Zhang Tie noticed familiar faces one after another from the crowd.

Zhang Tie caught sight of Zerom and Captain Kerlin standing in the stand area below the banner of Armes, the empire of mercenary. Zerom looked more mature than before with a mustache, who was able to control his facial expression at the sight of Zhang Tie. Captain Kerlin the cyclops widely opened his mouth which could even hold an ostrich's egg as he constantly rubbed his eyes.

"Zerom, it's truly that little jerk. Do I see the wrong person?" Captain Kerlin whispered to Zerom.

"You jerk. Shut up if you don't want to die. Do you want

Huaiyuan Palace to chop us and feed our meat to sharks?" Zerom maintained a faint smile as he stomped onto the Cyclop's foot, causing him to show his teeth in pain.

Zhang Tie sniggered inside. How could the two guys' little tricks and whispers escape from his senses?

Zhang Tie still revealed a smile towards them. Many people in the area of Armes revealed a shocked expression like being favored.

In the stand area for Norman Empire's onlookers, Zhang Tie saw some familiar faces too——Reinhardt, Leibnitz, Guderian of No. 39 Regiment of Iron-horn Corps were standing on the side of a 40-year old blonde man in a royal dress. Watching Zhang Tie passing by them, they all gazed at Zhang Tie with widely opened eyes. It seemed that they wanted to identify whether Zhang Tie was the same person that they were familiar with.

The 40-year old blonde man moved his eyes from Zhang Tie to the 3 people who were familiar with Zhang Tie. The three guys exchanged a glance with each other before faintly nodding. It seemed that they had confirmed Zhang Tie's status at the same time. The 40-year old blonde man then revealed a brilliant smile towards Zhang Tie.

After the stand area of Norman Empire's onlookers, Zhang Tie noticed Princess Candis of Raymlan Empire. Seeing Zhang Tie walking in front of her, dignified Princess Candis even ogled Zhang Tie.

Then, he saw an old friend, Taishi Ci, whom he met in Heavens Cold City with a slim-leg beauty on his side. A purple-faced old man who looked similar to Taishi Ci was standing in front of them. At the sight of the old man, Zhang Tie knew that he was the head of Taishi Clan.

Zhang Tie nodded towards Taishi Ci, who immediately became excited as he whispered to that beauty on his side, "Look, I've told you that my brother Zhang Tie is very loyal. He still remembers

me!"

"Who knows whether he's greeting you or not?" That beauty argued in a low voice as she gazed at Zhang Tie like being drawn by a magnet on Zhang Tie's body.

"Brother Zhang Tie..." Taishi Ci wanted to argue...

"Shut up, Zhang Tie is now an elder of Huaiyuan Palace. Who's your brother?" That purple-faced old man turned around and swore. Taishi Ci instantly shut up; however, he still made a grimace towards Zhang Tie.

After that, Zhang Tie noticed the representatives of elders and young men from the other major clans of Jinyun Country. The only one that Zhang Tie was familiar with among those elders was the Lan elder whom he met in Selnes Theater of Operations. However, Zhang Tie also saw some familiar faces that he had ever met in Selnes Theatre of Operations among those young men.

Besides the Lan elder who maintained a smile towards Zhang Tie, all the others revealed intricate expressions. With one more young knight and a clan elder at 20 years of age, Huaiyuan Palace immediately overwhelmed the young generation of all the other clans, causing a great stress to all the other clans...

# Chapter 766: Elder Mushen

---

The four elders of Huaiyuan Palace were all standing outside the Shrine Palace in auspicious clothes today

According to the strict procedure of the rotating chakra ceremony, Zhang Tie burned incenses in the Shrine Palace in the solemn atmosphere. After that, Elder Muen as a ritual officer shouted, "Lower your body!"; Zhang Tie then started to bow towards the heavens and the earth. Finally, he inserted the burning incense into the copper cauldron which was placed right outside the gate of the Shrine Palace. After that, he walked into the Shrine Palace.

The entire Shrine Palace was extremely brilliant.

The ground was paved with gold bricks with a pattern of auspicious clouds. All sorts of ceremonial banners and prayer flags were hanging on the pillars inside the palace. Expensive heaven-star sandalwood was burning in the copper cauldron, which did not only light the entire palace, but also covered the entire palace with a special fragrance. The entire Shrine Palace was magnificent and looked more like an imperial palace.

Zhang Tie was the first one who strode into the palace from the front gate. The moment he entered the palace had Zhang Tie put away his battle-qi totem.

The 4 elders of Huaiyuan Palace followed Zhang Tie in; then the other deacons and clan members of Huaiyuan Palace. The others entered in the end. However, except for Zhang Tie and the other four elders, all the others were forbidden to enter from the front gate; instead, they could only enter from the two side doors in an orderly and rigorous way.

Nobody else was allowed to enter the front gate of the Shrine Palace except for the clan head and elders.

Zhang Tie slowly walked on those gold bricks with full emotions. At this moment, Zhang Tie expected that his parents were watching him from aside.

After entering the palace and passing a long way, Zhang Tie came to the statue of Lord Huaiyuan and the memorial tablets of the ancestors and martyrs of Huaiyuan Palace. With the assistance of the clan deacons, he started to light incenses and offer sacrifice to all the ancestors and martyrs step by step.

When Zhang Tie was offering sacrifice, Elder Muen took out a gold brochure and started to read an elegiac address loudly on Zhang Tie's side.

"The god's descendant in Taixia Country benefits the world. Xuanyuan bloodline the unrivaled, we're majestic and vigorous; Long Bow grants us the surname..."

It took Zhang Tie 3 minutes to finish offering the sacrifice to all the ancestors and martyrs in a solemn and strict way.

After Zhang Tie finished it, the elegiac address also almost came to an end...

"We have an offspring called Zhang Tie. He could swim as fast as a fish in the water and fly as fast as a dragon in the sky. He could rotate his chakra and protect the country and its countrymen. As ancestor Huaiyuan Lord is at present, the righteousness will exist forever. Wish it prosperous forever!"

Soon after the word "forever", Zhang Tie rightly finished the last bow and inserted the final 3 incenses into the censer which represented the memorial plates of Zhang's bloodline in Golden Sea City. Some new memorial plates had been put there, which were the memorial plates of Zhang Haitian's father, grandfather and grand-grandfather.

When one person rotated the chakra, he would bring honor to his three elder generations. His ancestors' memorial plates would also

enter the Shrine Palace and enjoy the burning incenses.

Watching this scene, Zhang Haitian was so excited that his eyes were even filled with tears.

Zhang Tie stood up and turned to the big cauldron in the middle of the palace. Deacons then carried gold basins of milk, grease, grains and sesame from both sides and walked towards the cauldron in the middle of the palace.

Zhang Tie grabbed the grains and sesame from the gold basins and scattered them into the fiery flames in the big cauldron one handful after another.

Each time he scattered them into the cauldron, the fiery flames would grow higher while the top flames turned golden and surged out of the cauldron as fantastic as a dragon. Sparkles constantly flew out of the cauldron, causing flowing light and cracking sound.

It was a ritual for blessing.

Seeing the flames growing fiercely in the shape of a dragon and sparkles surging out of the cauldron, the elders and deacons of Huaiyuan Palace became so excited as it was a rare auspicious sign. At least it didn't appear when the earlier elders of Huaiyuan Palace held the rotating chakra ceremonies.

All the elders of major clans from Jinyun Country were shocked by such a rare, auspicious phenomenon.

Zhang Tie didn't know what was an auspicious phenomenon. He just completed the rotating chakra ceremony step by step.

After scattering all the grains and sesame into the cauldron, Zhang Tie started to wash his hands in a silver basin of water.

"The blessing ritual is over. Carry out the gold chakra!" Elder Muen said as a huge sacrificial vessel was carried to the middle of the palace by 30 tough men.

Being over 6 m in height and over 2 m in width, the sacrificial



vessel looked like a huge round metal barrel with all sorts of flowers, birds, insects and fishes and characters on it. On two sides of the barrel, there were two huge Hua characters " 穆 1 ". Its weight could be imagined from the number of carriers.

Zhang Tie knew that an important step in the entire rotating chakra ceremony was to select a character by rotating the chakra.

This word "chakra" in the rotating chakra ceremony referred to both knight's chakra and this rotating gold barrel which was used for selecting a Hua character for the very knight.

As a Hua tradition, it was a great honor for knights to rotate a gold barrel so as to fix their characters.

For instance, the name Zhang Tie was very average. There were billions of people surnamed Zhang in this world. There were at least 1000 living people who were called Zhang Tie. If you said Zhang Tie was a knight, nobody would know which one did you refer to.

Therefore, knights had to rotate the gold barrel to select a character for themselves. As long as they selected the very character, nobody else was allowed to use this name in 1000 years unless humans were exterminated.

When wild geese flew over, they left their quacks; when knights died, they had to leave their names, which was the paramount glory of knights.

Of course, Elder Muen 2 , Elder Muray 3 and Elder Muyu 4 were not their raw names. The character "穆" was "grabbed" by Lord Huaiyuan for knights of Huaiyuan Palace. Besides the knights of Huaiyuan Palace, no Hua people surnamed Zhang in this world could use the character "穆" as the second character in their names. Each elder would also "grab" the last character for their name in the rotating chakra ceremony. When the last character combined with the character "穆", it would form the unique name of knights of Huaiyuan Palace. As Elder Muray, Elder Muray and Elder Muyu

had promoted to knights for so long, everybody just called their formal names. As a result, their raw names were rarely mentioned.

There were 999 Hua characters left on the gold barrel. It depended on which one would Zhang Tie select.

Everyone wondered which Hua character could the youngest knight of Zhang Clan would select.

After slowly walking to the gold barrel, Zhang Tie raised his head and watched this gold sacrificial vessel. He then took a deep breath and put one hand on the gold barrel.

Zhang Tie also wondered which Hua character could he select.

Zhang Tie then released his battle qi to rotate the gold barrel rapidly.

When it rotated, clattering sounds drifted from inside the gold barrel like numerous metal balls being stirred up. Zhang Tie just waited on one side silently together with all the others.

Only the clattering sounds could be heard in the entire Shrine Palace.

Only when the gold barrel rotated above 36 circles could a Hua character be "selected". Nobody could see through the gold barrel. It depended.

After 2 minutes, the gold barrel slowed down. When it finally stopped, with a click, a silver round ball was spat out of the mouth of the gold barrel.

Elder Muen walked forward and took out that silver ball. At the sight of that golden character, he raised high the silver ball and showed it to all the onlookers at present.

At the sight of that character, all the onlookers widened their eyes, 'No way!'

It was the character " 神 5 ", which was majestic.

" 穆神 6 "——the formal name of Zhang Tie as a knight. From

then on, Zhang Mushen would be a unique name in the world.

Zhang Tie also felt a bit surprised, 'Did the gold barrel know that I've long been a jerk god in Ice and Snow Wilderness?'

'Zhang Tie...Zhang Mushen...Zhang Tie...Zhang Mushen...'  
Zhang Tie muttered twice inside as he still felt the name Zhang Tie was easy to read aloud. Now that it was a tradition, Zhang Tie didn't mean to be bizarre; instead, he just accepted it frankly.

"Please take a seat, Elder Mushen!" Elder Muen cupped his hands towards Zhang Tie, followed by all the elders of all the other clans at present.

From then on, Zhang Tie was on the equal footing with all the other elders of Zhang Clan.

...

The seat was a black, steel high-back chair, a sacrificial vessel which was specially designed for the rotating chakra ceremony. It was square and straight without any surplus decoration. It was called the black iron throne. Being put on the three-stage high platform which was paved with gold bricks, it looked pretty dignified.

With a gold tray in hand, a deacon was standing in front of the gold-stage platform respectfully. Zhang Tie walked over there. Elder Muray then unveiled the red silky cover and put a tiger-shaped seal into Zhang Tie's hand.

"From now on, you are the commander of Hurricane Corps!"

Zhang Tie received the tiger-shaped seal of Hurricane Corps and nodded towards Elder Muray. After that, he walked onto the stages one step after another and sat on the black iron throne steadily.

"Congrats!" Elder Muen shouted loudly while his voice drifted in the entire Shrine Palace.

Zhang Taibai, Lan Yunxi's 4th uncle solemnly walked out of the

crowd and bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie.

"Zhang Taibai wishes Elder Mushen a good fortune in battle force and hopes that your chakra rotates forever on behalf of Huaiyuan Palace. In order to congratulate for the rotating chakra ceremony of Elder Mushen, we especially present 500 tons of gold, 200 crates of pearls, 100 crates of gems, 30,000 m python silk cloth, 1 manor in Yiyang City, Golden Sea City and Stars Viewing City respectively."

Watching those big figures of Long Wind Business Group and Huaiyuan Palace bowing and presenting gifts to him respectfully, Zhang Tie had an unspeakable feeling...

After saying this, Zhang Taibai passed the list of gifts to Deacon Yu before moving to one side silently while another 40-year old man walked forward and bowed towards Zhang Tie...

"Wang Juan wishes Elder Mushen a good fortune in battle force and hopes that your chakra rotates forever on behalf of Wang Clan of Shuyu Palace, Jinyun Country. We especially present 100 tons of gold, 100 pairs of flat round jade wares with a hole in the center and 100 rhinoceros dragons."

After saying that, Wang Juan passed the list of gifts to Deacon Yu.

Another person walked out and bowed towards Zhang Tie...

"Lan Xiuchuan wishes Elder Mushen a good fortune in battle force and hopes that your chakra rotates forever on behalf of Lan Clan, Banxin Palace, Jinyun Country. We especially present 100 tons of gold, 1,000 high-end crystals and 100 kg's god-favored incenses."

After Lan Clan, Ou Clan of Chuixue Palace, Dantai Clan of Tuisi Palace, Li Clan of Qingmu Palace and Dongfang Clan of Qilan Country presented their wishes and gifts respectively...

Those congratulators passed by Zhang Tie one after another

while the list of gifts in the hand of Deacon Yu grew thicker. She had to put them into a gold plate...

Zhang Tie was shocked inside, 'What the hell! This is more like a plunder ceremony than a rotating chakra ceremony. Zhang Tie was familiar with some of the items on the list of presents, as for others, they had not heard about them at all...

When it was Norman Empire's turn, the congratulator was that middle-aged blonde man who was in front of Reinhardt and Leibnitz just now.

"Filis, the crown prince of Norman Empire wishes Elder Mushen a good fortune in battle force and hopes your chakra rotates forever on behalf of the royal household of Norman Empire. We especially present a small gift for Elder Mushen, 200 tons of gold, 20 earth-element crystals, 100 crates of all sorts of jewelry and 100 beauties!"

The crown prince spoke Hua language very fluently. His gifts could even match that of Huaiyuan Palace, especially the earth-element crystals. Everybody else was shocked by the 20 earth-element crystals. They wondered why Norman Empire would establish a relationship with this young elder of Huaiyuan Palace, especially with the 100 beauties. In such a case, if not having known the temperament of Zhang Tie, nobody dared present women to him at the risk of aggravating him...

When he heard "100 beauties", Zhang Tie threw a helpless glance at Leibnitz and Reinhardt in the distance. Colonel Leibnitz even revealed a humble smile to Zhang Tie. Needless to say, Zhang Tie realized that his "romantic affairs" must have been known well by them. Therefore, they catered to his pleasure...

After the words of the crown prince of Norman Empire, Zhang Tie sensed a resentful look. He chased after the look to its owner and found Princess Candis was faintly pouting her petite mouth towards him...

# Chapter 767: Bidding a Farewell

---

On November 9th, an airship base outside Yiyang City...

Before boarding the airship, Princess Candis turned around and ran into Zhang Tie's arms and gave him a deep kiss.

"Darling, I miss you so much, will you come back for me?"

"I will!" Zhang Tie patted her butt with a smile.

Watching the two people embracing each other, all the other representatives of Raymlan Empire disappeared.

Princess Candis was a stunner. In the past one week in Huaiyuan Prefecture, this woman brought Zhang Tie a lot of pleasure. As a result, Zhang Tie had a deeper understanding of the word princess. In one word—all the princesses in fairy tales were deceptive!

"You promise me..." Princess Candis urged.

"I promise!"

Princess Candis instantly held the thing in Zhang Tie's crotch in an audacious way. Like shaking hands, she started to wave it as she licked Zhang Tie's earlobe faintly and held it in her mouth. She then faintly bit it and slid her tongue on it. The hot and sweet air was exhaled directly onto Zhang Tie's ear, "Darling, you can accompany me for another distance, when the airship leaves Huaiyuan Prefecture, you can fly back. We've got 3 hours left..."

Princess Candis' audacity made Zhang Tie embarrassed in the public.

Thank god, this woman in a brilliant princess' longuette and sable shawl finally boarded the airship. Watching the airship setting off, Zhang Tie let out a deep sigh.

Only after less than a week since the rotating chakra ceremony, the wind coming from northwest had become abruptly cold in Yiyang City, especially in the open airship base.

Princess Candis was the last one who left Yiyang City among all the guests. On November 5th, Zerom and Captain Kerlin had already left Yiyang City. On the same day, Zhang Tie invited them for dinner. Finally, Zhang Tie saw them off in the airship base. Due to this reason, the two people instantly became stars among the representatives of Armes, the mercenary empire.

Due to the all-purpose medicament, the exchange between Armes and Huaiyuan Palace grew more intimate these years. Armes required more help from Huaiyuan Palace; therefore, the major mercenary groups in Armes brought Zhang Tie a big gift.

Due to the sparse demonized puppets disasters across Waii Sub-continent and the demand of rich men and business groups for safety brought the heyday of mercenaries and mercenary groups at the beginning of the holy war. Mercenaries and mercenary groups might be the only human professions and organizations that would appreciate the arrival of the holy war and chaotic world. In the former holy wars, many fierce and powerful people appeared in mercenaries and mercenary groups. After each holy war, there would always be a lot of mercenary groups or excellent figures in mercenary groups who registered their ambitions to be kings by establishing countries.

Zerom was now the head of the logistics department of Thor Mercenary Group, who had already established his position in Thor's Mercenary Group. Captain Kerlin who went to seek refuge with Zerom after "being crossed in love" had become a battalion chief in Thor's Mercenary Group.

Actually, Zhang Tie always felt that Captain Kerlin would not feel comfortable in school or regular army based on his temperament. Perhaps, he would feel freer in a mercenary group. After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie really felt that he was destined to share some feeling with Captain Kerlin. After Miss Daina married a doctor, Zhang Tie and Captain Kerlin were both disappointed.

After meeting Captain Kerlin and Zerom, Zhang Tie understood many things. All the successes and growths needed to be paid. Some could be seen, some could not. Some could be kept after you made efforts; however, some could not be kept even if you made efforts.

Previously, he was their students; now, he was the knight elder of Huaiyuan Palace. What a sharp difference between their positions! Therefore, Zerom and Captain Kerlin both looked a bit restrained in front of Zhang Tie. Actually, Zhang Tie preferred that former Captain Kerlin who was always careless in front of him. Pitifully, Captain Kerlin could never be careless in front of a knight, especially when the knight was his student.

Perhaps, the only thing that Zhang Tie felt unchanged was the trust and friendship between them which was established in Blackhot City. Even though such a trust and friendship was inevitable and utilitarian, it was better than nothing.

The representatives of Norman Empire left Yiyang City on November 6th. Before they left, Zhang Tie held an independent meeting with Filis, the crown prince of Norman Empire, which made the relationship between Zhang Tie and the royal household represented by Filis much closer.

Filis didn't leave Yiyang City by an airship, but by a train.

Filis was responsible for Taian City on behalf of the royal household of Norman Empire. The area combining Taian City, Yunzhou City and Qihai City that Norman Empire bought from Huaiyuan Palace was called Bennolisburg, which meant the fortress of hope in the language of Norman Empire.

Norman Empire's royal household took Bennolisburg as a hope to stabilize people's heart domestically and seek for rejuvenation in the future.

Colonel Leibniz was left in Yiyang City by Filis and became the head of an agency of liaison of Norman Empire in Yiyang City. It



was needless to say whom this agency of liaison was going to contact. In 2 months, with the evacuation of the forces of Huaiyuan Palace and elders, Zhang Tie, the head of Hurricane Corps and a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace would become the most powerful figure of Huaiyuan Palace in Waii Sub-continent. Although Norman Empire didn't have to flatter Zhang Tie, they had to establish a good relationship with him at least.

Although Colonel Leibnitz was left in Yiyang City, the 100 beauties whom Zhang Tie had not seen was returned to Filis. Zhang Tie was even thinking about returning those women on Long Sight Peak to the elders of Huaiyuan Palace, not to mention those women gifted by Norman Empire. Zhang Tie thought free love was the best. Additionally, Zhang Tie was sure that if he took these beauties from Norman Empire, Lan Yunxi would never marry him in the future. On this aspect, it was nothing different between Lan Yunxi and the other women as they were all possessive, 'My love affairs in Blackhot City had made Lan Yunxi very unhappy. If I remained unchanged, Lan Yunxi might be disappointed with me.'

...

Taishi Clan's representatives also left Yiyang City on November 6th. This time, Taishi Clan gifted 25 tons of gold and a top-class rune longsword with double attributes to Zhang Tie. It was already a big gift for small clans like Taishi Clan in Jinyun Country. Therefore, before they returned, Zhang Tie asked Jinwu Business Group to load 50,000 vials of all-purpose medicament on the airship of Taishi Clan as a gift.

Taishi Ci's eyes turned a bit red before he boarded on the airship. His dad also had a good impression of Zhang Tie. However, Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed by Taishi Ci's long-leg younger sister Taishi Nichang, who looked back at him a couple of times before leaving...

# Chapter 768: Responsibilities

---

After seeing off Princess Candis, Zhang Tie saw a black sedan parking on his side silently.

This was an exclusive vehicle for the elder of Huaiyuan Palace, a super luxurious sedan imported from Taixia Country, Eastern Continent.

This sedan shared the same brand with the super sports car Faire Dragon T9 that Zhang Tie once drove. However, they had utterly different styles. If Faire Dragon T9 with sharp lines belonged to those rebellious youngsters, this square, stable vehicle was definitely the favorite of elders.

Being lowkey, its 5 m-long and 2 m-wide body and the square silver and crystal grates of its head made it dignified. However, what made this car more majestic was its license plate. Compared to the other license plates in Huiayuan Prefecture, this one only had a golden bow instead of any number on it. Across Huaiyuan Prefecture, only the license plate of elders' sedans was the symbol of power and majesty.

After the car parked, the driver hurriedly got off and pulled open the door for Zhang Tie.

This driver was not a commoner, but a LV 12 great battle master who had accepted strict training. The driver himself was enough to handle many troubles.

The driver's name was Zhang Long, the offspring of Zhang Clan in Huaiyuan Palace. He was definitely loyal to Zhang Clan.

After Zhang Tie entered the car, Zhang Long closed the door from outside. After that, he returned to the driver's seat and drove the car out of the airship base.

"Elder Mushen, where are you heading for?" Zhang Long asked respectfully.

"Take me to Yiyang Mountain first!" Zhang Tie replied as he leaned against the comfortable pillow on the backseat and gradually relaxed himself.

Zhang Long then drove towards Yiyang Mountain. Meanwhile, the double glass between the cab and the backseats silently rose up, enabling Zhang Tie to have a good rest.

Until he saw Candis off did Zhang Tie feel like truly completing the rotating chakra ceremony, which had actually come to an end one week ago, though.

The Faerie-dragon vehicle had very luxurious trim——bright platinum and ceramic decorative sheets, dark purple sandalwood grains and comfortable crocodile-skin seats. As for commoners, over 5,000 gold coins was already a high price; however, it was trivial to Zhang Tie. In this rotating chakra ceremony, Zhang Tie had received over 1500 tons of gold, which were worth at least 60 million gold coins. Plus all the other gifts, he had received over 100 million gold coins for sure.

However, not each knight could receive so many gifts when holding the rotating chakra ceremony. Zhang Tie understood that most of his achievements were benefited from the brand "Huaiyuan Palace". Like celebrating babies' birthday, the gifts that he received on his birthday could never match that of those babies in Gregory Clan. This displayed the different influences of different clans.

With the license plate of golden bow, the vehicle "Faerie-dragon-Elder" went through Yiyang City without hindrance. On the way, many vehicles in front of this vehicle gave way to it voluntarily. At the cross, traffic policemen would even block the other vehicles from the roads on the left and on the right, allowing this sedan to access to it in advance. Zhang Tie watched the flow of people on the streets.

He could sense the change in Yiyang City——the number of Hua

people on the streets was decreasing while the number of people coming from outside was increasing. A lot of Hua people would leave Yiyang City by passenger liners every day for Eastern Continent. Meanwhile, a lot of people would pour in this city from the north of Blackson Humans Corridor each day. Some were seeking for a shelter, some were seeking for a chance to move their whole families away.

The housing price in Yiyang City had already increased 3 times compared to that 5 years ago when the holy war broke out. It was even hotter than cooking oil by fire.

A large number of properties and industries of Huaiyuan Palace in this city had been sold out constantly in the past couple of years at high prices. Due to the abnormal prosperity brought by war, most of Hua people in Huaiyuan Palace and Huaiyuan Prefecture realized a nice evacuation.

Those who first bought industries and properties of Huaiyuan Palace and the other Hua clans had sold them at higher prices. However, many people were still craving for that, which indicated a thriving market demand.

Nobody knew when demons could reach here. Therefore, nobody knew who would pick up the last plate. It was like beating the drum to pass the parcel. Until the one stopped beating the drum would someone else be the final idiot.

Watching the prosperous scene in Yiyang City, Zhang Tie faintly narrowed his eyes. He knew that the prosperity here would not stagnate until the demonized puppets corps climbed over Kalay Mountain Range. As the final protector of Huaiyuan Palace in Waii Sub-continent and the leader of Hurricane Corps, Zhang Tie was actually not responsible for fighting demons at the risk of his life; neither would he be the savior. Instead, he preferred that these cities could maintain prosperity as long as possible and Huaiyuan Palace could extract the value of these cities to the utmost. In a euphemistic and noble expression, his responsibility was to keep

smooth the southernmost tunnel in Waii Sub-continent, it might be the last maritime escape tunnel for many people to have a chance to leave out of here before the arrival of demons.

The other clans of Jinyun Country almost adopted the similar strategies.

Zhang Tie was clear about his responsibility.

A knight was enough to safeguard 3 cities.

After arriving at the foot of Yiyang Mountain, Zhang Tie got off the car and came to the Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace.

Compared to the extreme, brilliant Shrine Palace 6 days ago, the Shrine Palace at this moment looked completely different. Dense steel frames and a ceiling were put up outside the entire palace like a bird's nestle. A lot of craftsmen in Huaiyuan Palace were busy disassembling the entire Shrine Palace in a very high efficiency.

As Huaiyuan Palace would leave Waii Sub-continent, all the items of this Shrine Palace would be disassembled, marked with serial numbers, packaged and transported away by the sea. After they reached Youzhou Province, Taixia Country, the entire Shrine would be restored vividly.

As one of the elders left on Yiyang Mountain, Elder Muen was standing out of the Shrine Palace with hands on his back. Raising his head, he faintly narrowed his eyes and watched the Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace with a reminiscent look.

The dusk almost fell, Elder Muen was bathing the sunshine, showing a longer yet lonely shadow on the ground. He was watching workers dismantling the Shrine Palace with an intricate feeling.

Until Zhang Tie walked to his side did Elder Muen move his eyes away from the Shrine Palace to Zhang Tie. He sighed, "When we built the Shrine Palace, even Lord Huaiyuan had not imagined that this Shrine Palace would be dismantled. This palace witnessed the

vicissitudes of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace over the past two centuries. I really feel a bit sorry about it being dismantled!"

Zhang Tie could understand Elder Muen's mood faintly. After all, there were so many guests in such a brilliant palace a few days ago; but now it was going to be dismantled and taken away, leaving nothing else. Such a sharp change from prosperity and brilliance to tranquility would indeed bring people a sense of vicissitude.

"I think Huaiyuan Palace and this Shrine Palace would definitely root in Taixia Country and have a bright future. More and more knights of Huaiyuan Palace would hold their rotating chakra ceremonies here!" Zhang Tie smiled.

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, Elder Muen instantly got rid of the sentimental state with a smile on his face. As elders of Zhang Clan, their mentalities were much more mature than commoners. Few of them would be mired in such a poetic, sentimental state. Elder Muen was just sighing due to the scenery. After hearing Zhang Tie's word, Elder Muen recovered his composure at once.

"It's already a perfection that this Shrine Palace had witnessed another knight of Huaiyuan Palace before leaving Huaiyuan Prefecture!" Elder Muen said as he touched his long mustache. After that, he threw a glance at Zhang Tie, "Has that princess from Raymlan Empire left?"

"Yup!" Zhang Tie answered frankly. He knew that the romantic affair between him and Princess Candis could not escape the eyes of the other elders. As that woman always stayed with him these days, he didn't mean to disguise to be innocent in front of the other elders. Additionally, such an affair could not ruin his image at all, "I'm back to bid farewell to Deacon Yu and the other girls on Long Sight Peak. I will go to Stars Viewing City tomorrow. Besides cultivation outside the city, I would always stay in the encampment of the Hurricane Corps. Later on, I will have less time to visit here. Elder Muen, can you take those beautiful girls away? As they are at such a nice age, I don't want to harm them. Please

take them back and give them a rearrangement in Taixia!"

Elder Muen became silent. He knew that Zhang Tie had stuck to his limit when in the elder's pavilion on Long Sight Peak these days. Besides, Zhang Tie even returned the 100 beauties gifted by Norman Empire without even looking at them. Although Zhang Tie liked beauties, he also had his bottom line. Although being a bit romantic, he was far from lady killers.

'As Zhang Tie is on the equal footing with the other elders, if he dislikes it, nobody else can force him to do that. Now that this way doesn't work, just call it an end. Anyway, after promoting to a knight, he has a greater longevity. If he wants to have a baby, he will have no problem for 200-300 years. Just consider it later. Additionally, Zhang Tie has already got 3 babies, which is a contribution to Huaiyuan Palace. Take it easy!'

Elder Muen nodded.

...

After handling the affair on Long Sight Peak, Zhang Tie directly had Zhang Long drive him back to the old mansion of Zhang's family in Golden Sea City.

It was Zhang Tie's first time to go back to the old mansion after becoming a clan elder...

When he arrived there, it was already dark. Even though, the guards of the old mansion became spirited at once at the sight of the golden bow-shaped license plate. Two people hurriedly opened the gate for Zhang Tie. After that, one of them hurriedly went to report to the family members in the old mansion.

When Zhang Long parked the car and opened the door for Zhang Tie. All the family members of the old mansion had been waiting for Zhang Tie in the courtyard, some of them were Zhang's guests.

"Elder Mushen..." Watching Zhang Tie getting off the sedan, everybody hurriedly bowed towards Zhang Tie except for Zhang

Tie's grandpa.

Zhang Tie sighed inside at the sight of their movements as he revealed a genial smile, "Ahh, I've just come from Yiyang City. I'm expecting to have a meal at home. Just prepare a couple of dishes for me. No waste..."

The words "I'm expecting to have a meal at home" made everybody hyper.

The grand madam walked out of the crowd first. She went to take a look in the kitchen and had the cooks prepare supper for Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie's two aunts also hurriedly went to help grand madam.

After Zhang Tie posed his requirement, it became a major event in the old mansion.

Under the excited look of Zhang Haitian the old man, Zhang Tie walked to his front and called grandpa. After that, he supported the old man by his arm and returned to the main hall which was crowded with all the other family members.

Even the guards and servants became spirited, not to mention those family members in the old mansion.

The two guests in the old mansion found a chance to introduce themselves to Zhang Tie. After that, they left satisfactorily.

What an intricate feeling for Zhang Tie!



# Chapter 769: I'm the Leader of the Hurricane Corps

---

At 10 am, October 10th, Zhang Tie came to the encampment of Hurricane Corps outside Stars Viewing City after holding the rotating chakra ceremony.

The moment Zhang Tie's vehicle arrived at the gate of the encampment of Hurricane Corps, he had seen two rows of senior commissioned officers standing outside the gate, waiting for him.

Zhang Tie let Zhang Long park at the gate. After that, he got off the vehicle.

"Corps Leader Mushen!" All the senior commissioned officers gave a salute to Zhang Tie at the same time.

In the corps, all the commissioned officers would call Zhang Tie corps leader, instead of elder regardless of their titles and ranks.

After glancing at them, Zhang Tie nodded. As he had seen some of them at the rotating chakra ceremony, he didn't feel strange about them.

Zhang Su, Zhang Tie's cousin was also in the greeting crowd in a military uniform of lieutenant colonel. According to his rank, Zhang Su was standing behind the team as a lot of colonels, senior colonels and major generals were in front of Zhang Su.

Zhang Tie knew that this Hurricane Corps must know the relation between him and Zhang Su. Watching Zhang Su didn't come out to flatter him, Zhang Tie nodded inside. Through such a small detail, Zhang Tie could see the strict discipline and style of Hurricane Corps.

Half of them were Hua commissioned officer, the other half were of other human races.

Hurricane Corps was composed of slaves when it was established

by Huaiyuan Palace. Therefore, many commissioned officers in the corps were slaves originally. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not surprised at the sight of these commissioned officers with colorful skins. The Breaking Sun Corps composed of the disciples of Huaiyuan Palace and other Hua disciples had long been dispatched to the Eastern Continent by Huaiyuan Palace as the trump card of Huaiyuan Palace to safeguard the undertaking of Huaiyuan Palace in Youzhou Province, Taixia Country.

Zhang Tie also saw some other familiar faces among these commissioned officers who were greeting him. They were all influential figures on the Hidden Dragon List in Hidden Dragon Island. Although Zhang Tie didn't make an exchange with them, he could remember their looks. He could even remember the name of that tall and robust guy——Zhang Wumu 1 .

When Zhang Tie was in Selnes Theater of Operations, this guy was also there. However, Zhang Tie was in the airship troop. This guy was in the demon-hunting squads on the ground. Although they were fellow apprentices, they didn't have a chance to see each other after staying in Selnes Theater of Operations for over one year. They could only see each other's name on the Military Exploits Namelist.

This time, their statuses were utterly different.

Zhang Wumu watched that former "junior fellow apprentice" in Hidden Dragon Palace with an intricate look.

Zhang Tie watched these commissioned officers; these commissioned officers also watched the youngest knight clan elder in Huaiyuan Palace. After all, only a few senior commissioned officers were qualified to attend the rotating chakra ceremony; therefore, most of these commissioned officers had not seen Zhang Tie.

In the eyes of these commissioned officers, Zhang Tie was excessively young. According to the legend, Zhang Tie was 23 years

old. However, everyone thought this new corps leader was just 16-17 years old. He was completely a handsome boy. At such a young age, commoners were not even allowed to join the army, not to mention taking the position of the leader of Hurricane Corps.

Zhang Tie knew what these commissioned officers were thinking about. However, he didn't care about that. After promoting to a real knight, Zhang Tie had understood the first law in knight's world——just ignore the thoughts of all those below LV 15. Because that was meaningless to knights.

"As it's my first time to see Hurricane Corps, you can show me around the camp first!" Zhang Tie directly walked into the camp. After exchanging a glance with each other, those commissioned officers hurriedly followed up.

Many people were a bit amazed as they had not imagined that the new corps leader could have such a strong qi field. 'It's far from the innocence that should be owned by a young man at his age. Even though this new corps leader had stayed in Selnes Theater of Operations, he was just a common soldier, how could he form such a strong qi field and confident attitude?'

If they knew what Zhang Tie had experienced these years, they would not have thought this way.

What Zhang Tie had experienced could overwhelm everybody else at present, whether in Ice and Snow Wilderness, Selnes Theater of Operations or in trouble-reappearance situations. This explained why Zhang Tie was so confident.

Wouldn't a guy who had killed 3 knights be able to overwhelm these commissioned officers?

The encampment of Hurricane Corps covered over 30 sq miles. Over 400,000 soldiers gathered here. All the living and training facilities were well matched here. The entire encampment was like a base and a fortress. It was full of killing qi everywhere. On the way here, Zhang Tie saw numerous soldiers of Hurricane Corps

training themselves to the utmost. Looking in the distance, Zhang Tie saw battle-qi totems rising from the training ground. The fierce battle calls and collisions kept going.

Zhang Tie just looked around as he listened to the introduction of the commissioned officers on his side.

If it was not compared to that super demon corps, Hurricane Corps was a powerful force among all the human corps across Waii Sub-continent. The comprehensive quality and battle force of its commissioned officers and soldiers could definitely match the trump card of Norman Empire which had been dispatched to Selnes Theater of Operations.

Zhang Tie felt pretty satisfied.

They soon came to the training field of armored forces. This training field was below the hillside. Hundreds of armored vehicles and steaming tanks were running on the training field, causing the dust to cover the entire training field. There was a discarded armored vehicle in the middle of the training field which was taken as the target. When those armored vehicles and tanks rushed towards here, they all aimed and fired at the targeted vehicle...

A broken-down steaming tank was parked on one side of the training field while the members of that tank were trying to repair it intensely. Zhang Tie then walked towards that broken-down tank, followed by all the commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps.

"Stand at attention..." At the sight of so many commissioned officers, the captain with the rank of the second lieutenant who was repairing the tank with a sweaty face hurriedly issued an order to all the other members of that tank. Closely after that, he stopped what he was doing and stood at attention, causing a sound "Pah".

"What's the matter with the tank?" Zhang Tie asked.

That second-lieutenant platoon leader didn't know who was this young man. However, watching no other commissioned officers dared to speak, he knew that this young man had a great background.

"Sir, something is wrong with the steam pressure-limit lock inside the turret of the tank. We're repairing it!" The second lieutenant looked a bit elder than 30. Although he was a white, short man, he had a loud voice.

Zhang Tie nodded as something was wrong with the steam pressure-limit lock inside the turret of the tank. Therefore, the javelin-shaped ballistas were taken out of the tank and put on the ground beside the tank tidily.

Zhang Tie picked one and weighed it in hand, "Can you penetrate through that targeted tank with this?"

'Alright, just a newbie with some background who wants to take a visit to the camp of Hurricane Corps...'

The second-lieutenant platoon leader complained inside; however, he dared not show his mood on his face; instead, he replied loudly, "No, sir, if we want to attack the armored target of the enemy, common steam ballistas are a bit weak. We can disable the maneuverability of the enemy's armored vehicles with customized gel flame ballistas."

"Actually, as long as we've got enough strength and speed, even a common ballista could destroy an armored vehicle!" Zhang Tie said as he threw the ballista towards that abandoned armored vehicle over 1 mile away.

With a thunder above the training field, it took the ballista less than 1 second to tear apart that target armored vehicle like a terrifying lightning bolt falling from the sky after flying over 1,000 m. Besides, that target flew dozens of meters away like a toy being kicked by a kid and turned into pieces completely...

Besides, a big hole of over 3 m in width and over 2 m in depth formed at the ground where the armored vehicle had just stayed.

After hearing the loud sound, all the armored vehicles and tanks which were training, scattered right away as their drivers thought the camp was suffering an attack. Watching them from afar, those armored vehicles were like tadpoles being scared away by a shark which suddenly intruded in the fish tank...

The common ballista became destructive by Zhang Tie's hand.

Those commissioned officers behind Zhang Tie and that second-lieutenant platoon both who had just answered Zhang Tie's question became dumbfounded as they trembled and felt breathless.

With such a terrifying bow, even a LV 15 battle spirit would be killed right away.

Elder Muray, the former corps leader of Hurricane Corps, also had such a great battle force. However, nobody could do it so easily.

'Is this man the new corps leader?'

Until then did all the commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps refresh their recognition of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie patted the dust off his hands as he smiled towards those commissioned officers, "Well, I've almost looked around the entire camp. Show me the conference room. Let's have a meeting. I will declare some decisions!"

# Chapter 770: Three Lines

---

In a large conference room of Hurricane Corps, hundreds of commissioned officers were sitting still, chesting out and gazing at Zhang Tie.

Many of them were guessing about the decisions that the new corps leader would make.

Until then were many commissioned officers still immersed in Zhang Tie's lightning bolt-strike.

There was a huge military battle map on the wall behind Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie watched that map with his back against the commissioned officers. After a short while, he took three colorful marker pens and drew three lines, one in red, one in yellow and one in green...

The red line cut through the Kalay Mountain Range in the middle of Blackson Humans Corridor.

The yellow line cut through the boundary between Jinyun Country and the north of Qilan Country.

The green line cut through Yuanjiang River in the north of Huaiyuan Prefecture.

Watching the 3 lines, all the commissioned officers became silent. Many of them even faintly frowned as they had no idea about the three lines.

After dropping the colorful marker pens, Zhang Tie turned around and watched those commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps, "Two months later, the main force of Huaiyuan Palace will complete its evacuation from Waii Sub-continent. By then, our Hurricane Corps will become the last remaining force of Huaiyuan Palace on Waii Sub-continent. Many among you might wonder about the tasks of Hurricane Corps in the future. I will explain it to you in the simplest way!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie turned around and pointed at that red line, "Kalay Mountain Range is the watershed of Waii Sub-continent and will be the first battlefield of Hurricane Corps. In the future, when demons completely occupy the north of Waii Sub-continent, Kalay Mountain Range will be the last natural barrier for the demonized puppets corps to move southward. That was to say, countries in the south of Waii Sub-continent would definitely encounter a sharp collision with demonized puppets corps. Kalay Mountain Range would be the second Selnes Theater of Operations. However, due to its special terrain, few human troops could enter this region. My first requirement is that fighters above LV 9 across Hurricane Corps should divide into 3 batches. Each batch will enter Kalay Mountain Range in every 4 months so as to be familiar with the combat environment in Kalay Mountain Range. They could make preparations for the battle in the future. Kalay Mountain Range is the guerrilla battlefield of the fighters above LV 9 of Hurricane Corps. I authorize all the commanders of the 3 batches entering Kalay Mountain Range the right to make decisions at his will. In this region, you're absolutely free and don't have to listen to anyone's guidance. Everything on the battlefield will be determined by the commander according to the situation."

After hearing Zhang Tie's words, all the commissioned officers at present were shocked. It meant that all the fighters above LV 9 entering Kalay Mountain Range could have a great freedom. What a right!

"As for the region from the north of Jinyun Country to Kalay Mountain Range!" Zhang Tie said as he pointed at that region between the yellow line and the red line, "This is the second battlefield of Hurricane Corps. Demonized puppets corps have not been completely suppressed in this region. Sparse demonized puppets disasters still break out here and there. This region is the battlefield of the airship troop and maneuverability troop of Hurricane Corps. You only need to stick to one principle in this region——Hurricane Corps don't need to pay for the battle in this



region. You can refer to how those mercenary groups adopt tasks or directly cooperate with those mercenary groups. I'm not interfering with the details!"

After hearing this, a major general couldn't help but raise his hand. Zhang Tie nodded towards him. That major general stood up and asked, "Corps Leader Mushen, did you mean that our Hurricane Corps could take risks like those mercenary groups?"

"Why not?" Zhang Tie had the commissioned officer take a seat before saying, "How could Hurricane Corps fight without money? What would fighters eat and drink without money? How would our equipment be maintained and updated without money? Huaiyuan Palace is not a charity that can save the entire Blackson Humans Corridor. If you can exterminate demonized puppets and save humans, you deserve to make money! Why couldn't we do that like mercenary groups? As a human corps, we will definitely dispatch elite troops to kill demonized puppets for humans so as to safeguard the human barrier Kalay Mountain Range. I, on behalf of Huaiyuan Palace, declare that all the copper coins that Hurricane Corps make on the battlefield from today on will be kept and distributed freely in Hurricane Corps. You don't need to submit them to the clan."

At the beginning, those commissioned officers thought that Zhang Tie was just a merciless clan knight. After hearing Zhang Tie's declaration, most of them exchanged a glance with each other before becoming excited. Nobody disliked money, emperors, pedlars or soldiers. 'If the corps leader really issued this order, Hurricane Corps will have a "bright" future.' As for the ability to exterminate demonized puppets, of course, Hurricane Corps was much powerful than those mercenary groups. Additionally, the honor of Hurricane Corps could not be matched by common mercenary groups.

Speaking of money, the atmosphere across the conference room became different.

Zhang Tie then pointed at the red line, "This area in the south of Yuanjiang River is the base that Hurricane Corps need to safeguard now as the 3rd battlefield of Hurricane Corps. On the 3rd battlefield, Hurricane Corps should maintain the security and order of the three cities. In the adjustment of the establishment of the corps, the troops that safeguard the three cities should strengthen their fielding ability and the ability to handle emergencies!" Zhang Tie then pointed at that red line on Yuanjiang River forcefully, "This red line on Yuanjiang River is the lifeline of our corps, Huaiyuan Palace will not have Hurricane Corps be their cannon fodder. Therefore, when the vanguard of demons arrives at Yuanjiang River, it will be time for the entire Hurricane Corps to leave Waii Sub-continent for Eastern Continent by sea. Hurricane Corps will not fight demons to the end on Waii Sub-continent. Whereas, we should also try our best to fight demons. If that day really arrives, I expect to see such a scene——Over 90% of commissioned officers and fighters in the corps are still alive. Additionally, as men, none of you is regretful as you've done what you should do. Some of you grow stronger, some have more money. We all stand on ships and erect our middle fingers towards those demon b\*stards and shout loudly, 'The war has just come to a start, we've not been defeated yet!'"

All the commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps immediately understood what they should do in the future.

After figuring out the three lines which were drawn by their new corps leader, everybody in Hurricane Corps knew what they should do in the future. Each commissioned officer could see the future of Hurricane Corps. Due to the holy war, Hurricane Corps would be more powerful and more cohesive. Perhaps, they would have troubles, they would not lose their lives. This was rightly what each commissioned officer and soldier of Hurricane Corps looked forward to.

With three lines, three battlefields and three tasks, the man had

fixed the tone of this adjustment in the establishment of Hurricane Corps, namely, to be practical, free and intelligent.

By then, all the commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps were conquered by this new corps leader.

It was really Hurricane Corps' fortune to have such a nice corps leader from the battle force, means, intelligence and styles.

After glancing over all the commissioned officers in the conference room, Zhang Tie asked, "Is there any more question?"

All the commissioned officers then shook their heads at the same time.

"Alright, you can go to work now!" Zhang Tie waved his hands like a class monitor who had just assigned the homework, "From today on, I will always cultivate in the moving palace of corps leader. You can handle the remaining things yourselves. Remember to give me a brief report about the corps in each half months. Don't report trivial things to me!"

Of course, Hurricane Corps had its own running mechanism. Zhang Tie didn't want to waste time caring about those details. He only needed to determine the overall strategy for the corps. As a knight, the key was to improve his battle force. If he could promote to earth knight, it would be more powerful than having 10 corps. Of course, Zhang Tie would not lose the substance.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps stood up and gave a solemn salute to Zhang Tie. After that, all of them left the conference room except for a major general director and a senior colonel counselor of the moving palace of the corps leader. The two commissioned officers were both chief commanders in the moving palace of the corps leader of Hurricane Corps who were directly responsible for Zhang Tie.

"Cousin, wait a second!" Zhang Tie uttered.

After throwing a glimpse at Zhang Su, all the other commissioned officers left, including the major general director and the senior colonel counselor.

Watching all the commissioned officers leaving the conference room, Zhang Su came to Zhang Tie's front in a bashful way. He didn't know what to call Zhang Tie, elder, corps leader or cousin...

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter as he patted Zhang Su's shoulder, "Do you believe that I could still steal food from the table before our family members start to eat at home? Do you believe that my mom could still pinch my ears and my nephew could still have a sh\*t or pee on my head? Although being a knight, I'm also a human; I've also got my family members and brothers. If you keep acting in this way, I will complain to the other clan elders that you're discriminating elder!"

With a faint smile, Zhang Su finally took off his cap in a bashful way as he scratched his hair, "Honestly, if you don't utter, I will not dare speak to you!"

Zhang Tie replied with a big smile, "I returned to the old mansion last night. I had a supper and a good sleep there. After knowing that I would come to Hurricane Corps today and stay with you, the old man and all the other family members were reassured!"

Zhang Su revealed a bitter smile, "My mom must have requested you to dispatch me out of the frontline troop. She was always worried about that before. With such a good chance, she would not give it up!"

"Hahaha, son knows his mom well. Aunt has already told me about that. But I did not agree with her!"

Zhang Su became faintly stunned as Zhang Tie's reply was out of his imagination.

"I told aunt last night—— my elder brother is a righteous man, who's arrogant and unyielding. If you did this, you would destroy

him. He would definitely be unhappy about what you did. However, If I did that, I was not taking care of him; instead, I was looking down upon him and would not be his brother from then on. Therefore, I can't promise you. As I'm his brother and idol and I want to continue to be his brother and idol, I won't interfere with his life in the camp, whether he was to be promoted or punished. If he fought to the death, as his brother, I will revenge for him by chopping off one demon knight's head and take it to sacrifice him!"

Zhang Su's eyes turned red at once. However, he didn't drop off tears; instead, his smile became more brilliant. He patted Zhang Tie's shoulder forcefully for three times and said, "That's my good bro!"

Zhang Tie then took out a medicament container and passed it to Zhang Su, "Take it!"

"What's this?" Zhang Su asked out of curiosity.

"I've made a lot in this rotating chakra ceremony. It contains some vials of high-performance medicament, which might be useful on the battlefield!" Zhang Tie found that Zhang Su was a bit hesitated. Zhang Tie then revealed an exaggerated look, "Are you expecting me to fight demons to death?"

"Hahaha..." Zhang Su burst out laughing as he instantly grabbed that medicament container...

...

After half an hour, being accompanied by the major general director and the senior colonel counselor, Zhang Tie came to the moving palace and took a look around there.

As the moving palace of corps leader was where clan elders always lived and worked. Of course, it was not bad.

The moving palace had a very good environment. Being located in a valley, it was like a park in the encampment of Hurricane Corps.

The front part of this moving palace was where the corps leader worked while its latter part was where elders lived.

The cultivation center of elders was in an underground palace below the residence of elders. The underground palace was designed as a strict military facility, which could prevent from alchemist's bombs.

Zhang Tie was very satisfied with this environment.

After saying something to the major general director and the senior colonel counselor, Zhang Tie entered the underground palace alone.

When elders cultivated in the underground palace, the gate of the underground palace could only be opened from inside. Additionally, there was an emergency escape passage in the underground palace, which only elders knew about.

This underground palace was over 100 m in depth. It was pretty hidden. If clan elders were cultivating here, nobody could wake them up unless through the special communication means from outside during an emergency.

...

With a muffled sound "bang...", Zhang Tie closed the gate of the underground palace and locked the thick alloy gate from inside. After that, he started to look around this place carefully.

This underground palace looked very strange in a very special structure. It was a colossal round space which covered tens of thousands of sqm. It looked like the Taichi diagram of Hua people. The yang part referred to the artificial building while the yin part maintained the look of a natural underground cave. The two parts felt pretty coordinated.

On the side of the artificial building, there were a lot of rooms with different living functions. The space here was illuminated by many senior fluorescent stones on the walls. By contrast, the other

side maintained a pitch-dark natural look.

There were a lot of 1.7 m-high high-end crystal columns, which were placed here from outside. Due to the crystal generators, this underground palace contained a very active energy which felt pretty comfortable. Undoubtedly, one would maintain his best state when cultivating in such an environment.

Besides those crystal columns, the ground of the other half of this underground palace was covered with sorts of plants which produced fresh oxygen without natural light. Due to the existence of those plants, the air in the underground palace was very fresh.

Two brooks with different sources and flowing directions flew by those plants. There was a shoal of red petite fish swimming in each brook jubilantly while those plants' black pine nut-shaped fruits and exotic pedals which fell into the brook became their food.

The water sources came from subterranean streams, which was drinkable. The fish was also special which was extremely picky and sensitive about their living environment. If something was wrong with the water, the fish would die firstly, sending a warning to the people who wanted to drink water. As there were two brooks, when one had a problem, the other one could be used as a substitute.

When the underground gate was closed, the living materials here was available for a clan elder to cultivate up to 50 years here.

Zhang Tie sensed the privilege as a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace once again. Such a place was luxurious for anyone who wanted to enter meditation here. Such a delicate, distinctive underground palace without any loophole in 100 m depth could not be made by common clans.

After taking a round in the underground space, Zhang Tie became completely reassured.

Zhang Tie saw 21 earth-element crystals shining a golden light on

a stony table in a room of the artificial complex.

After taking one, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. He waved his hand and transferred all the earth-element crystals into Castle of Black Iron. After that, he also entered Castle of Black Iron...

Since he left for Ice and Snow Wilderness, Zhang Tie had not entered Castle of Black Iron for a long time.

'It has been over 50 days. It's time for me to enjoy the fruits of the small tree...' Zhang Tie thought.



# Chapter 771: Surprises

---

The area of the palace tree in Castle of Black Iron was as bright and magnificent as before. Besides, it felt natural and comfortable. Some cute beetles were running here and there on the smooth floor and cleaned the floor like automatic vacuum cleaners.

After greeting Heller, Zhang Tie couldn't wait to run to the high platform where the small tree was located.

After over 50 days, when Zhang Tie stood under the small tree once again which brought him his current achievement, he felt as warm as seeing a friend, a teacher and a relative.

'Without this small tree, I would not be able to enjoy all the current achievements. According to my previous performance in Blackhot City, without this small tree, I might still be struggling for food as a LV 4-5 small figure in the clan of Huaiyuan Palace who did a common job. Perhaps, I might have been transported to Eastern Continent by Huaiyuan Palace...as I was 23 years old. Dad, mom and elder brother must be concerned about my marriage. They must be saving money to marry me a wife. I might also be struggling for a decent life every day. My friends in Blackhot City who left a deep impression in my youthhood such as Barley the Fattie and Miss Daina might have moved to somewhere else facing the stress of living and the chaotic situation. I might not be able to see them for the rest of my life...'

'This is the lifestyle of small figures.'

'However, now I've been a knight clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace. Dad, mom and elder brother are living happily, firmly without having to concern about money. My friends, Miss Daina, those cute girls of Rose Association also have a stable and comfortable life in this chaotic world.'

Zhang Tie appreciated this small tree very much as it enabled him to live up to his life and the hope and trust of those beside

him. Additionally, it enabled him to live a better life and change the fates of those commoners. Furthermore, it enabled him to experience such a brilliant life and enjoy the feelings brought by power, wealth and strength.

"If you were a person, I would live up to you for the rest of my life even if I betrayed the whole world!"

The small tree's exotic leaves waved, causing a nice sound like a breeze fondling a zither...

Besides enjoying the changes brought about by the small tree, Zhang Tie should also assume liabilities by strength and power.

When he recalled the liabilities, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. After recovering his composure, he started to glance at the fruits on the small tree.

There were 4 iron-body fruits on the small tree, which were due to the great stress and cavitation damage that he faced when he swam in the ocean. It was more than he had expected. He thought there might be 2 at most. 'It seems that the cavitation damage really has an amazing effect on strengthening my body.'

After taking 4 iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie knew that his defensive ability was further improved, which became obvious in close combat between knights.

Besides the iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie saw 8 leakless fruits, 7 of which had been ripe while the rest one was unripe.

Additionally, the most eye-catching one was the new fruit of brilliance. It was the biggest and most brilliant one that he had ever seen. It was even bigger than the fruit of brilliance which contained the knight's consciousness that he had ever gained. Additionally, this fruit was as transparent as a colorful crystal which contained flowing luster.

At the sight of this fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie knew that it contained all the spiritual energy of that mace muling of Sacred

Light Empire who was a knight, Berusken, the head of Demon Snake Island who was a LV 15 battle spirit, those roundtable warriors in the Demon Snake Island as well as hundreds of lackeys. It must contain the highest spiritual energy that Zhang Tie had ever seen.

With a growing spiritual energy, Zhang Tie's knight's consciousness would also grow stronger; additionally, Zhang Tie would make a further improvement in "mental arithmetic". The value of this fruit of brilliance was incalculable.

Zhang Tie was driven mad by this fruit.

He did not find any fruit of bloodline this time, 'It seems that the knight of Sacred Light Empire was different from the human knight who surrendered to Three-eye Association that I've killed.' Zhang Tie didn't know the reason. 'Is it because the knight of Sacred Light Empire didn't surrender to demons although being guilty or is it because that I killed a knight of Three-eye Association at the high risk although having not promoted to a knight?'

——The brave man who dares to wave the saber towards the dark. When you overcome your fear and change impossibilities into possibilities, when you create marvels in the dark, the marvels and possibilities will definitely be manifested in the bright place. This fruit of bloodline is a marvel for you as the largest reward. It could enable you to know the secrets of numerous treasures in your body and control your own fate. The prowess doesn't come from your physical strength, but from your will and your heart as a real brave man.

The description of the fruit of bloodline reappeared in Zhang Tie's mind. After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie couldn't figure out the conditions required to form the fruit of bloodline, 'It seems that I have to kill another knight of Three-eye Association so as to verify it. Given the description, if the next knight of Three-eye Association doesn't lead to a fruit of bloodline, I'm afraid that it requires stricter conditions than that I imagined to form the

fruit of bloodline. Do I need to kill an earth knight or a knight with higher levels by chance then?'

The forming conditions of the fruit of bloodline seemed to validate a law—the more powerful the fruit was, the harder it would be achieved.

Besides, there were 4 fruits of judgment on the small tree.

——Fruit of judgment; already been ripe. This fruit of judgment contains an advanced rune effect——"senior waking effect"...

——Fruit of judgment; already been ripe. This fruit of judgment contains an advanced rune effect——"senior soul-fixing effect"...

——Fruit of judgment; already been ripe. This fruit of judgment contains an advanced rune effect——"senior tracing effect"...

Three of the six god's runes that Zhang Tie mastered had advanced to senior effects. The 4th fruit of judgment was a bit different than the other three. Compared to the swarthy surface of other fruits of judgment, this one looked silver.

Zhang Tie put his hand on this fruit of judgment.

——Fruit of judgment; already been ripe. This fruit of judgment contains an advanced rune effect——"super binding effect"...

'Binding effect?' It was completely out of Zhang Tie's imagination. Previously, Zhang Tie thought that senior binding effect had already reached its limit. However, now, he could even bind LV 10 targets, not to mention LV 9; besides, his striking radius also increased to 150 cm from 75 cm. The maximal number of the binding chains that he could produce also increased from 36 to 72.

Only by using his spiritual energy could he conquer a LV 10 strong fighter silently, what a great improvement in the power of his binding skill!

At the beginning, when he was chased by a LV 10 strong fighter from Zhen Clan, he was as embarrassed as a dog in the

underground space of Dragon Cave. However, he could easily conquer a LV 10 strong fighter with his super binding chain now. What a great improvement!

Additionally, the god's rune "super binding skill" also reminded Zhang Tie that he might have a higher binding effect afterward. The 6 god's runes that Zhang Tie mastered by far had greater space to improve.

'That's the best news that I've ever got!'

But soon, Zhang Tie found he was wrong as there was one better news waiting for him on the small tree.

He found a red heart-shaped fruit hiding behind some leaves on the other side of the small tree.

It was a fruit of redemption that Zhang Tie had not eaten for a long time. As it was already red, it meant that it had been ripe and Zhang Tie could taste the return brought by his benevolence and payment.

Zhang Tie put his hand on the heart-shaped fruit...

——Fruit of redemption. It contains the strength of golden uangs. Already been ripe. Usage: Pick and directly eat it. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. After twelve hours of having been picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

'Strength of golden uangs?'

'Strength of golden uangs!'

# Chapter 772: Cultivation

---

At the sight of this fruit of redemption, Zhang Tie knew that Paul must have found the channel to buy and release golden uangs.

He had not imagined that Paul could do it.

If not emergencies, Zhang Tie could have had so many fruits of redemption of golden uangs 6 years ago.

Fruit of redemption of golden uangs was the earliest fruit of redemption on the small tree. Although having appeared on the small tree for so long, it grew ripe at latest.

When Zhang Tie set up Samira in Blackhot city, he gained a lot of golden uangs which were used to produce all-purpose medicament. As those golden uangs were useless to Zhang Tie, they were set free by Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could have a new powerful fruit—— Fruit of redemption due to that. Zhang Tie was also thrilled by discovering the mystery of setting free animals.

Later on, Zhang Tie bade for 4 groups of golden uangs in the auction house of Kalur City. Previously, Zhang Tie intended to set them free; pitifully, before those golden uangs arrived, the whole clan of an elder of Karol Federation Pharmacist Union, who was the supplier of golden uangs, was cleared by Three-eye Association overnight.

That elder's clan was the only one that mastered the techniques of raising golden uangs across Blackson Humans Corridor. The sudden extermination of this pharmacist's clan was a great strike to all the pharmacists who needed golden uangs to produce medicament. From then on, no golden uangs would be sold in batches across Blackson Humans Corridor. If anyone needed golden uangs, they could only capture them in the wild one after another.

Therefore, Zhang Tie's wish to taste the fruit of redemption of golden uangs was destroyed.

Until Paul settled down in Taixia did Zhang Tie start to think about having him set free golden uangs once again.

Although there was no golden uang in Blackson Humans Corridor, it didn't mean that there was no golden uang in Taixia Country either.

—After taking this fruit, Castle Lord's strength could increase by 71.5 kg.

—Golden uangs could lift an object which is 1800 times heavier than itself. Therefore, the small tree could at most produce 1800 fruits of redemption. Each fruit would activate 1/1800 of the same gene fragment in the body of Castle Lord.

—The current number of fruits of redemption—4

After skimming over the above words, Zhang Tie burst out into laughter.

Although each fruit of redemption could not increase too much strength for Zhang Tie, it was uneasy for a knight to increase 71.5 kg through normal means or secret methods in a short period. One's strength could be increased by taking some senior medicament; however, that senior medicament could only work limited times on one person. Additionally, people might become immune to the same medicament if they always took it.

By contrast, the fruit of redemption of golden uangs would not face such a problem.

The effect of 4 fruits of redemption was equal to increasing 286 kg' strength for Zhang Tie himself. Although such a bit increase in strength was trivial for a knight, if he ate the next 1796 fruits of redemption one after another, he would make a stable improvement in his strength along with his battle force.

Zhang Tie felt that all of his cells were so excited as if they were

going to sing a song.

Zhang then hummed.

"When the sun rises, I go up the mountain"

"When I reach the top, I want to sing"

"My song drifts to my younger sister"

"She giggles all the way"

"All blossoms in the spring"

"My younger sister and I, hand in hand"

"When we come to the top of the mountain"

"We see red azalea all over"

" Yohoyohoyo 1 "

" Lang li ge lang 2 ..."

...

As he sang, Zhang Tie picked a leakless fruit and bit it. With full fragrance in the mouth, he continued to hum.

This leakless fruit turned into an extremely pure energy and flew into the hot sun in the void of Zhang Tie's qi sea, adding a bit more heat to the hot sun...

...

Two days later, with a faint smile and a deeper look, Zhang Tie reappeared in the underground palace.

Zhang Tie then directly came to a cultivating room in the underground palace and took out the elements gathering tower and earth-element crystals from Castle of Black Iron before starting the cultivation of his 2nd chakra.

Earth-element crystal was like a crystal peak completely composed of earth elements in elements realm. It was surrounded by all sorts of gleaming geometrical element crystals.



In different sizes, some crystals flew as rapid as meteors, some were doing an irregular Brownian movement like how fine particles always did.

This was a vast ocean of elements.

Four elements annihilated and came into being constantly.

At this moment, a huge hand composed of Zhang Tie's spiritual energy appeared in the elements' realm and started to tightly grab the earth elements above that crystal peak one after another; after that, it returned to the material world and threw those yellow crystals into that huge rotating millstone-shaped chakra...

That huge knight's chakra kept devouring, grinding and converting the yellow crystals to the purest energy of earth elements and transmitted them into the second chakra of Zhang Tie.

At the same time, another hand gradually came into being and started to chase those distributed earth element crystals in the material realm.

The two hands just did their own jobs respectively in the elements' realm and the material's realm like being controlled by two people at the same time.

If other knights caught sight of this, they would be dumbfounded. According to common sense, each knight could only form one hand of all of their spiritual energy. Actually, what knights could "see" in elements realm were the senses of that hand of spiritual energy in elements realm. It was easy for people to use their hands in the reality; however, in elements realm, unless having extremely powerful spiritual energy, nobody could control two hands of spiritual energy to capture the elements in the elements realm at the same time.

What happened next would make the other knights even more amazed.

Because when the 2 hands of spiritual energy were working independently, the 3rd hand gradually came into being and started to catch those earth elements.

Only after a few minutes, the 4th hand of spiritual energy came into being...

The 4 hands had distinctive jobs. One of them was carrying that fixed crystal peak, the other 3 were traveling freely in the elements realm and capturing those yellow crystals. Occasionally, the 3 hands of spiritual energy would coordinate with each other and capture those yellow crystals like how hounds captured rabbits...

Zhang Tie's cultivating efficiency was 4 times than that of common knights...

He kept cultivating in this state in the underground palace...

...

On December 23rd, soon after the Winter Solstice, the yang qi started to rise from the ground while the yin qi started to descend from the sky.

On this day, the last batch of Hua people of Huaiyuan Prefecture had left Waii Sub-continent. Meanwhile, Huaiyuan Palace returned to Taixia Country formally.

Due to the wuthering north wind, the waves in the open waters of Yiyang Harbor were surging, which appeared insignificant in front of those million-ton passenger liners coming from Taixia Country.

It was a bit solemn in Yiyang Harbor as soldiers of Hurricane Corps filled the harbor.

Elder Muen and Elder Muyu were standing at the prow of a million-ton passenger liner and watching the Yiyang Mountain in the distance with an intricate, reminiscent look.

Elder Muray and Elder Muan had left with two earlier fleets in

November in advance. This was the last fleet, which was escorted by Elder Muen and Elder Muyu.

Over 100 trucks drove out of Huaiyuan City and entered the huge warehouse of a huge passenger liner and disappeared. After that, the hatch of the entrance of the warehouse gradually closed.

After these trucks entered the huge passenger liner, nobody could be seen across the dock except for those soldiers of Hurricane Corps.

"If I knew that I'd feel so reminiscent to leave, I should have gone in November on behalf of Elder Muray. It feels so intricate!" Elder Muyu let out a sigh.

"Nothing to be reminiscent of. Elder Mushen said he believed that Huaiyuan Palace would have a bright future and new knights would complete their rotating chakra ceremonies in the Shrine Palace of Huaiyuan Palace one after another!" Elder Muen smiled.

"Yes, it seems that Elder Mushen didn't come here today..." Elder Muyu asked.

"He's been to Hurricane Corps last month. He held a conference for those commissioned officers and drew three lines on the map. After that, he has been cultivating in the underground palace of the base of Hurricane Corps till now!" Elder Muen said with full of admiration. 'A young knight who can calm down and seek for the truth in his heyday after holding his rotating chakra ceremony for 7 days while ignoring sex, power and wealth is qualified to be a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace. Compared to this, it's nothing even if Elder Mushen didn't come here today! With such a person in Huaiyuan Prefecture, it's the best farewell for everyone else.'

"Hoho, I remember that after my rotating chakra ceremony, I kept drinking and making love with 10 women for 3 months. I released all of my depression that had been accumulated in the dozens of years' lonely cultivation. By contrast, Elder Mushen is indeed much better than me!" Elder Muyu also sighed.

After promoting to knights, these clan elders had been used to drinking and sex. As they had experienced too much of that, they disliked it. They felt that drinking tea and listening to the wind sounds much easier...

"People become knights due to reasons!" Elder Muen revealed the proverb in the knight's world. After that, he looked at Yiyang City in the distance and said, "Let's go. Just leave this place to youngsters..."

"I can't wait to see the look of Elder Mushen when he returns to Youzhou Province of Taixia Country!"

The two elders smiled at each other before returning to the cabin.

Half an hour later, the fleet left...

One hour later, the three new garrisons armies under Hurricane Corps took over Yiyang City, Stars Viewing City and Golden Sea City.

Zhang Tie's age arrived at the southernmost corner of Waii Sub-continent...

# Chapter 773: Shocking Strategies

---

After a long time, Zhang Tie finally opened his eyes.

Watching the earth-element crystal which had completely lost its golden luster and revealed its milky color. Zhang Tie faintly shook his head and forced a bitter smile. After that, he put that useless crystal on the table.

There were 7 rows of earth-element crystals on the table, 3 ones in a row. As of now, all the earth-element crystals had become as milky as that one in Zhang Tie's hand while all the pure earth elements in this crystals had been used up. These milky earth-element crystals were as useless as empty bottles.

Zhang Tie looked at the clock on the wall.

——December 29.

'I've practiced 45 days in the underground palace at the cost of 21 earth-element crystals. I've only used 1/4 of my full ability to withdraw the earth element from the crystals. If I had exerted my full effort, I would have used up 21 earth-element crystals in just 2 weeks.'

Through this cultivation, Zhang Tie completely understood how painstaking and distant it was to form his second chakra.

After taking that fruit of brilliance which increased his spiritual energy by two times, Zhang Tie could make 4 hands in the elements realm to capture earth-element crystals at the same time. That was to say, his cultivation speed was 3 times higher than that of common knights. Even now, he had just lit 1/6 of the first scale of his second chakra.

Zhang Tie estimated that it would take him at least 11 months to promote to the 2nd scale of the second chakra if he kept cultivating in the current state without the help of earth-element crystals.

'It means that it will take me 330 years of painstaking cultivation

to form the second chakra according to "King Roc Sutra" based on the current state.

'This is the benefit of being able to use 4 "hands" at the same time. If I stuck to cultivate by one "hand", I would not be able to light 100 scales for 500 years, not to mention that I could only live 400 years as a black iron knight.'

It was very difficult for black iron knights to form their second chakra. It was a very long trip. Additionally, the second chakra had very complex patterns according to the Emperor-class "King Roc Sutra", which made it many times more difficult than forming the second chakra according to other sutras.

It would take him more than 330 years to promote to earth knight by only using one "hand". Zhang Tie became completely disappointed about this. He knew that people didn't cultivate so painstakingly in the far-ancient brilliant human civilization. 'In that age, there must be many methods that people could use to cultivate at a fast speed. With abundant high-quality earth-element crystals, higher-performance elements-gathering matrix and more secret cultivation methods, knight cultivators would be able to improve their realm to a higher level in that age; otherwise, "King Roc Sutra" and "Breaking Sun Sutra" would not be left.

However, in this age, the resources that could enable knights to accelerate their cultivation speed became scarcer. Therefore, knights had to seek and monopoly more resources so as to accelerate the formation of their chakras. Otherwise, most of the knights could not promote to earth knights in their whole lives.

When the younger generations imitated their predecessors, they could not reach their targets as easily as that of their predecessors due to the changing cultivation environment.

After getting off the bed, Zhang Tie came to an open land outside the room and finished one set of an iron-blood fist in a slowly and solemnly way so as to relax his limbs.

However, his iron-blood fist entered an utterly different realm than before. It had turned mild after reaching yang and rigidity. However, a terrifying power was hidden in the mild movements. Although he moved slowly, he could make the air in the entire underground palace move, arising small cyclones one after another beside him. Like swirls caused by ocean currents, those cyclones appeared and disappeared from time and then.

As Zhang Tie moved with his fist intention, he was considering about his cultivation means in the future and carding the achievements and gnosis of this cultivation.

At this moment, Zhang Tie clearly knew about the problems facing him and the corresponding solutions. 'As of now, the most effective way to accelerate my cultivation speed was earth-element crystals. As long as I could gain sufficient high-quality earth-element crystals, I could accelerate my cultivating speed to form the second chakra. However, an earth-element crystal is a rarity, it's already a bounty gift for Norman Empire to present 20 earth-element crystals to him in the rotating chakra ceremony. Each clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace could have 4 earth-element crystals per year. It's far from enough.'

'It seems that I have to concern more about earth-element crystals from then on.' Zhang Tie murmured.

'Besides earth-element crystals, the second method to accelerate my cultivation speed is to form as more "hands" as possible in the elements realm. At present, I've already been able to form 4 "hands" at the same time. It benefits from my long-term practice. It seems that it will take me a bit longer time to form the 5th one.'

'Finally, I could only improve my cultivation speed by other items such as elements gathering matrix or other unknown secret methods. There are some information about trading these items in Mountain of Brightness. However, the trading sites are mainly in Eastern Continent and Western Continent. They are face-to-face trades between knights. There's no trading information in the

remote place such as Waii Sub-continent in Mountain of Brightness. Additionally, over 70% of the traders are exchanging for earth-element crystals. Earth-element crystal seems to become a hard currency among black iron knights. Few items could be bought by golds. As of now, besides elements gathering matrix, I don't have anything valuable to exchange for earth-element crystals.'

'As Three-eye Association and demons could bribe human knights, they should have got some good things.'

Zhang Tie suddenly recalled the equipment and medicament from the knight of Three-eye Association whom he had killed...

All in a sudden, a killing intent appeared in his punches...

After relaxing his limbs, he made his qi and blood active once again. Meanwhile, he had a clearer framework on his cultivation in the future. After that, Zhang Tie flicked his clothes for a couple of times and walked out of the underground palace.

The moment he opened the gate of the underground palace, the bodyguards outside the gate had known that; therefore, when Zhang Tie returned to the ground, he saw the director of the moving palace of corps leader.

The sun had just set while it was a bit cloudy. It was chillier than when he entered the underground palace.

When the director watched Zhang Tie once again after over 1 month, he felt Elder Mushen was more profound than before, especially his eyes which seemed to penetrate through everything. This was mainly because that Zhang Tie's spiritual energy had surged after taking the fruit of brilliance. Of course, other fruits also contributed to Zhang Tie's qi field. However, that director thought that it was due to Zhang Tie's cultivation. Therefore, he treated Zhang Tie more respectfully.

"Is everything going smooth?" Zhang Tie asked.



"Yes!" The director replied as he passed three brief reports to Zhang Tie.

After taking them, Zhang Tie spent less than 20 seconds in skimming over the 3 brief reports.

In fact, only two major events happened in Hurricane Corps during the past 45 days——Hurricane Corps have divided into three-level combat troops; the subordinate army of Hurricane Corps started to enter the three cities and take over the city defense and security of the three cities.

"After the lantern festival, dispatch the first batch of an elite troop to Kalay Mountain Range to prepare for the battle in the future!" Zhang Tie fixed the time for the batch of fighters above LV 9 to enter Kalay Mountain Range.

After adjusting the establishment, on the premise of not influencing the battle forces of the other troops, only 418 fighters in Hurricane Corps were between LV 9 and LV 13. These fighters would form the elite special operations brigade of Hurricane Corps. The brigade was further divided into 3 squads, who were responsible for the battle in the theater of operations Kalay Mountain Range.

Zhang Tie sighed inside, 'The number of fighters between LV 9 and LV 13 in the entire Hurricane Corps only equals to two battalions of the demon corps. What a great disparity in strength! Only when the strength of all the countries across Waii Sub-continent unites with each other can they barely defeat the demon corps. Otherwise, no human corps could defeat the demon corps.'

For these fighters, they would face a fierce battle in Kalay Mountain Range in the future.

The director jostled down Zhang Tie's order.

"Additionally, the maneuver teams who receive battle tasks should make financial statements every season independently. The

fighters of the maneuver teams should be paid in terms of 5 times that of the average compensation of the mercenaries of the major mercenary groups in Armes. Now that you're making money privately, show me some performance. If one maneuver team suffers a loss for consecutive 2 months, I will lay off the commander and replace him with an able man!"

Zhang Tie instructed as he walked. The director kept jostling down Zhang Tie's words on his side.

"Distribute my order to the garrisons, from next January 1st, in the three cities of Huaiyuan Palace, any person who traffick humans, kill slaves, force women to be prostitutes, rape women, plunder others' properties should be punished with the death penalty. Any officer who colludes with businessmen should be punished to swallow gold coins which equates to the value of the properties that he received illegally. If the gold-eater doesn't die, he's free. Otherwise, all the properties of his whole family will be confiscated. Thieves' fingers should be cut off; defrauders' ears should be cut off. All those who violate the laws should be punished twice the severity of Huaiyuan Palace! Additionally, the Department of the Military Law and the Moving Palace of Corps Leader should find an itinerant military court so as to supervise the disciplines of the garrisons in the three cities. All the judgments and cases should be released on paper. I should see all the second instance cases on bulletins. If the garrisons severely disturb the residents or violate disciplines, call the head of the garrisons to interpret it to me in the moving palace."

The three orders were full of killing intent, especially the collusion between officers and businessmen. It was a way of committing suicide by swallowing golds. When gold entered one's mouth, it would penetrate through one's intestines. If the officers swallowed the golds they were bribed, they would have a disaster. If they took more than 10 gold coins from businessmen illegally, they would hardly survive themselves. This was equal to draw a

line between officers and businessmen, which was used to differentiate between normal trades and taking bribes. Those who dared take bribes had to consider whether could they hold that illegal income into their stomach in advance.

The itinerant military court would pay special attention to second instance cases. As a sword of Damocles above the heads of all the soldiers and commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps, it could punish anyone who dared violate the laws.

Zhang Tie, who was born in a common family of Blackhot City, clearly knew how hard small figures lives were. When they ran a rice brew store in Blackhot City, a taxman came to ask for a bride from them. Although that taxman was just a small figure in Blackhot City, he made Zhang Tie's dad and mom sorrowful every day and almost made the rice brew store wind up. Later on, after Zhang Tie's elder brother joined the city guards of Blackhot City, he found some friends to give that taxman a lesson. From then on, the taxman became a good man...

At that time, as the holy war had not broken out, Blackhot City was still peaceful. However, even in such a peaceful environment, small grassroots could still not be able to survive themselves. By contrast, in such a chaotic world, numerous small figures were wondering here and there to survive themselves. Those commoners who came to Huaiyuan Prefecture from other places might be killed by some swashbuckling b\*stards or corrupt officers and illegal businessmen at any time.

However, Zhang Tie felt like living up to his so many years of life in Blackhot City and his title as a knight by using such shocking means to deter the bad guys and protect the underprivileged ones.

# Chapter 774: Motherliness

---

As a clan knight, Zhang Tie could enjoy as good resources and services as emperors in the camp.

On the same evening, since he left the underground palace and lived in the temporary palace of corps leader, Zhang Tie had genuinely enjoyed the quality resources and services.

Almost when Zhang Tie entered his residence, a lot of people had been swarming up and serving him effectively and precisely.

Zhang Tie's dinner was strictly matched with all sorts of nutritions and medicinal food according to his physical state after a long-term enclosed cultivation. The staple food of the dinner was an assorted millet congee plus over 10 medicinal dishes. Although they all tasted mild, each of them was in chef class. This supper met well the standards of color, flavor and taste.

After supper, Zhang Tie felt that his tiredness had faded away.

He then took a walk in the tranquil garden of his temporary palace for half an hour before returning to his residence.

There was a hot spring bathroom in the residence. The hot spring came from underground. After being processed specially, it was added with some valuable, special medicines. Finally, it was injected into the crystal bathtub at a proper temperature.

After taking a comfortable hot spring bath, Zhang Tie entered the comfortable hot lounge beside the bathroom. At this moment, two beautiful masseuses in tutu appeared. They then started to provide special maintenance and massage for Zhang Tie physically and spiritually.

When the two beautiful masseuses touched Zhang Tie by fingers, they started to release utterly different special battle qis so as to provide a better massage and maintenance on Zhang Tie's body. Zhang Tie knew that these pair of beautiful masseuses must have

been trained at a high cost.

Those who could release battle qi must be above LV 6. Additionally, the two masseuses both had top looks. What was more was that when Zhang Tie saw them, he knew that this pair of twins were still virgins. It was not easy to train this pair of trains into senior masseuses only with money.

One battle qi had the attribute of water while the other had the attribute of wood. Both battle qis were extremely mild. They should be relatively unpopular, auxiliary battle qis. Zhang Tie had not heard about these battle qis before.

Although auxiliary battle qis could not be used in the battle; they could play other effects. The combination of the two battle qis and the massage techniques could solidify one's essence and cultivation base. That was definitely a supreme treatment.

"What are your names?"

Zhang Tie asked the two beauties while lying on his stomach.

"I'm Aimei!"

"I'm Aixue!"

The two beauties replied quickly with sweet voices.

Aimei used wood-attribute auxiliary battle qi; Aixue used water-attribute auxiliary battle qi.

"Which one is elder?"

"I am!" Aimei answered.

"Where are your family members?"

"We have been orphans since we were young. We lived in Fubo City in the beginning. When we were 9 years old, our parents passed away due to an accident. Huaiyuan Palace then took us in and imparted techniques to us. We left the training center and were dispatched to the temporary palace of the corps leader to serve you one week ago. According to our master, our senior sister

apprentices were all on the sides of other elders. It's the great honor for my elder sister and I to serve Elder Mushen." Aixue replied.

Aixue, as the younger sister, was more clever. In her reply, she had clarified two meanings: first, we're innocent; second, we're still virgins.

As she replied, Aixue started to rub the place between Zhang Tie's shoulders and neck. Due to the special technique, Zhang Tie felt so pleasant and comfortable that he almost hummed.

The whole process lasted about 2 hours. After the massage and maintenance, Zhang Tie felt that he had become wholly new.

Even though Zhang Tie was against them in naked body, he still didn't do anything to them. However, after doing that, Aimei and Aixue blushed with sweet drops on their faces. They looked a bit fatigued.

'Although people should cultivate, they need to relax themselves. After all, it would take me at least 300 years to form the earth chakra. If I was always busy cultivating, I might be driven lunatic before forming the earth chakra'.

It was reasonable for clan elders to relax themselves. Additionally, this was the experience of numerous predecessors.

Therefore, Zhang Tie just did as the Romans did.

In the evening, Zhang Tie threw himself onto the bed and had a sound sleep. He got up on the next morning around 10 am.

After getting up, Zhang Tie cleansed himself and ate something. Finally, he selected a set of relatively common clothes and left the encampment of Hurricane Corps by a car.

Zhang Tie told Zhang Long to park in a remote place being not far from Stars Viewing City. When there was nobody nearby, he got off the car and told Zhang Long to drive back. After that, he strode towards Stars Viewing City.

All the people in Huaiyuan Prefecture knew that Zhang Clan had a young elder. However, few people had seen him, especially for commoners. Even most of the common soldiers of Hurricane Corps had not seen their corps leader.

Zhang Tie was not afraid of being recognized by others.

In the period of enclosed cultivation, Zhang Tie had contacted his elder brother once.

All the family members of Zhang Clan knew that Zhang Tie had become a clan elder. In Zhang Yang's words, everybody felt like dreaming when they heard this news. Even though this news was told by Elder Muyuan. It still took Zhang family 1 week to accept this fact.

After knowing that Zhang Tie became the clan elder, Zhang Tie's mom instantly told Zhang Yang to let Zhang Tie do the good as more as possible. Zhang Tie's mom was not happy but worried about Zhang Tie when she heard the news that Zhang Tie became a clan elder. In the eyes of Zhang Tie's mom, if one didn't have good merits, one would never take a high position for a long time. Those who didn't have good merits would face a miserable outcome even if they took the position temporarily. If one wanted to accumulate his merits and gain the respect of everything else, he had to do the good and save people.

Zhang Tie's mom and dad even swore to not eat meat from then on for the safety of Zhang Tie. During this period, Zhang Tie's mom and dad took out the private money that they had accumulated these years and started to provide free porridge to poor and refugees in Fuhai City, Yingzhou Province, Taixia Country together with Linda, Beverly and Fiona so as to accumulate merits for Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie's mom even told Zhang Yang to warn Zhang Tie that he could never do immoral affairs as a clan elder. Additionally, she told Zhang Tie to provide free porridge to the poor in Huaiyuan

Prefecture...

After knowing what his mom and dad were doing for the sake of his safety, Zhang Tie burst out into tears in the underground palace...



# Chapter 775: The Liaison

---

As tomorrow was the day before the new year, no store would run anymore. Today was almost the most boisterous day before the new year in Stars Viewing City. There were many shops that offered a variety of discounts to attract customers to spend.

Even though the holy war was ongoing and many people were suffering pains, people in this place which was far away from the battlefields had forgotten about the holy war today.

In the Stars Viewing City, people came and went. Zhang Tie was not eye-catching among them at all.

Previously, there were mainly immigrants in Stars Viewing City; although, the number of Hua people still accounted for 80% of the total population in this city. However, the demographic structure in this city had already reversed today. As a lot of Hua people were leaving and more outsiders were pouring in, the number of Hua people in this city was less than 1/5 of the total population now. As to those Hua people who stayed here, some of them had been used to live in this city and didn't want to leave here for the time being; some of them were dispatched here by companies or wanted to seek for a fortune here; some of them were escaped from Northern region of Waii Sub-continent and came here; the last kind was those from large business groups or major clans who could leave out of here whenever they wanted but chose to stay here for the time being due to various reasons.

The last kind of people didn't require others' concern, but the first three kinds had to abide their own destiny. Actually, huge ships left the harbor of Yiyang City for Eastern Continent every day. Hua people could enjoy 40% off. Even though Hua families with financial problems could afford a ticket after a couple of years' work here. However, if they didn't want to leave, they had to be left to God's mercy.

In a chaotic world, when everyone was struggling for survival, nobody could control their own destinies.

Walking in the Stars Viewing City, Zhang Tie suddenly felt like coming back to Blackhot City. When he was in Blackhot City, the streets in Blackhot City would always be boisterous on this day every year.

Those refugees who had just poured in Stars Viewing City were easily identified, as those people were incongruous with such a festival atmosphere. They always stayed alone, in a couple or with their family members while lifting heavily worn suitcases in half-new clothes. Meanwhile, they explored this strange city with vigilant and careful eyes. They looked a bit restless and faintly helpless. Whenever their kids passed by the bakeries or restaurants, they would always gaze at the items through the windows. Adults would always wander nearby those low-end inns so as to compare the prices one after another. They would pay special attention to the ads about house renting and jobs in the streets. When the patrolling soldiers of Hurricane Corps passed by, these people would become especially intense as they would stay far away from them. Those little girls and female family members among them would directly lower their heads in case of direct eye contact with them...

These refugees had become very vigilant due to the displaced life. After coming to a new place, they all looked like flurried birds and felt full of crisis.

"Papa, I'm hungry. I've not eaten food for a whole day..." A 7-year old little girl with brown hair stood still outside the showcase of a noodle shop. Raising her poor, petite face, she was watching a couple at the 30s who were lifting simple suitcases which were made of canes while widening her bright eyes on the thin face.

Her eyes were full of earnest hopes.

After exchanging a glance with each other, the couple looked

pretty sad and helpless.

"I hid a necklace in the suitcase..." The woman whispered to the man.

"No, keep it. We don't need it right now..." The man replied as he cradled the little girl hardly, "Wait a moment baby, papa will find food for you when we settle down..."

Finally, with tears in her eyes, the little girl was taken away from the door of the noodle shop.

When he remembered what his mom required him to do, Zhang Tie sighed faintly as he paced up.

10 minutes later, Zhang Tie appeared at the gate of Golden Roc Bank in Stars Viewing City. After looking up at the symbol of 4-wing gold roc on the stages, Zhang Tie walked inside directly.

Golden Rock Bank was always magnificent wherever it was.

"Welcome!" Two beautiful clerks in business-wear in the hall of Golden Roc Bank bowed deeply towards Zhang Tie.

"Sir, what can I do for you?" The female clerk on the left asked him.

Zhang Tie directly took out a plate which represented that he was a senior customer of Golden Roc Bank and showed it to the female clerk, "Take me to your manager!"

Watching that symbol of a platinum customer in Zhang Tie's hand, the two female clerks became dumbfounded. They immediately fetched here their superior, the lobby manager.

After throwing a glance at the plate in Zhang Tie's hand, the lobby manager became much more respectful. The lobby manager led Zhang Tie to the internal region of the bank through the VIP tunnel on one side of the gate and invited Zhang Tie to wait for a second in a tranquil parlor. After that, he went to call the bank manager.

Zhang Tie's face gradually turned weird...

The perception of a knight was so powerful. Even if he didn't want to know what was happening, as long as he released his spiritual energy, he would know it for sure.

According to Zhang Tie's perception, what was happening in an office over 40 m away from here was almost like as if it was happening right in front of his eyes. "Damn it!" Zhang Tie swore.

After waiting in the parlor for less than 3 minutes, the door was pushed open. After that, Donder in a different dress entered in a noble way with a red face.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Donder's eyes gleamed. Closely after that, he locked the door from inside.

"I thought you brat wanted to leave me here forever." Donder directly threw himself onto the sofa on the opposite of Zhang Tie. He even complained, "This position is much more carefree than when I opened the grocery store before. I feel that I'm like a eunuch, who's waiting for your order at any time. I just wait here for you day after day. I've not imagined that you could cultivate for over 1 month!"

'F\*ck, this j\*rk!' Zhang Tie glared at Donder with a despised look, "Alright, don't disguise in front of me. Do you think that I don't know what you were doing in your office just now? Do you think that knights are nuts? You've not even pulled on the zipper of your trousers. If eunuchs really looked like you, the one who castrated you should be killed together with all of his family members and relatives!"

Donder lowered his head and found the zipper was indeed not pulled on yet. With an embarrassed look, he hurriedly pulled it on. Right then, he realized that something was wrong. He raised his head right away and looked at Zhang Tie with an amazed expression, "The walls of this room and my office are specially designed. As long as the door is closed, nobody can hear what is

happening inside. F\*ck, are you a human or something else? How could you hear that from here?"

After taking that fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie's knight's consciousness reached a new high. If it was before, Zhang Tie might not have such a sensitive sense. However, it was not a problem for him now. Whereas, Zhang Tie didn't need to explain it to Donder.

"You will understand it when you promote to a knight!" Zhang Tie answered obscurely. After that, he left alone the "part-time hobby" of Donder; instead, he took out a small piece of information crystal and threw it to Donder.

"What's this?' Donder asked with a curious look.

"You will know it when you inject your spiritual energy in it!"

The information crystal contained the blueprints of the buildings in the capital city of the Sacred Iceland Kingdom designed by Agan. If that information were restored on papers, the papers would fill a big wardrobe. However, it became portable in the information crystal.

In this age, all the senior, rare information were stored in such expensive information crystals. Like those secret books, such building blueprints of the capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom were qualified to be stored in such expensive crystals.

Zhang Tie had read those blueprints and was shocked by the design. In one sentence of Zhang Tie, 'It's like I've not known the talents of the three slaves in Castle of Black Iron at all. ' When Zhang Tie recalled how he had them work like common farmers for him before, he felt guilty. It was like having a great beauty carry bricks in an illegal kiln or having a knight knock stones in a quarry. As it was extremely wasteful, it became shameless and guilty.

'Thanks to Heller's warning, I stopped the shameless and guilty

deed.'

After injecting his spiritual energy into that piece of crystal, Donder slowly widened his mouth...

# Chapter 776: The Mysterious Suitcase

---

"Is...this the complete planning and design of the entire capital city of Sacred Iceland Kingdom?' Donder asked with an unbelievable tone.

"Hmm!" Zhang Tie nodded, "My major goal here is to hand it to you. You can have someone carry it to Ice and Snow Wilderness through the channel of Golden Roc Bank and tell them to start building according to this plan!"

Donder let out a sigh before saying with an amazed look, "Huaiyuan Palace really have great talents. I've not imagined that they could present such a complete urban planning design so fast. It seems that you're not living bad in Huaiyuan Palace!"

Realizing that Donder mistook this as the masterpiece of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile, 'if everyone could think like Donder, I wouldn't need to explain it to them one after another.'

"Can Gold Power Law get earth-element crystals?" Zhang Tie watched Donder with a serious look. If he could get earth-element crystals from Gold Power Law, he would have one more channel for earth-element crystals so as to improve his cultivation speed.

"Earth-element crystals?" Donder became serious, "It's impossible for Gold Power Law to not have a channel to get earth-element crystals. However, as earth-element crystals are of great importance to knights, you couldn't get as many as you want. As the hidden god CEO of Golden Roc Bank, you have the access to buy some earth-element crystals every year through Gold Power Law!"

"How many?"

"Discounted price, 100,000 gold coins for one, you can get four per year!"

"Can I buy some more?"

"Unless you promote to a higher class in Gold Power Law. When you become a hidden copper lord, you will have the access to 8 earth-element crystals per year!"

'4? It's the same as that provided by Huaiyuan Palace to its clan elders per year.' However, such a small number of earth-element crystals was far less enough for forming the second earth chakra of Zhang Tie. However, it was better than nothing.

As to the hidden copper lord, Zhang Tie shook his head. Based on his current position and contribution to Gold Power Law, it would take him at least 10 years to promote to a hidden copper lord.

Zhang Tie sighed helplessly, "Erm, I will buy the 4 earth-element crystals of this year first. Later on, you can directly have people deduct the payment from my account in Golden Roc Bank every year!"

"Well, but you need to wait for a period. After the order is delivered, it will take us three months to transport those earth-element crystals to Huaiyuan Prefecture from Eastern Continent!"

"Alright, I will wait!" Zhang Tie shrugged.

Donder watched Zhang Tie with full emotions...

"I do not owe you, right? Why do you watch me that way?" Zhang Tie felt goosebumps all over.

"When in Blackhot City, have you imagined that you will spend 100,000 gold coins on one earth-element crystal as easy as buying a radish? Have you imagined that you could spend hundreds of thousands of gold coins without a blink? When I told you that I'd tasted a cup of tea at the price of a couple of gold coins, you treated that as a joke and brag back then!"

Zhang Tie was also moved when he recalled what Donder told him at Blackhot City.



'When in Blackhot City, my parents found that I was just a commoner; therefore, they spent a lot to request the local chamber of commerce of Hua people to find a part-time job for me in a grocery store so that I could survive myself and broaden my vision. Due to such a reason, I met Donder. Besides the part-time job in the grocery store, I worked as a human flesh sandbag in Iron Thorns Fighting Club only for some silver coins. Being stimulated by young hormones, I wanted to hook-up a training beauty partner in the fighting club. However, I was despised by her. What a miserable puberty...'

'Except for the warmth brought by my family members, the only warm memory in my puberty was those kids' innocent smiles when I sent rice or millet gruel to the orphanage of Grandma Teresa. When those kids swarmed up for food like a pack of petite dogs or kitties, I felt pretty distressed...'

After being silent for quite a while, Zhang Tie let out a sigh. He then opened his mouth while watching Donder, "Don't you feel bored now? How about doing a job for me?"

Donder became vigilant at once as he watched Zhang Tie and asked with a cunning look, "Go ahead!"

"After knowing that I've become a clan elder, my parents are not reassured about me. They want me to accumulate merits in Huaiyuan Prefecture by providing free porridge to refugees and poor ones here. After a deep consideration, I think you can do it well!"

"Ahh? Why not have those people in Huaiyuan Palace do it for you?"

"If I issued the order in Huaiyuan Palace, nobody in Huaiyuan Palace would take one copper coin from me for it?" Zhang Tie sighed, "But my mom says, I have to use my own money to do merits. I should not use the money of Huaiyuan Palace with my power. That's what my mom warned me about. Do you know what

she told my elder brother? She was worried that I did not have enough money. She even told my elder brother that if I did not have enough money to provide free porridge to the refugees and poor ones, she would mail the private money of her and my dad to me so that I could do more merits here!"

Donder was dumbfounded, 'Zhang Tie's parents would never know how rich was Zhang Tie. In the north waters alone, this guy has got 300 million gold coins by tricks. After deducting the 90 million gold coins which were used to build the Sacred Iceland Kingdom from it, there are still over 200 million gold coins. Now, all these money are in his account of Golden Roc Bank. Golden Roc Bank makes a financial management for this guy and enables this guy to enjoy 18 million gold coins' interest each year. It indicates that this guy could make 50,000 gold coins a day without having to do anything. Without this interest, he could also enjoy over 1 million gold coins from Huaiyuan Palace as a clan elder. How could Zhang Tie's parents still worry that this guy is poor? What a pathetic parents' heart!'

"What do you want me to do?" Donder asked.

"I will give you 50,000 gold coins a year. You can employ some female servants who escaped to Huaiyuan Palace and open some porridge provision centers in the three cities. Just deliver porridge, dried dishes, steam buns and bread to those hungry people two times a day!"

After deducting the cost for employees and operation, only 25,000 gold coins could be turned into food. It could barely survive the poorest people in the 3 cities. Zhang Tie had calculated it carefully. If he provided less money, some people would be starved to death; if he provided more money, some people would do nothing else but rely on the porridge.

Based on Donder's shrewd temperament, Zhang Tie knew that such a charity fund would definitely play its greatest role.

"Well, I will do some merits together with you. We're on the same line, though!" Donder knew that Zhang Tie treated him as his family member. Therefore, Donder felt warm inside, "How long will you stick to it?"

"Until the demon's vanguard arrive at the north bank of Yuanjiang River!"

Donder became a bit stunned before revealing a bitter smile, 'This is indeed the style of a new rich. Actually, 50,000 gold coins mean nothing for Zhang Tie.'

...

After a couple of minutes, Zhang Tie left Golden Roc Bank.

After leaving Golden Roc Bank, Zhang Tie took a round in Stars Viewing City. He then bought a suitcase from a store. After that, he came to a relatively remote clothing store. He spent one gold coin in buying a lot of extremely common clothes which didn't fit his current figure and put them into his suitcase. After that, he left Stars Viewing City with that huge suitcase and returned to the encampment of Hurricane Corps.

Watching Zhang Tie coming back with a suitcase alone, those people in the temporary palace thought Zhang Tie had gone for a "shopping spree" in Stars Viewing City with extremely odd looks.

As a clan elder, he only needed to open his mouth for whatever he wanted. He didn't need to buy items himself at all. However, Zhang Tie came back with a bulged suitcase.

Nobody knew what was inside the suitcase.

Although being curious, nobody dared ask.

Before the arrival of the new year, the items in the suitcase of corps leader became the hot topic of those high-level commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps.

Some guessed that it was a mysterious, sharp weapon; some

guessed it contained a lot of senior secret books; some guessed it contained senior medicaments. All the guesses were based on a presumption that was silently adopted by everyone——The items inside the suitcase must be available to knights.

Nobody could imagine that the suitcase contained a lot of improper clothes which were bought at discounted prices.

Even though they were curious about that, nobody dared make an investigation in the Stars Viewing City——it was nothing different than committing suicide by privately investigating the trace of the clan elder or the corps leader.

...

# Chapter 777: The Eve before the New Year

---

During the 45 days when Zhang Tie cultivated in the underground palace, Colonel Leibnitz was dispatched by Filis the crown prince of Norman Empire to invite Zhang Tie to visit Taian City twice. However, he was refused by Zhang Tie's director in the temporary palace for consecutive two times.

On December 31st, Zhang Tie sent people to fetch Colonel Leibnitz and paid a return visit to Filis the crown prince of Norman Empire together with Colonel Leibnitz.

Zhang Tie's arrival made Filis thrilled. They had a lunch together.

This was the second time for both parties to meet alone, which made the relationship between Zhang Tie and Filis the crown prince of Norman Empire a bit closer.

Filis even introduced his teacher, a royal employed knight to Zhang Tie.

That knight called Leo was in the Benolis Castle. He was the most powerful figure of Norman Empire in Benolis Castle as Filis' teacher and bodyguard.

Norman Empire had already accelerated the evacuation of its domestic elites to Benolis Castle.

According to the current situation, Zhang Tie seemed to understand something about the plan of Norman Empire. Norman Empire's royal household didn't mean to stay in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor and fight demons to the death as Norman Empire was not powerful enough to do that. However, if they just gave it up, they would feel unreconciled. After losing their land, the royal household of a country would become meaningless. They would be called royal household in exile.

At this moment, the royal household of Norman Empire seemed

to balance their current interest and their future interest and to adjust their plans and countermeasures in the holy war.

When they had lunch, Filis suddenly asked Zhang Tie a question in front of his teacher Knight Leo.

"What would you do if you were the royal household of Norman Empire?"

After hearing this question, Zhang Tie put down his knife and fork and wiped his mouth with a piece of snowwhite napkin. He became silent for a couple of seconds before answering,

"If I was the emperor of Norman Empire, I would give up Norman Empire at once!"

Soon after hearing Zhang Tie's response, Knight Leo gazed at Zhang Tie with shrewd eyes. Filis also looked extremely solemn.

"Can you tell me your reason for doing so?"

"An ancient Hua emperor had a proverb——'If there're people, even though the land is lost, it can be grabbed back; if there is no people, even though the land is preserved, you will lose it sooner or later.' Now that the demon's vanguard was already irresistible, why would you stick to the land and the honor of the royal household? Demons could not take away the land as long as people were alive, the lost honor and destroyed homeland would be recovered sooner or later. By contrast, if people died, nothing will be left! People will always have low valleys in their lives; the sun would rise and fall or be covered by clouds. Even being royal household, it's nothing serious for you to experience some frustrations."

"You mean just give up the battle?" Filis frowned.

It was Filis's first time to hear the words "Even though royal households could fall" since he was born. It was completely against the education that he had received since he was young.

"No, of course not. Instead, you need to fight in a flexible way on

the premise of preserving your own battle force. There's an old Hua saying, 'When trees were moved, they would die; however, when people moved to another place, they would survive.' Although demon corps are powerful, not each of them is powerful. Demons also have weaknesses. If I can't defeat the demon general, I will fight those whom I can defeat. If I can not defeat you, I will beat those who are related to you. If I'm not advantageous here, I will defeat you in advantageous aspects. If I cannot defeat you physically, I will bribe you with money; if I cannot bribe you with money, I will set you up; if I cannot set you up, I will make you disgusted; if I cannot defeat you in the sky, I will defeat you on the ground; if I cannot defeat you on the ground, I will defeat you on the sea; if I cannot defeat you on the sea, I will defeat you under water; if not, I will run faster and see farther than you. In this world, lions could survive, monkeys could also survive. However, lions might not be able to defeat monkeys on the tree; tigers could be commanding; mice could also be free. When being targeted by a hunter, tigers would definitely die earlier than a mouse. Whales could be full in the sea; fleas could also survive on pig's body. You need to identify your abilities and fix your advantageous aspects.'

Zhang Tie smiled as he saw Filis considering his words carefully. He then took the knife and fork once again, "This is just my personal opinion. Hmm...the royal cooking skills are good..."

Zhang Tie didn't know how his words would influence Filis, but it was none of his business. In that case, now that Filis asked him, he had to put it straight. Those words were his real feelings. Zhang Tie thought that those who died for dead things such as money, land and imperial throne were silly.

After refusing Filis' invitation for the new year's evening party, Zhang Tie returned to the temporary palace of Hurricane Corps on the same day.

Hua people used to stay with their family members on this evening.

Zhang Tie's family members were in Taixia Country. Zhang Tie was in Waii Sub-continent. Thanks to the remote-sensing crystals, Zhang Tie could keep in touch with his family members on such a special day.

...

Zhang's manor, Fuhai City, Yingzhou Province, Taixia Country...

The family reunion dinner was very boisterous. Watching their grandchildren running here and there in the dining hall, Zhang Tie's mom and dad were so happy.

Zhang Yang had 4 kids now, the eldest son, Zhang Chengan, the second son Zhang Chengxu, the third son Zhang Chengze and the youngest daughter Zhang Shiyu. Zhang Chengan was 6 years old while Zhang Shiyu was just 2.5 years old.

Zhang Tie had 3 kids. The eldest son Zhang Chenglei was delivered by Linda, the second son Zhang Chengting was delivered by Beverly while the third son Zhang Chengpei was delivered by Fiona. Zhang Tie's dad named all of them. They were over 9 months old. With tender skins and delicate looks, they were stronger than those of their same age. They could climb very fast on the ground. Each of them was matched with 2 babysitters and 1 nurse.

There was a vermeil, huge round table in the dining hall, which could hold over 20 people. Besides Zhang's family members, Elder Muyuan was sitting in the main seat. The parents of Beverly and Fiona were also sitting at the table.

After delivering babies, Linda, Beverly and Fiona looked a bit maturer than before. However, they didn't look old at all. Due to distinctive dresses, they looked more fascinating.

Besides, there were over 20 servants and babysitters in the dining hall.

The entire Zhang family displayed a rich and noble scene at this



moment.

When the female servants served the dinner onto the table, the dining hall was immediately filled with various aroma. After smelling the aroma, the kids ran over here and started to look around the dishes and food on the table.

The parents of Beverly and Fiona came here to see their daughters after they delivered the babies. At the sight of such a brilliant Hua mansion, they became a bit restraint at the beginning as they came from common families. However, they gradually found that their son-in-law's family members were very easygoing, especially Zhang Tie's parents, who were genial and open-minded instead of being arrogant. They treated their daughters very well. After knowing that the parents of Beverly and Fiona lived in Blackhot City before, they had more common topics. The parents of Beverly and Fiona soon adapted to this environment and lived very comfortably in Zhang's mansion for a few days.

At this moment, Zhang Tie's mom whispered to her two son's mothers-in-law.

Zhang Tie's two sisters-in-law and wives were paying attention to those kids.

Watching them, Elder Muyuan whispered to Zhang Tie's father, "We will move to Huaiyuan City after the new year festival. We've already prepared a bigger mansion over there. When these kids grow a bit elder, 2-3 years at most, we will go to Youzhou Province. That's the foundation of Huaiyuan Palace in Taixia Country. As Zhang Tie is the clan elder and also belongs to the bloodline of Golden Sea City of Huaiyuan Palace. When we establish Golden Sea City in Youzhou Province, you could have a 15% share of the new city. Later on, your family could have a fixed bonus in golden Sea City each year. If these kids wish, they could find a job in Golden Sea City as their starting line in Taixia Country. This is also how offsprings from major clans in Taixia Country develop their undertakings. I've talked with Zhang Yang a couple of days ago,

Zhang Yang wishes to buy shares of Golden Sea City..."

Zhang Tie's dad was always meticulous. After hearing that Zhang family could have a share in Golden Sea City in Youzhou Province, Taixia Country, Zhang Tie's dad became a bit timid as he asked faintly, "6th uncle, is...this a bit excessive?"

'Excessive?' Elder Muyuan became silent. Watching Zhang Ping, he said, "Don't you know that your son Zhang Tie has become a king in the north waters of Waii Sub-continent?"

'Although Zhang Ping has an ordinary natural disposition, his two sons are both greater than him, not to mention his grandchildren. It's told that when Zhang Ping's family were living poorly in Blackhot City, they still kept doing merits. Is this the so-called "families with merits are destined to have a bright future!"?'

Elder Muyuan thought. The moment he wanted to say something, Zhang Yang pushed open the gate and entered the dining hall. He said one word, which made everybody in the dining hall quiet...

"Dad, mom, Zhang Tie has just sent a message to me. He wants me to wish you a happy new year!"

# Chapter 778: Triggering Body-changing Bloodline

---

In the balcony, Zhang Tie put away the remote-sensing crystal and looked up in the eastern sky. The most brilliant faerie-dragon star was shining over there...

It was already the latter half of the night...

When he realized that his elder brother had been messaging for so long and must have been very tired, Zhang Tie revealed a smile. After that, he turned around and returned to his bedroom.

It was a special new year's eve. Zhang Tie passed messages one after another with his family members in Taixia using his remote-sensing crystal and waited for the arrival of the 896th year of Black Iron Calendar with his family members.

The last message from his elder brother was that his three sons were too sleepy after playing all day and had gone to bed.

When he imagined the happy life and bright future of his three sons whom he had not seen yet and his family members in Taixia country, Zhang Tie felt warm.

It was a historical leapfrog for Zhang Tie's family that Zhang Yang determined to buy a share in Golden Sea City in Youzhou Province. It meant that Zhang Tie's family had almost entered the list of major clans in Huaiyuan Palace.

Although it was not difficult for Zhang Tie to build another city in Taixia Country based on his current wealth accumulation, it was complex to run a city and have it turn into the territory and property of his own clan, which required power, human relationships and wealth. Zhang Tie's family members lacked such experiences in running a city as they had just settled down in Taixia Country. Zhang Tie's elder brother needed time to expand the influence of Jinwu Business Group and accumulate resources

in all aspects. At this moment, it was a wise decision to stand on the side with Huaiyuan Palace and buy a share in the new Golden Sea City.

Through the warm interaction with his family members on the new year's eve, Zhang Tie saw clearly the responsibilities that he should shoulder for the whole family.

'Although I'm not in Taixia Country, my deeds here is closely related to happiness and future of my family members in Taixia Country.'

'Therefore, I have to survive on. Additionally, I need to be more and more powerful so as to be the reliance of this family.'

'Basically, in a chaotic world, power is everything.'

...

As Zhang Tie didn't sleep, none of those in the entire temporary palace dared go to bed. Everyone, including the cooks, Aimei and Aixue and the other servants were waiting for Zhang Tie's order.

"Elder Mushen, it's a bit late, do you want some midnight snack or some other services?" The steward hurriedly asked respectfully the moment Zhang Tie walked out of the room.

"No need, I will cultivate in the underground palace, just tell them to go to bed!" Zhang Tie waved his hand while walking towards the underground palace.

The steward looked at Zhang Tie with full respect. Only after 2 days since he finished his last cultivation did he continue to cultivate. Such a diligent corps leader was indeed respectable. As the pillar of a corps, it was the corps leader's main responsibility to stay powerful.

After a few minutes, the news that Zhang Tie entered a closed cultivation once again spread across the temporary palace.

...

After coming to the underground palace once again, Zhang Tie glanced over it with his spiritual energy and found that everything here remained unchanged. He then closed the gate of the underground palace forcefully from inside.

After that, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron.

It was also night in Castle of Black Iron while the flying fireflies decorated the palace as a fairytale dreamland.

Everyone had fallen asleep as of now. After throwing a glance at the small tree, Zhang Tie directly went upstairs towards his bedroom.

Hundreds of fireflies then flew around Zhang Tie like some floating lanterns, making everything poetic in this space.

Heller was waiting for him outside his room. When he saw Zhang Tie coming close, he bowed towards Zhang Tie, "Castle Lord!"

"I'm okay, I will leave soon. You can go to bed now!"

After throwing a glance at Zhang Tie, Heller knew what Zhang Tie was going to do, "Castle Lord, are you going to the north?"

"Hmm, right!" Zhang Tie confessed.

"The second chakra of "King Roc Sutra" requires very huge resources. Although there are less such resources on the ground, it doesn't mean that the underground world is also scarce. As long as you're alive, Castle Lord could have numerous possibilities and chances to gain them!" Heller reminded Zhang Tie faintly.

Zhang Tie replied with a smile, "I know, I will not risk my life. When I see the Demon General, I will escape right away. In the worst case scenario, I will seek for shelter in Castle of Black Iron instead of trying to show my power. Those Three-eye Association clans in the north have been too comfortable recently. I will find some troubles for them. By the way, I will make some new year lucky money for myself!"

"Good luck to you, Castle Lord!" Heller left gracefully.

...

After pushing open the door, Zhang Tie entered his room. After that, he took off his clothes. He then selected a set of black clothes from those he bought from Stars Viewing City yesterday.

This set of black robe was indeed a bit larger than Zhang Tie's figure. It looked fat and funny. Zhang Tie's palms were completely covered by his sleeves, only exposing some fingers. The lower hem of his robe almost touched the ground. The waist part of the robe was also loose like a life buoy which leaked air. The clothes under the robe were also much larger. He looked like a comedy performer on the stage.

After looking into the mirror, Zhang Tie revealed a faint smile...

Zhang Tie instantly triggered his body-changing bloodline...

He started to grow higher while the lower hem of his robe gradually rose. Besides, Zhang Tie's hands were also exposed.

Zhang Tie's pupils and skin started to change colors. His hair started to change color and elongate. Zhang Tie's face also started to change while his muscles all over uttered faint cracking sounds.

Only after 3 minutes, the person in the mirror looked utterly different than Zhang Tie. That was a grey-haired 50-year old man with the gloomy and icy look in a black robe.

This man looked similar to Master Abyan. However, he looked gloomier than Master Abyan.

After looking into the mirror, Zhang Tie grinned.

It was an utterly different change of his look since he had his body-changing bloodline. He had to admit that this body-changing bloodline was very powerful.

This look was consuming Zhang Tie's minor spiritual energy per second. If Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was insufficient, he would

recover his original look. However, Zhang Tie felt that he could maintain this new look for a decade based on his powerful spiritual energy. Additionally, it was very simple for him to maintain this look forever. Only by practicing "mental arithmetic" for over 10 minutes, he would be able to sustain his current look for a long time.

Facing the mirror, Zhang Tie made some remedies. He touched his nose and made it a raised, sharp hawk nose. He blinked his eyes and made his eye corners elongate. His eyes then looked more profound and malicious. He looked at his hands and made his hands larger with longer fingers and sharper fingernails. They looked like two sharp claws that could control everything. Finally, Zhang Tie rubbed his ears and changed their looks. Nobody could see Zhang Tie's background from his ears any longer.

"Ahem..ahem...ahem...ahem..." Zhang Tie coughed a few times to change his voice gradually.

Zhang Tie smirked and flicked at his clothes to make them tidy. After that, he buckled the elder's finger ring onto a firm alloy necklace and wore it over his neck. In this way, he could keep in touch with Huaiyuan Palace at any time without worrying about being noticed.

"Your name is Gorath—a human knight who mastered the sacred light battle qi of Sacred Light Empire. Meanwhile, you're an insidious, brutal, selfish and cunning devil who only believes in yourself. You're not recorded in the Mountain of Brilliance. You're just a ghost in the dark." Zhang Tie said in a hoarse voice.

Zhang Tie smiled towards himself in the mirror, which looked terrifying...

...

After a few minutes, the black beetle appeared in the underground palace out of the void. After flying around in the underground out of curiosity, he drilled into an air hole and left

the underground palace. After moving a short while in the air hole, he appeared on the back of a rockery in the garden of the temporary palace.

The black beetle instantly flew into the sky and left the encampment of Hurricane Corps.

It soon arrived in the wild. From 1,000 m high in the sky, when a piece of cloud covered the moonlight and it turned darker on the ground, the small beetle disappeared. Almost at the same time, the thunder hawk flashed out of Castle of Black Iron. The thunder hawk abruptly accelerated its speed and ascended above the clouds. After that, it flew towards the north.

After 3 hours, the thunder hawk flew out of the air territory of Jinyun Country. From 10,000 m high, the thunder hawk disappeared. At the same time, Gorath appeared...

"Gorath" flew over 200 m per second above the clouds, however, he didn't show any battle qi luster. He just flew silently like a ghost in the dark...



# Chapter 779: Deepening into Enemy's Rear

---

As he had just promoted to a knight, Zhang Tie was discovered by scouts last time as he was inexperienced. Actually, as long as a knight was not in a rush with his journey by turning himself into a meteor or releasing a powerful knight's qi on purpose in the evening, he would be barely discovered by people at over 10,000 m above the ground.

At this height, even common airships would be barely discovered, not to mention a person.

Especially in the wild, as long as he avoided the major human cities and agglomerations, he could barely be discovered by people. After triggering a senior concealing skill, Zhang Tie's qi abruptly reduced by some levels. Even knights could not sense his existence.

Before daybreak, the brilliant Faerie-dragon Stars had already risen to the highest point in the sky. When the first sunglow reached the land, Zhang Tie had been over 4,000 miles away from Huaiyuan Prefecture.

Zhang Tie was not concerned about the affairs in Huaiyuan Prefecture. As Huaiyuan Palace and the other major clans in Jinyun Country, Qilan Country and Benolis Castle had already reached a privity on common defense. If any of the above parties encountered the raid of demon knights, the knights of the other parties would rush there for support as soon as possible.

Even though the major forces of all the clans had evacuated from Waii Sub-continent, each clan still left a clan knight and a corps to safeguard the interest of their own clan. Therefore, no matter what, Qilan Country and Jinyun Country had at least 8-9 knights at present. Therefore, before Kalay Mountain Range was broken through by demons, the entire Qilan Country and Jinyun Country were as firm as the Mountain Tai. Unless the knights of demons or Three-eye Association were idiots, they would never enter the

encirclement of human knights of the same rank and wait to be beaten. Even the demon general would not do such a stupid thing without having an absolute advantage.

Unless being raided by knights, Hurricane Corps would not disrupt Zhang Tie from enclosed cultivation. Additionally, in a short period, it was almost impossible for Huaiyuan Prefecture to be raided by the knights of demons and Three-eye Association. This was a major reason why Zhang Tie dared leave Huaiyuan Prefecture without any concern.

Additionally, Zhang Tie was not used to be waiting for troubles from demons and Three-eye Association. He preferred to take the initiative.

Zhang Tie had been considering seriously before he headed for Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Zhang Tie had three reasons to do this.

First, If he took the initiative, he could beat demons and Three-eye Association and weaken the power of demons so as to slow down their pace towards the south.

Second, if demons and Three-eye Association broke through Kalay Mountain Range one day later, more commoners in Blackson Humans Corridor would be able to escape away from this continent. Meanwhile, Huaiyuan Palace could maintain its prosperity for a longer period.

In the holy war, it was each human knight's responsibility to weaken the power of demons and Three-eye Association. The above two reasons were for the public interest.

Privately, there was a more important reason, namely, Zhang Tie wanted to rip off demons and Three-eye Association greatly, whether for wealth or resources for cultivation.

Zhang Tie once plundered a lot from Senel Clan. He also gained some useful knight's widgets from that knight of Three-eye

Association. Zhang Tie believed that the other Three-eye Association clans and knights also had a lot of wealth and resources.

Of course, he should do that for both public and private interests.

Other human knights had also thought about this before. However, nobody dared do that by deepening into the demon's area alone and fighting many knights of demons and Three-eye Association at the risk of his life. The reason was that no knight of demons and Three-eye Association dared deepen into the territory of Jinyun country and Huaiyuan Palace and launched a raid.

If he had no Castle of Black Iron and the soul-based incarnation skill, Zhang Tie would not do it either. It was too dangerous, as long as he was besieged by knights of demons or Three-eye Association, he might be killed. No human knight dared do that. As long as a knight was besieged by more than 3 enemy knights of the same rank, he would probably be killed.

Additionally, Zhang tie had the body-changing ability and "King Roc Sutra" which enabled him to change his look freely. Otherwise, even if he made it, he might also expose his ability. Meanwhile, he would arouse an animosity between Huaiyuan Palace and demons and Three-eye Association. He might push Huaiyuan Palace into a dangerous situation and have it mired in the crazy revenge of demons and Three-eye Association.

However, with all these conditions, Zhang Tie would feel sorry about himself if he didn't do it.

'No matter what I will do, just let Gorath find demons and Three-eye Association some troubles. Since I was in enclosed cultivation in Huaiyuan Palace, nobody would doubt me for that!'

After leaving Huaiyuan Prefecture once again, Zhang Tie felt free.

At a navigation speed of 700 miles per hour, Zhang Tie had

already flown across Kalay Mountain Range in the middle of Blackson Humans Corridor and arrived at the north region of Blackson Humans Corridor at dusk. Such a constant high speed would definitely make all the knights dumbfounded.

After flying across Kalay Mountain Range, Zhang Tie continued to fly towards the north at the same speed. The closer he was to the north, the more ruined scenes would he see on the land.

He could see burning villages and farmlands and deserted cities everywhere.

The entire north region of Blackson Humans Corridor was chaotic. Besides demons, the small squads of thieves and bandits were as many as locusts after autumn. They could occupy mountains or cities themselves. Even though half of the north human region was not collapsed, it was actually in an anarchic state. The law of jungle prevailed.

After flying across Kalay Mountain Range, it took Zhang Tie 6 hours to arrive at the Selnes Plain.

Millions of dead bodies could not be eliminated in just a couple of years. Even during the night, from 10,000 m above the ground, Zhang Tie could still see the weird, colorful ptomaine miasma covering the entire Selnes Plain.

That ptomaine miasma reminded Zhang Tie of Tirsiris the dangerous woman, 'I wonder where is that woman.'

On the way, Zhang Tie saw a lot of demonized puppets troops moving southwards. However, he didn't stop.

After flying over Selnes Plain, Zhang Tie arrived at Titanic Duchy. It took him less than 1 hour to fly across Titanic Duchy and arrive at the Verov Federation which was neighboring Titanic Duchy and deepened into the hinterland of demon's region.

When he noticed those high rising grave tower demons, a city appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

It was a key city, which could be judged by its scale and the number of grave tower demons around the city.

Except for a few places, the entire city was pitch-dark under demon's ruling in the evening. It was pretty silent. Those commoners who were forced to become slaves didn't have night lives. Curfew took effect in the evening. Those bright places in the evening were the major agencies of this city.

After flying over 10,000 miles, Zhang Tie finally found a target city. Therefore, he became spirited at once.

After referring to the map in his memory, the information about this city became clear at once——Glivec City, a major industrial city in the south of Verov Federation. It was the second largest city of Verov Federation after the Democracy City, the capital city.

In Zhang Tie's memory, Verov Federation belonged to Arthur Clan.

In the last 100 years, three presidents of the Verov Federation came from Arthur Clan. Additionally, Arthur Clan controlled the largest military-industrial complex in the territory of Verov Federation. However, such a clan chose to betray humans instantly the moment the holy war broke out. They converted three corps of federal defense army into demonized puppets and helped demons control this country in the shortest period.

Arthur Clan's power was much more powerful than that of Senel Clan.

Zhang Tie pretty much hated such Three-eye Association clans who hid among humans with great power and betrayed humans at the critical moment.

It could be said that each Three-eye Association clan was founded on millions of innocent people's corpses.

Zhang Tie descended silently. The bright places in this city became Zhang Tie's best beacons and targets.

He flew towards a very magnificent building.

The moment he came close to that building, Zhang Tie had already heard the melodious music from the building. There might be a party in the garden of the building.

Zhang Tie silently landed in the shadow of some cherry-apple trees with shrewd light in eyes. His powerful spiritual energy silently covered the entire building like a breeze, enabling him to acknowledge everyone's movement in this building.

Zhang Tie had not seen such a ridiculous party before: all men were drinking and laughing loudly in a formal dress on the lawn; however, all women, including those female servants were naked and quivering in the chilly night wind...

After a few seconds, a shrieking man with disheveled hair in a cage like a beast was carried into the garden by some strong guards...

"Musker...I will curse you even if I die. I curse Arthur Clan to die in one's boots...you devils..."

# Chapter 780: A Massacre

---

Watching that man being carried out, all the other gentlemen stopped doing what they were doing. With a brutal smile, they just watched him roar exhaustively in the cage.

"Ding...ding..." A man with a beautiful handlebar mustache knocked at his glass. All the others then became silent. That man then looked around with a satisfactory smile, "May I have your attention, please? I will introduce a person to you, this is Mr. Fiddes, the chief editor of "Federal Democracy Daily". Mr. Fiddes always found Arthur troubles. He used to magnify the problems of Arthur Clan. Do you remember the Black Hole Case about the military expenditure of Federation which was published by "Federal Democracy Daily" in the year 890 and the president impeachment closely after that? That time, Mr. Fiddes almost brought us a big trouble. On the year 891, when I became the major of Glivec, the Federal Democracy Daily criticized that I was elected as the major through electoral fraud. He even appealed to the Federal Parliament to set up an investigation committee so as to investigate the major election of Glivec City. How brave was Mr. Fiddes!"

That cage was put on the ground while that man roared inside the cage, "I've not imagined that you Arthur Clan belong to Three-eye Association...You've already got everything, why do you betray the federation and have so many people die for you?"

"Everything?" The man with a handlebar mustache burst out into laughter, "Mr. Fiddes, you're really naive. Do you think that the so-called votes in the hands of the slaves could have any decisive role? Do you really think that Arthur Clan would like to hand their own fate to those silly, vulgar, dirty and short-sighted slaves and mobs? Do you really think that the so-called democracy of the federation and those thin paper in your hand could bring you something? There's indeed a black hole in the military budget of the

federation. However, it has lasted more than 100 years, instead of 7-8 years. All the military budget of the federation have flown into our Arthur Clan. My vote calculation was also fake. So what?" The man shook his head as he watched that man in the cage with a sarcastic look, "You don't know that, the life or death of human slaves like you can only be determined by us. This is the real order..."

"I swear you to die in one's boots!" That man called Fiddes swore loudly in the cage.

"Although Mr. Fiddes is naive, you're brave enough. Therefore, I will reward you with something. You can enjoy a free show!" The man patted his hands while two naked women with collars over their necks were pulled out by someone like pulling dogs by iron chains. Additionally, a strong male dog was pulled out. The two women looked delirious.

"Meara, Helena..." That man in the cage became excited when he watched the two women. He started to ram the steel bars on the cage forcefully as he asked, "Fitrich, what did you do to them? You beast. What did you do to them? If you are a man, just fight me..."

"Hahahaha..." That man called Fitrich burst out into laughter, "As you called me a beast, I will show you how your wife and daughter enjoy making love with a real beast. Honestly, your wife and your daughter don't taste bad. But I've been tired of playing with them. So I will just gift them to my dog..."

After hearing this, the others burst out into laughter too. Many men at present became excited about what would happen next. Some of them couldn't wait to catch those naked female servants on their sides and start to harass them. Those women just quivered. None of them dared resist them. This party immediately became extremely licentious.

"Beasts...you beasts of Three-eye Association..." That man being closed in the cage swore loudly while widening his eyes.



When that man was swearing, a servant fed something to the dog. That male dog's eyes instantly turned red. He started to pant towards the two women. The two women's skins also turned red as they laid on the grassland and started to touch themselves with their hands. At the same time, they groaned and twisted their bodies.

"Beasts...you beasts...you beasts of Three-eye Association will die in one's boots!" The man in cage forcefully rammed the steel bars while bleeding all over and breaking his skull. He started to burst into loud sobs...

This might be the cruelest thing for a man.

When the male dog started to gaze at the two lying women and became crazy, it was set free by that manservant. The male dog instantly charged towards the two women.

All the men at present were waiting for the next show. It was not the first time to watch similar shows. They all knew what would happen next. All the men in the party became thrilled.

Being stimulated by medicine, when the male dog arrived at less than 0.5 m away from the two women, it suddenly stopped. Closely after that, it started to sob as it moved back one step after another as if it had seen something extremely terrifying...

"What's the matter?" The man called Fitrich threw a glare towards that servant.

The lackey instantly turned his face, "Ahh, young master, I've just fed it medicine, I don't know why it's different than before..."

Soon after that man finished his reply had his head exploded, spraying his white brain over Fitrich's face and glass. Fitrich became stunned. Before he shouted, "assassin", an extremely terrifying qi had covered this place and frozen the entire garden.

Fitrich turned his face abruptly. Under the powerful qi, each one felt like carrying a mountain while the movement became difficult.

He tried his best to faintly rotate his pupils as he saw a hook-nosed old man in a black robe slowly walking out of the shadow of the cherry-apple tree with chilly eyes.

The old man raised his hand once again while a snake-shaped sharp battle qi instantly flew out of his finger and penetrated through the head of the major general, the most powerful one among the guests, spraying his colorful brain over the grassland.

'He's a knight, a powerful knight.' Given the powerful battle skill and the terrifying snake-shaped battle qi that flew out of the old man's finger, Fitrich instantly recalled a powerful battle skill——Flexible Snake Finger. It was the most difficult one among all the finger battle skills. As long as it was mastered, it would be very powerful. According to the legends, after mastering this battle skill, as long as one pointed at something, a flexible snake would fly out of his finger as fast as a lightning bolt, which could even match steam ballista.

Zhang Tie pointed his finger at each step. Each time, he would explode a guest's head in the garden while the plasma and brain blossomed like brilliant flowers over the grassland.

None of these people who colluded with Three-eye Association and did such brutal things would be innocent.

Zhang Tie made a massacre.

The battle skill he used was actually not flexible snake finger.

Zhang Tie had read the secret book about flexible snake finger in Huaiyuan Palace. In the trouble-reappearance situation, Zhang Tie had almost read all the secret books in the Secret Books Pavilion.

He was just imitating the flexible snake finger based on "King Roc Sutra". Although being similar, it was enough for him to deal with these fishes.

When Zhang Tie walked to Fitrich, all the guests who were waiting for the good show had been killed.

There were over 70 corpses in the garden while the rich bloody smell started to cover the garden...

Zhang Tie triggered his spirit while all the naked women passed out.

"I'm...a member of Arthur Clan...if you kill me...Arthur Clan will revenge you...our clan has knights too..." Fitrich stammered with a pale face.

Like having not heard that, Zhang Tie just watched Fitrich with a cruel expression. His terrifying, weird claws instantly caught Fitrich's head. In a split second, Fitrich had started to quiver all over like getting an electric shock. At the same time, he rolled his eyes...

With his powerful spiritual energy, Zhang Tie read Fitrich's mind in a faster way. Only after a few seconds, Zhang Tie had already got what he wanted. After that, he forcefully broke this b\*stard's head.

Until he saw Zhang Tie breaking Fitrich's head did that man in cage slowly close his eyes and died.

Watching the two women twisting their bodies with red skins on the ground, Zhang Tie knew that they had been destroyed by medicine physically and spiritually. They were just shells whose vitality had been exhausted. Even if he didn't show up, they could only survive 2 hours at most.

Zhang Tie broke their heart vessels and ended their pains by pointing at them.

...

# Chapter 781: Setting a Trap

---

It was Zhang Tie's first time to kill two common women. Although Zhang Tie's reason was that such a tragedy happened in demon's area every day in the holy war, he still felt frustrated when he saw the two women died.

After that, a killing intent filled his heart.

Besides those naked women who had passed out and laid on the ground, none of those at present were alive. Those naked women were sex slaves in the mansion of the major. They were commoners at the beginning. But now, their only responsibility was to be f\*cked by these b\*stards of Three-eye Association. They could not even survive themselves, not to mention dignity.

Zhang Tie closed his eyes and recalled the things in Fitrich's memory. After that, he revealed a faint, terrifying sneer.

After throwing a glance at the scene, Zhang Tie instantly released 10 tracing tentacles onto the grassland.

Tracing tentacle was a special, hidden spiritual mark which could only be seen by Zhang Tie. In Zhang Tie's eyes, the tracing tentacles were like golden dandelion seeds. They just silently landed in the grass with the breeze.

As long as Zhang Tie could see them, he could control the movement of these tracing tentacles and attach them to specific objects or humans. Zhang Tie had tried that and found that even if he was in the state of his incarnation, as long as his original body could release tracing tentacles, his incarnation could also pass his will and act on these tracing tentacles. Among all the rune skills that Zhang Tie mastered, this was the only one that Zhang Tie could use through his incarnation indirectly.

After releasing the tracing tentacles, Zhang Tie started to walk around the mansion of the major. Only after a few minutes, he had

plundered the entire mansion.

All the atrocious b\*stards and lackeys of Three-eye Association in the mansion according to the memory of Fitrich were cleared by Zhang Tie.

In front of Zhang Tie's powerful spiritual energy, all those b\*stards in the major's mansion could not resist. All of their heads were exploded by Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie killed 317 people in the major's mansion, 34 of which had blood ties with Arthur Clan, including Fitrich's two sons. The younger son was only 12 years old; however, that no-good son of a b\*tch had killed over 30 commoners in Glivec City in the last couple of years, over 10 of which were 20-year old beauties. He was brutal, lascivious and cunning. Zhang Tie didn't show his mercy to this remnant of Three-eye Association. In the terrifying look of that son of a bitch, Zhang Tie pointed at him and sent his skull flying away, spraying his brain over his bed.

All the remnants of Three-eye Association clans should be killed! If such a person survived, he would kill numerous commoners in the future.

Zhang Tie made his determination.

There was a safe in the study of Fitrich. Although Zhang Tie knew the code of the safe, in order to not expose the secret that he mastered the "soul capture skill", Zhang Tie broke the safe by force. He then moved the 4 million-odd gold checks and some senior vials of medicament into Castle of Black Iron.

After clearing the mansion of the major, Zhang Tie burned everything in the mansion. Closely after that, he woke up all the innocent servants and naked women in the mansion and let them escape.

With shrill shrieks and the rising flames from that building, the Glivec City became chaotic.

Zhang Tie just stood on the tip of a bartizan in the major's mansion like an owl. His black robe and silver hair flew with the night wind with a great killing qi.

However, none of those escaping slave servants noticed such a person on the tip of the bartizan.

When the major's mansion burned down, a camp less than 1 mile away from it sounded the miserable clarino.

It was the encampment of the elite city guards regiment of Glivec City, which was controlled by Fitrich himself. It was the devoted troop of Arthur Clan. As Arthur Clan treated it as a major force for stabilizing the situation and suppressing the rebels, therefore they arranged it in Glivec City.

Zhang Tie didn't rush over there right away; instead, he just watched that main building burning like a huge torch. After about 3 minutes, Zhang Tie revealed a sneer and he rushed towards that camp.

An elite troop could almost finish its convergence in 3 minutes.

When Zhang Tie arrived above the camp, he saw about 6,000 soldiers in the square of the camp. Many people were running here and there. As the commissioned officers issued the orders, all of the soldiers had already converged there. The fastest squad had already rushed towards the gate of the camp.

That was what Zhang was waiting for.

With weird laughter, Zhang Tie descended to 100 m above the gate of the camp. He rubbed his hands and launched his first attack in an overwhelming way.

A black boa-shaped battle qi was immediately released. As long as over 20 m, it charged towards that squad like a falcon hunting for chicks. When it reached the squad, it instantly opened its bloody mouth and revealed its grim fangs and devoured the entire vanguard of the squad.

The commissioned officers and dozens of soldiers in front of this squad had become flesh and blood before they realized what happened.

It was not over. After devouring dozens of people ahead of the squad, the boa kept surging forward. After sweeping over 200 people, it exploded onto the ground, causing a huge pit with a diameter of several meters with a ground-breaking loud sound like dropping an alchemist's bomb. The rocks flew out of that huge pit and swept soldiers one after another. Being affected by the fragile rocks, those soldiers were injured or killed at present.

Over 100 soldiers being closest to the huge pit wailed and fell on the ground at once.

"Knight..."

"Knight!"

"Knight's assassin!"

When the commissioned officers and soldiers of the city guards regiment found Zhang Tie in the sky, they shrieked at once. Meanwhile, all the city guards who were rushing out to control the situation of the major's mansion became flurried.

If a knight was a prehistorical huge crocodile in the water, they were just plankton in front of a knight. It was meaningless even though they outnumbered the knight.

Zhang Tie charged downwards and started the bloody massacre...

From then on, the entire city guards' camp was filled with flurried and terrifying roars and sounds of breaking bodies. No more battle calls could be heard.

Before Zhang Tie promoted to a knight, he could slaughter those LV 9 fighters of demons corps like killing dogs outside Upton City, not to mention these newbies. His moving speed of over 100 m per second, attacking frequency of over 100 times per second, attacking range of over 100 m and his knight's consciousness which

could cover the entire camp became the nightmare of this elite city guards regiment in Glivec City.

After a few minutes, Zhang Tie glanced at the slaughterhouse where there were lying thousands of incomplete corpses and rushed to the sky before flying towards the city gates as fast as a meteor, ignoring the remaining alive fishes.

After breaking the two city gates and clearing all the city guards near the city gates, he flew towards those high grave tower demons.

There was a troop of over 200,000 demonized puppets outside the city gates of Glivec City. They were encamped near the grave tower demons. As those demonized puppets outside the city had sensed the chaos in the city, they started to converge and prepare for the emergency.

However, those commissioned officers who commanded these demonized puppets had long been killed by Zhang Tie in the major's mansion. Therefore, those demonized puppets became a bit chaotic.

Zhang Tie's targets were those grave tower demons instead of those common demonized puppets. Even if those demonized puppets noticed him, they could do nothing but shriek on the ground.

Any powerful living beings would have their own weaknesses. The typical example was the parent worm of demonized puppets. No matter what state was this parent worm in and how many demonized puppets could this parent worm control and convert, the parent worm itself had no ability to protect himself at all.

When Zhang Tie came to the first grave tower demon, the latter had already sensed Zhang Tie's killing intent as it started to shrink itself by creeping its body...

Zhang Tie rubbed his hands while another black boa-shaped



battle qi flew out of his hands towards that grave tower demon. It exploded the entire grave tower demon from its root, causing it to fall down like a flesh mountain...

Numerous demonized puppets started to wail...

The 7 grave tower demons outside the city gates of Glivec City were turned into piles of smelly, suppurating and bleeding flesh.

After killing these grave tower demons, Zhang Tie rushed into the demonized puppets' camp and killed almost 30,000-40,000 demonized puppets. After that, he rushed towards northwest like a white meteor and disappeared in a split second...

...

After over 10 minutes, a black beetle arrived at the Glivec City silently and rested on a leaf of a cherry-apple tree in the garden of the major's mansion...

# Chapter 782: Big Trouble

---

All the servants and slaves had escaped away from the major's mansion. Otherwise, they would die for sure as the funeral objects and the victims facing the fury of Arthur Clan.

Zhang Tie was resting on a leaf of a cherry-apple tree in the garden of the major's mansion in the incarnation of a beetle. The beetle turned into the same color as the trunk of the cherry-apple tree. Even if a knight was standing under the tree and noticed such a small insect on the back of the leaf, he would never pay special attention to it. Because there were so many small insects in this garden. This garden was a mini ecological system.

Some smart and brave servants even slid into other rooms of the major's mansion and took some belongings. After that, they set a fire and burned all the evidence.

Before leaving, Zhang Tie just burned the main building of the major's mansion; however, when Zhang Tie came back, a small half of the buildings in the major's mansion had been burning. Thanks to the artificial lake which covered about 2,000 sqm between the garden and those buildings, the garden was not influenced by the fire accident in the major's mansion.

The Glivec City became completely chaotic tonight. For many people, this was a good chance for them to escape away from this city.

The elite city guards regiment that was cleared, the city towers that Zhang Tie had destroyed and the disordered demonized puppets spared a chance for those people to escape away from this city.

In the ruling area of demons and Three-eye Association, each city was actually a huge prison. The b\*stards of Three-eye Association were the managers of the prison. Demonized puppets and the army of Three-eye Association clans were jailers and hatchet men in the

prison. Demons were the owner of the prison. However, most of the people became slaves and food of demons and prisoners who were waiting for death. Nobody would like to live in such a prison.

After escaping away from Glivec City, those people could only depend on themselves. Generally, as long as they had sufficient preparations, they could choose to hide in mountainous areas in the wild being far away from the city.

...

In the shadow of the flames, a man and a woman ran into the garden with simple luggage on their back who dressed like servants of the major's mansion.

"Lily, wait for me a moment..." That man told the woman.

"Ahh, Noah, what're you going to do? There're corpses all over here..." Watching those headless corpses in the garden, that woman was very fearsome and looked pale.

"I remember that the keys of the blood slaves camp in the south of the city are carried by Atlie. I have to save my dad and mom out of the blood slave camp. As it's chaotic tonight, I have to seize the mere chance." That man said with a bad look. After that, he kept identifying those corpses and searched their clothes one after another, "This food should be eatable, Lily, hurry up, take away the food on the tables. In the next few days, we need to rely on this food before entering the mountain. Take some more salt..."

After hearing the man's words, that woman hurriedly ran to the tables and started to pack those food on the tables with quivering hands.

The man took all the purses that he found from those corpses without any hesitation. Finally, he found a bunch of keys from a corpse in a purple ceremonial robe.

"I got them..." That man uttered a low voice. Closely after that, he stood up and ran to the side of that woman. After carrying the

packed food, he hurriedly left with that woman.

1 hour later, two batches of people arrived here. After searching over those corpses, they left too. The last batch of people even peeled off the clothes of some corpses, leaving them lying on the grassland in only underwears, which looked pretty weird.

Zhang Tie knew that someone would come here for investigation for sure. When he withdrew out of Fitrich's memory, Zhang Tie had known that Arthur Clan had independent clan intelligence and detectives in Glivec City. Even Fitrich didn't know some of those intelligence and detectives. Their job was to report some major events in Glivec City to Arthur Clan. It was also a means that Arthur Clan adopted to control this country and its clan members.

The news that Glivec City was attacked by a human knight must have been transmitted to Democracy City.

Democracy City was the capital city of Verov Federation, the biggest city in the federation and the nestle of Arthur Clan. After being the actual ruler of Verov Federation, Arthur Clan kept the name unchanged, making it sound a bit ironical.

Arthur Clan, with 4 knights, was the most powerful clan among all the Three-eye Association clans.

Yonas Arthur was the key figure in the entire Arthur Clan. He was both a knight and the ancestor of Arthur Clan, who pushed Arthur Clan to the first clan in Verov Federation.

110 years ago, when Yonas Arthur promoted to a knight, it shocked the entire Verov Federation. This person had always been the pride and symbol of the entire Verov Federation. Even a city in the east of the federation was named after him.

After Yonas Arthur promoted to a knight for over 100 years, 3 of his offsprings became the presidents of the federation, 4 became the chief justices of the federation and 2 became the speaker of the federal parliament. Right in 100 years, Arthur Clan absolutely

consolidated its position in Verov Federation.

Besides Yonas Arthur, Arthur Clan had 3 more employed knights, one of whom went on an expedition with the demonized puppets corps of Arthur Clan and "disappeared" after fighting human knights outside Mocco City. After that, Arthur Clan dispatched another employed knight called Dimma to join the clan's demonized puppets corps.

Zhang Tie learned it according to Fitrich's memory. That "missing" knight of Arthur Clan was killed by Zhang Tie when he was almost dead. Zhang Tie also met that knight called Dimma in Mocco City. The moment he killed Scala, that knight had appeared. Thankfully, he played a trick to escape successfully.

To be honest, Zhang Tie had a "bosom relationship" with Arthur Clan.

The fourth knight of Arthur Clan was a mysterious figure called Sigri. Even Fitrich didn't know much about Sigri. Even though Fitrich had met Sigri three times, each time they met in major occasions of Arthur Clan when Sigri just stood silently on the side of Yonas in a black robe and grim look.

Zhang Tie wondered how many clan knights of Arthur Clan would arrive here.

In the demons' area, given such events which had caused a major loss to their own cities, the demons and Three-eye Association's emergency response was consistent with that adopted by humans in similar situations—As long as they found such a person, demons and Three-eye Association would mobilize all of their advantageous forces within the whole territory and besiege that human knight so as to kill him. They would dispatch at least 3 knights as powerful as that human knight.

Zhang Tie waited there silently.

After the last batch of people left with the corpses' clothes, a

powerful qi darted towards here from the north in the sky.

After circling around the air territory of Glivec City, he landed in the garden of the major's mansion. Right in those corpses, he looked at those corpses with chilly eyes. He even squatted down to check the death cause of those corpses.

This knight was about 100 m away from the beetle.

At the sight of this knight, Zhang Tie narrowed his pupils slightly, 'This man was the very employed knight called Sigri in Arthur Clan.' Zhang Tie sensed a profound, weird qi from this employed knight.

The way Sigri checked those corpses was extremely disgusting. Besides observing them with eyes, this knight even dipped the brains by fingers and tasted them.

After checking those corpses, Sigri in a chilly and solemn robe stood up and closed his eyes silently.

Zhang Tie felt that Sigri's knight's consciousness was sweeping over the major's mansion.

At this moment, no more living beings could be found except for some insects in the major's mansion. Even the dog had run away, not to mention humans.

Zhang Tie ran his spiritual energy and had one tracing tentacle attach to Sigri's robe as light as a feather.

Due to the powerful sense of black iron knight, Zhang Tie could not attach the tracing tentacle to the body of a black iron knight; however, he could have it attached to the black iron knight's belongings or clothes. This was the strength of the god's rune.

Less than 10 minutes after Sigri landed here, another knight's qi darted towards this city from the south. After sensing the knight's qi in the major's mansion, that knight directly flew towards the major's mansion.

The second knight was another employed knight of Arthur Clan called Dimma, whom Zhang Tie was familiar with.

In the next half an hour, 2 demon knights and 2 more Three-eye Association knights arrived in the major's mansion...

When these knights landed, those tracing tentacles had been attached to these knights' soles, clothes or weapons.

Watching the 6 knights, Zhang Tie silently swallowed his saliva as he realized that he had made big trouble...

# Chapter 783: Killing Unther

---

The 6 knights rushed towards here from 6 directions. If Zhang Tie just left Glivec City in a certain direction blatantly, he might have collided with some of these knights.

"According to the intelligence of Arthur Clan, a human knight in a black robe and silver hair raided Glivec City!" Dimma explained to the other 5 knights.

"Is he from the southern human countries?" The knight who came here in the end asked.

"I'm not sure about that. We have to carry out investigation! Based on his look, he didn't fit those knights in the southern human countries!"

"I don't care who he is, I will just chop off his head!" The demon knight uttered a muffled voice with full killing qi.

"The ground troops of 17 northern countries have already moved. They were paying attention to any suspected person at any time. Numerous eyes were gazing at the sky now. All the other No. 1 knights have become vigilant. Even some neighboring countries including Verov Federation had dispatched over 1,000 ground scouting units to carry out an encirclement around the Glivec City. That man could never leave out of here!"

"Alright, let's move. Two in a unit. The two knights in one unit should not exceed 100 miles. As we've not met that guy on the way here, it indicates that he's still not far from here. When any one of us finds the target, stop him right away, all the others will arrive there soon! Arthur Clan will be left to protect Glivec City!"

After over 10 seconds of communication, the 6 knights looked at each other before nodding. After that, they immediately rushed to the sky and rushed in directions as fast as meteors.

Watching the 6 knights leaving the major's mansion, Zhang Tie



showed his head out of that leaf of the cherry-apple tree. Watching the 6 knights leaving, Zhang Tie thought for a second before following after one of the six knights.

Among all the 6 knights, that knight's qi was weaker.

Through reading Fitrich's memory, Zhang Tie knew the information about that knight. He was called Unther, an employed knight of Avice Clan, another Three-eye Association. He had just promoted to a knight less than 3 decades ago.

Zhang Tie was also familiar with Avice Clan. After the demonized puppets corps broke the human defense line in Selnes Theater of Operations, Zhang Tie once killed a batch of young elites of Avice Clan in the rear of Avice Clan's corps.

Avice's territory was Highcloud Empire, a country in the 17 collapsed human countries in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. This clan had 2 knights, a clan elder had gone on an expedition with the army, the rest one Unther was left in the rear.

According to Fitrich's memory, Zhang Tie gradually figured out the situation facing the entire enemy-occupied area. He knew the major clans of Three-eye Association very well. This information was indeed precious.

As an old Hua saying went, "People always eat soft persimmons first." Of course, Zhang Tie would choose the weakest one to kill.

After raiding a city, if he could kill another knight of Three-eye Association, he would deter all the Three-eye Association clans and demons across Blackson Humans Corridor.

...

Zhang Tie had not imagined that demons and Three-eye Association would make such great efforts to chase him in the past 10 days, during which period the entire north region of Blackson Humans Corridor took actions to search for him.

After chasing Unther for 3 days, Zhang Tie in the incarnation of

the small black beetle became pretty tired.

After sensing the decisive attitude of demons and Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie directly changed his strategy. He took the initiative instead of following after Unther. After incarnating into the thunder hawk, Zhang Tie landed on the top of a mountain over 100 miles away from the capital city of Highcloud Empire which neighbored Verov Federation and waited for his target.

'As long as demons and Three-eye Association think that I have left the north region of Blackson Humans Corridor, and ended their search for me, the group of 6 knights would disband and return to their own homes.

Those scouting units might continue to carry out their scouting tasks; however, they would not waste advanced resources like knights in this way only for an unidentified knight.

After Zhang Tie raided Glivec City, the atmosphere in the capital city of Highcloud Empire became intense for a few days, during which period, Highcloud Empire also organized hundreds of scouting units to search for the target like headless chickens. However, after achieving nothing for a few days, the intense atmosphere gradually relieved.

Zhang Tie was on a thousand meters high steep peak, which was covered by clouds. Almost nobody else could be found here, not to mention any scouting unit. Even if any scouting unit arrived here, they would not search carefully, either.

A hidden knight was more difficult to be found than a knight flying in the sky.

Zhang Tie found a cave to cultivate on the mountain peak casually as he waited for that knight of Avice Clan.

...

After 7 days, Zhang Tie, with crossed legs in the cave, opened his eyes and ended the illusion of 5 abacuses in his mind. In his mind

sea, he had already sensed two tracing tentacles moving close to 500 miles away from this place.

The two tracing tentacles came from Unther.

There was no other knight within 500 miles from Unther.

Zhang Tie knew that the knights' scouting units must have disbanded. Given the direction, Unther was flying towards here from the capital city of Highcloud Empire at a speed of about 300 miles per hour. For common knights, with this speed, they could maintain their own physical strength to the utmost.

Zhang Tie got up and warmed up his limbs, causing cracks all over. After that, he walked out of the mountain cave and watched the shrouding clouds. Meanwhile, he issued an order to the thunder hawk who was playing and scouting outside these days and waited for it to come back silently.

It was daytime. However, It had been snowing in the entire north for 2 days, causing a sharp decline in the temperature. Therefore, the mountain range was already covered with snow.

After 7-8 minutes, with the sound of flapping wings, the thunder hawk came back and landed on Zhang Tie's side. It kept whooping and rubbing its furry head to Zhang Tie's shank.

The thunder hawk didn't come back alone; instead, it carried a female partner. Watching the other thunder hawk which looked faintly slim and had just molted its fur, Zhang Tie smiled, 'Are you kidding me? You brought back a beauty?'

After sensing some qi on Zhang Tie, that female thunder hawk rubbed her furry head with Zhang Tie's other shank in an intimate way too.

"Alright, build your nestle in Castle of Black Iron!" Zhang Tie smiled as he moved the two thunder hawks into Castle of Black Iron.

After doing that, Zhang Tie flew in the air and rushed towards

the two tracing tentacles.

In Zhang Tie's consciousness, the two tracing tentacles were like a high-precision radar before the Catastrophe. They could tell him the speed, height and coordinates of that arriver.

After hiding his qi, Zhang Tie kept flying ahead casually. Only after half an hour, he had already caught sight of Unther.

Zhang Tie was at 7,000 m in height while Unther was at 6,000 m. As Zhang Tie was behind a thin cloud, he was not noticed by Unther when he caught sight of Unther.

'As I've imagined, he's alone.' Zhang Tie's eyes turned cold at once.

Zhang Tie knew that this guy had a knight's remote-sensing device. 'If this guy found me, he would send the rescue signal right away. So what? The latest opponent knight is over 900 miles from here. It will take him at least 1 hour to arrive. However, it's enough for me to kill two knights like him in such period.'

Zhang Tie stood still in the air and watched that Unther arriving at his feet.

After that, Zhang Tie accelerated his speed to the utmost and rushed towards Unther with a terrifying qi like a meteor.

...

The moment Zhang Tie released his battle qi, Unther immediately felt his feet being pinched by a hot red needle. He looked up as he shouted, "Who's that?"

The answer was a boa-shaped battle qi which was widening its bloody mouth and exposing its fangs...

As a knight, Unther was not slow-witted. He moved back and launched punches as fast as a lightning bolt with surging battle qi. In a split second, he had collapsed that boa-shaped battle qi...

When the boa faded away, Zhang Tie, in a black robe and

swaying silver hair, had already charged towards him like a monster being incarnated by a vulture with sharp killing qi.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't expect that one off-body battle qi could have any effect. This strike was just saving some time for him to warm up.

"You did that!" Unther narrowed his pupils as he moved back as fast as a meteor.

With weird sound, "jye jye", Zhang Tie charged forward and launched his second round of attack...

Unther moved at a high speed in the sky; however, it was not fast compared to that of Zhang Tie.

With Unther's roars, the close combat between knights broke out. Being constantly attacked by Zhang Tie, Unther was like a buffalo falling into the mire, who could not leave for free. Even his procrastination tactic could be seen through by Zhang Tie.

The two knights started the fiercest combat. The moment their combat broke out, two battle qis had rushed into the air and collided with each other fiercely...

Unther's battle qi was as azure as the sky; however, Zhang Tie's battle qi was magnificent, bright and sacred. If some experts were watching them, they could identify that Zhang Tie's battle qi was the secret skill of Sacred Light Empire.

After killing 2 knights through the close combat, Zhang Tie's close-range attacking strength and comprehensive battle force had improved and became extremely powerful.

Only after 10 more minutes, with a miserable shriek of Unther, Zhang Tie penetrated through Unther's chest by his sharp claws before stretching out Unther's entire spine, destroying his body in a split second. Unther's corpse fell off. However, Zhang Tie caught it in the air.

Zhang Tie plundered all the valuable items from Unther's body.

After that, he threw off the corpse and rushed towards the capital city of Highcloud Empire as fast as a meteor.

After 20 minutes, Zhang Tie cleared over 10 grave tower demons in the periphery of the capital city of Highcloud Empire and destroyed two major castles of Avic Clan outside the city and the greater part of the imperial palace of Highcloud Empire. After collecting all the valuable items, he faded away like a meteor once again.

After Zhang Tie disappeared for half an hour, the meteors arrived at the capital city of Highcloud Empire one after another once again.

This time, the entire demon area in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor became shocked...

# Chapter 784: Fruits and Butterfly

---

When a large batch of knights of demons and Three-eye Association arrived at the capital city of Highcloud Empire, Zhang Tie had long entered Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie just left the capital city of Highcloud Empire at his navigation speed. In order to confuse his enemy, Zhang Tie even turned into a brilliant meteor, which looked like leaving at its full speed.

As the old Hua saying went, 'Deceit is not to be despised in war.'

After leaving the capital city of Highcloud Empire, Zhang Tie found a remote valley and landed in a cave of two wild bears. The moment he entered the cave had Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron.

After attacking Glivec City for 10 days, he raided the capital city of Highcloud Empire and killed a knight of Three-eye Association, Zhang Tie knew that demons and Three-eye Association would be driven mad by him this time.

'Although I could imagine how demons and Three-eye Association would respond to it. It's nothing to do with me. I will just cultivate in Castle of Black Iron for a few days. I don't care how furious they are; as long as I'm in Castle of Black Iron, it's nothing to do with me. Demon General? So what? Can he bite this father's butt?' Zhang Tie thought.

...

As it was daytime outside, it was daytime in Castle of Black Iron too. The moment Zhang Tie appeared in the palace of the palace tree had he caught sight of Heller.

"Congratulations, Castle Lord, you've got new achievements!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "It was risky this time; thankfully, I'm safe. I know what you want to say. I will watch out. I will cultivate in

Castle of Black Iron for a while, leaving demons and Three-eye Association fly into rage. I want to see how long could demons and Three-eye Association be intense this time!"

After hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Heller revealed a smile, "It's nice to hear Castle Lord think in this way. When you killed that knight of Three-eye Association, you had actually disrupted the fighting rhythm of demons and Three-eye Association in the holy war. Castle Lord, you have actually made a great military exploit for the human countries across Blackson Humans Corridor. Sometimes, the so-called war doesn't require the real fight. If you could restrict the moving party by staying still, it would be the best!"

"Fine, thanks for your warning. I understand. 'Restrict the moving party by staying still', I like that expression!" Zhang Tie replied as he walked towards that small tree.

"In former two holy wars, demons and humans had already concluded and developed a set of methods to deal with the raid from an opponent knight. Now that demons could wrestle with humans for such a long time, they would definitely have their means to deal with you. Please pay attention to this point, Castle Lord. Don't be careless only because of two times of success. If a powerful knight could destroy the rear cities and bases of the opponent casually, demons or humans could determine the result of a war only by dispatching an earth knight to the opponent's territory. Actually, given the former two holy wars, neither party would suffer from a destructive strike caused by an advanced opponent knight. The decapitation action and the island hopping action are not impossible. Castle Lord, you should consider about the reason!" Heller reminded Zhang Tie with a profound look.

Zhang Tie stopped his footsteps.

Zhang Tie faintly frowned and turned around to look at Heller, "You mean demons have methods to deal with me?"

"Castle Lord, I mean that you were definitely not the first



advanced knight who went to find trouble in the rear of the opponent. In holy wars, any advanced knight might be killed. As demon is a powerful race, Castle Lord, you better not take it lightly!"

Zhang Tie knew about Heller's style. Heller might know something in many cases; however, he would not put it straight. Instead, Heller just implied him in other methods.

Heller's words made Zhang Tie's heart pound. As a result, Zhang Tie recovered his composure as he nodded seriously, "I've remembered your words. Thanks, I will watch out!"

Heller then bowed elegantly towards Zhang Tie, "That's what everybody who cares about you would like to hear!"

...

Zhang Tie came to the small tree and reviewed his achievements.

The fruit of brilliance which was as brilliant as a rainbow——

The fruit of judgment which contained super rapid moving skill

——  
The fruit of judgment which contained super hiding skill——

The fruit of source of the parent worm of demonized puppets——

Two ripe leakless fruits——

A fruit of redemption of golden uangs which could increase his strength by 71.5 kg once again——

'No fruit of bloodline?'

Zhang Tie became a bit disappointed after circling around the small tree and found no fruit of bloodline. The presumption that he didn't want to see most came true, 'The forming conditions of a powerful fruit of bloodline is indeed much more difficult to gain than that I've imagined.'

Zhang Tie carefully recalled all the details about that knight of

Three-eye Association whom he killed for the first time and the hint of the first fruit of bloodline. Finally, he fixed two conditions: the first condition was that he should kill knights who betrayed humans; the second condition was that he should kill knights who were more advanced than Zhang Tie given the words in the hint "brave", "curving fear", "creating marvels", "turning impossibilities into possibilities".

'As I'm a black iron knight, it means that I have to kill the earth knight of Three-eye Association so as to gain the powerful fruit of bloodline.'

Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile, 'Earth knight? I cannot even defeat the demon general, it's impossible for me to kill an earth knight in a short time. It seems that I have to improve my battle force gradually. When my battle force surpasses that of demon general, I will search for earth knights of Three-eye Association.'

Speaking of the "improve", the contents in the hints of the two fruits of judgment made Zhang Tie spirited up, not to mention the fruit of brilliance which contained powerful spiritual energy.

With the super rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie gained an effect that he dreamt of—an increase of 5% in flying speed.

Zhang Tie felt that he had made a great achievement because of the improvement in flying speed, not to mention other achievements.

With the super hiding skill, Zhang Tie could hide his qi at a higher level.

Watching these fruits, Zhang Tie became reassured. He then started to cultivate carefully in Castle of Black Iron...

...

After 2 days, a colorful butterfly which was 4-5 times larger than that of common butterflies flapped its wings and loomed in the windy and snowy valley where Zhang Tie disappeared like not

being affected by the heavy wind and snow...

Behind that butterfly was the demon general's extremely gloomy face in the void...

# Chapter 785: Digging the Ground

---

As Castle of Black Iron was not a complete world, there was no elements realm in Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, Zhang Tie could not form chakra in the Castle of Black Iron by entering elements realm. Thankfully, Zhang Tie got 4 earth element crystals from Unther, which barely enabled Zhang Tie to stay three days in Castle of Black Iron. Three days later, Zhang Tie continued to imagine 5 abacuses in his mind at the same time.

After eating the new fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy surged once again. The increase of his spiritual energy enabled him to form a hand of spiritual energy in the elements realm to capture earth element. However, as Zhang Tie had not been able to do calculations on 5 abacuses at the same time adroitly, even though he could form the 5th hand of spiritual energy, he could not use all the 5 hands of spiritual energy to capture element crystals at the same time in the elements realm. Therefore, Zhang Tie wanted to master the skill of doing calculations on 5 abacuses at the same time during the period in Castle of Black Iron.

The most difficult part of mental arithmetic by abacus was to imagine 2 abacuses at the same time. As long as he passed that stage, with correct method and sufficient spiritual energy, he would make progress gradually. What he needed was constant training.

Besides practicing distraction, "mental arithmetic by abacus" could also enhance the spiritual energy of the cultivator. Therefore, this secret skill was worthwhile and would bring rich rewards to the cultivator. Even though Zhang Tie could not form his earth chakra, he was not worried about wasting time by practicing 'mental arithmetic by abacus'. As long as he mastered the "mental arithmetic by abacus", he could accelerate the speed of capturing elements in the elements realm. As the old Hua saying

went "When you want to chop woods, you'd better polish your knife". As it required a black iron knight at least 300 years to form the second chakra, Zhang Tie took the cultivation of 'mental arithmetic by abacus' as the second most effective means for him to form his earth chakra.

Through this journey, Zhang Tie advanced his senior rapid moving skill to super rapid moving skill; additionally, he further improved his 'mental arithmetic by abacus'. Therefore, even if he left the demon's area right now, Zhang would still feel to have a worthwhile trip.

However, Zhang Tie didn't want to leave out of here for the time being. He felt that he could kill 1 or 2 more knights of Three-eye Association by chance. However, Heller's words were reverberating in his mind. Zhang Tie became vigilant to demon's means. Zhang Tie had made the determination, 'As long as I find anything wrong, I will escape right away.'

After staying in Castle of Black Iron for 36 days and eating 5 leakless fruits, Zhang Tie could finally do calculations on 5 abacuses adroitly at the same time. Therefore, Zhang Tie decided to leave Castle of Black Iron.

It was already February 17th, the 896th year of Black Iron Calendar, half an hour after Zhang Tie left Huaiyuan Palace.

'When I raided Glivec City for the first time, demons and Three-eye Association's order was disrupted for 10 days. This time, over 1 month has passed since I killed a knight of Three-eye Association and raided the capital city of Highcloud Empire. It's time to have some fun with Three-eye Association and demons.'

Zhang Tie chose to leave Castle of Black Iron at night.

Before leaving, Zhang Tie had been used to check the situation outside through the marvelous arch door in his mind sea...

Standing in the palace of the palace tree, Zhang Tie closed his

eyes when the scene across the valley appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

The entire wild bear's cave had already become a huge, deep pit. The two wild bears' flesh and furs had scattered over the cave. At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie became stunned at once. It was completely out of his imagination.

'What happened?'

Zhang Tie continued to broaden his vision. After over 1 month, the valley where he hid in had changed its look completely—the two hills on both sides of the valley had almost been bulldozed. Those rocks in the valley had been shattered and moved away. The entire valley had been dug, exposing high-density huge pits on the ground like having been hit by meteors.

Of course, the huge pits were not caused by meteors. Zhang Tie knew they were caused by powerful battle qi of knights.

Facing such a fierce strike, no ant would survive in the valley, not to mention the two wild bears.

There were still many huge braisers in the valley. Tens of thousands of humans slaves were digging something forcefully facing the heavy wind and snow. They were leveling the two hills on both sides of the valley. In the periphery of these human laborers were the camp of over 70,000 demonized puppets. It felt that they were looking for something.

'In the barren wilderness, what are demons and Three-eye Association looking for? Needless to say, they are looking for me!'

Although there were other possibilities, Zhang Tie realized that knights of demons or Three-eye Association must have discovered that he was hiding in this valley.

Zhang Tie's heart pounded when he became vigilant. Zhang Tie had not imagined that demons could have such means to find him here. If he didn't have Castle of Black Iron and just hid here, he

must have become a corpse.

Zhang Tie opened his eyes in the palace of the palace tree with a shrew light in eyes. After that, he ran his spiritual energy and woke up that small, black beetle who was having a sound sleep in the cave on the cliff next to the Abyss of Chaos. The beetle moved its tentacles and climbed out of its cave right away. Closely after that, it flew towards the palace tree rapidly.

Only after over 10 seconds, the small, black beetle had flown by the gate of the palace tree and appeared in Zhang Tie's vision. Zhang Tie stretched his arms while the beetle landed on his palm.

Zhang Tie came to the platform under the small tree and sat down there with crossed legs. After applying a super hiding skill on the little thing, he incarnated into that little, black beetle.

After flying around his original body, which was sitting there with closed eyes, it left Castle of Black Iron and appeared in the deep pit where was once the cave of the two wild bears.

Zhang Tie flew at a low height. In the pitch-dark night, he was only about 3 cm away from the ground. After flying out of the deep pit, Zhang Tie saw two human slaves passing by that deep pit with a wheelbarrow which was filled with soil and rocks. He then hid still at the bottom of the wheelbarrow while concealing his qi.

Although Zhang Tie remained still, his consciousness was still active. He sensed two tracing tentacles right on the side of this valley, which was very close to him.

The tracing tentacles were attached to the weapons of two knights of Three-eye Association over 1 month ago in the major's mansion of Glivec City. They were still there now. The tracing tentacles released by senior tracing skill could be effective for 100 days independently and sensed in 1,000 miles. As knights didn't frequently change their weapons, they probably were the very two knights of Three-eye Association.

After that, Zhang Tie was sure that his trace had been exposed.

Zhang Tie then became more careful. He didn't fly around; instead, he just stayed at the bottom of that wheelbarrow and observed the surroundings.

As Zhang Tie didn't know how did the demons and Three-eye Association trace him, he had to respond to them carefully.

The two human slaves looked so miserable——four scrawny shanks, four heavily worn shoes which exposed the greater part of their feet. They pushed the wheelbarrow hardly while stepping into the muddy valley one step after another.

It was the coldest weather in the north; additionally, it was in the evening when it was below zero degrees in the wild. The partly melting snow was icy, causing chilblains and wounds of different sizes on the four feet. One of the slaves' feet had been swollen and turned into black green.

At the sight of that, Zhang Tie knew that the pair of feet would almost be paralyzed. Even if this person was moved in good conditions, he had to have his shanks amputated to survive himself.

It was out of many people's imaginations to see such a pair of feet walking on the ground in such a worse situation.

Zhang Tie could hear them faintly panting.

"Harvey...I...I cannot stick to it..." Given the source of the voice, it was from that guy whose feet had turned black green, "Wi...wish you live well...if possible...leave out of here...to the south..."

"Schuck, don't say that...we...we will survive...stick to a few more days...stick to a few more days..." Another one cried.

"No...my two legs...have become numb, not to mention my feet...I feel that my legs have turned into logs...additionally...I've just seen Beneya...she's pulling Tess's hand...Tess is cradling her furry toy, a small Barbie bear...they are waiting for me in front and



waving their hands to me..." The voice became weaker and weaker...

"Tomorrow...tomorrow it will be sunny...your feet will be..."

Before that one called Harvey finished his words, the two feet on his side had staggered while Schuck fell down...

"No..." As Harvey shouted, some demonized puppets had charged at Schuck and torn open his chest and body. At the sight of this, ten more demonized puppets rushed towards here...

Followed by terrifying chewing sounds...

With a sound "Pah..." the slave called Harvey was whipped while a man in leather boots walked towards him and scolded, "What are you looking for, keep working if you don't want to die. You might be that one tomorrow...you, the yellow-haired one, yes, you, come here, push the wheelbarrow together with him..." The man in leather boots pointed at a slave a few meters away. After receiving the order, that slave hurriedly paced up towards here.

With faint sobs, the wheelbarrow moved again...

Resting at the bottom of the wheelbarrow, Zhang Tie just watched that human slave to fall in front of him and became the food of demonized puppets...

That human slave just watched the bottom of the wheelbarrow until he was dead...

Zhang Tie felt that that man was looking at him silently. Zhang Tie's heart then became colder than snow.

...

After over 20 minutes, the soil and rocks on the wheelbarrow were finally dumped into a deserted place away from the valley after passing 3 checks...

It was snowing in great flakes once again...

Zhang Tie left the wheelbarrow and flew towards a tent in the far

in the dancing snowflakes.

# Chapter 786: Soul-chasing Butterfly

---

The tracing tentacles were right in the tent, which meant the two knights of Three-eye Association must be in the tent.

If Zhang Tie's hiding skill had not advanced to the super level, Zhang Tie would never dare to move closer to the two knights in the incarnation of a little, black beetle given the sharp perception of knight's consciousness.

Flying in the snowflakes, the beetle's qi became as light and white as snowflakes. He gradually moved closer to the tent.

There was a camp of over 10,000 soldiers outside the tent. A burning braiser was set outside the tent. When Zhang Tie got close to the tent, he saw two soldiers walking towards the tent with two food containers.

The two containers obscured the direction of the two people in front of them. Zhang Tie took advantage of this and rested on the bottom of a container and followed the two soldiers in the tent.

At the sight of two soldiers with food containers in hand, one bodyguard outside the tent stopped them.

"Stop, what are you doing here?"

"Two lords want to take some night snacks. There are two cooked snowcocks. We're told to send them here!" One of them answered.

The moment the bodyguard opened the food containers had the aroma of cooked chicken drifted out. Zhang Tie could almost hear the bodyguard silently swallowing his saliva.

"Alright!" The bodyguard opened the curtain of the tent and let the two soldiers in.

They then entered the tent.

When the second soldier entered the tent, Zhang Tie who rested on the bottom of his container lightly "flew" onto the bottom of an

armrack like a snowflake. In the first soldier's shadow, he was not noticed by anybody.

Compared to that of outside, it was brightly-lit inside the tent. Besides, there was an aroma of liquor and meat.

After staying in the tent for over 10 seconds, the two soldiers hurriedly left.

...

"Hmm, I've not imagined that the snowcocks here taste so good!"

A sound drifted from 20 m away from Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie exposed his little head from the bottom of the armrack and looked around the tent.

Two knights were drinking and eating at a table opposite to Zhang Tie.

They were the very two knights of Three-eye Association that Zhang Tie had met in Glivec City before. One of them used a sword, the other used a saber. Their weapons were put beside the table, where they could reach easily.

"How many more days will we stay here?" A knight tore apart a snowcock's leg and gnawed it while saying, "We've already stayed here for over 1 month. Sethi, do you think that the demon general has made a mistake?"

"Cologne, demon general could make a mistake; however the soul-chasing butterfly of demon general won't make any mistake. That black-robe knight must have been here after killing Unther!" The other one replied.

"If so, why we've not found him for so many days?"

"There are three possibilities. First, that guy is still here, but with the protection of a secret method; therefore, we couldn't find him yet. This is why we're here. Second, that guy has been killed by someone in a split second here and left no remains at all.

Therefore, the soul-chasing butterfly failed to find him. However, this possibility is very low. Third, that guy might have cultivated a weird spiritual, secret method. He used a small piece of his soul to attract the soul-chasing butterfly to this place; however, he has already escaped in another direction!"

Cologne shook his head, "During the past one month, our Three-eye Association's intelligence system have already excluded all the knights across Blackson Humans Corridor. Obviously, that guy doesn't belong to any human country in Blackson Humans Corridor. I really wonder where does that black-robe guy come from?"

"Only in such a chaotic world could such knights who wander across all the Sub-continent like wild wolves and vultures only for cultivating resources be nerve-wracking. Afraid of being wanted by the Mountain of Brightness, these knights dare not find trouble in humans' territory. Therefore, they could only find trouble in our territory. In each holy war, such guys were very tricky. Being influenced by this guy, demon general has to suspend the plan of the south. He has to spend his efforts to kill this guy. Demon general doubts that this guy is still within our territory, therefore, he is using his soul-chasing butterfly to find the trace of that guy. As long as that guy is less than 300 miles away from the soul-chasing butterfly, his location could definitely be locked by the soul-chasing butterfly once again. Even if he masters some soul-based secret skill and dropped a bit of soul as the bait every time, he could only stand a few times."

"Pitifully, that soul-chasing butterfly could only last for 60 days since it was hatched!"

"Therefore, the Class-II warning in the territory might last another one month. Unless we can catch that guy in this period, the red warning won't be canceled off!"

"Due to that guy, many plans have been disrupted..."

"That guy is really powerful. He has definitely lit over 100 scales. He killed Unther in less than half an hour!"

"Therefore, this Class II warning was very necessary. Any knight, when meeting that guy, might lose his life!"

...

Through their talk, Zhang Tie learned many key information right away.

Zhang Tie finally understood how his location was locked by demons and Three-eye Association. 'The soul-chasing butterfly must be an odd living being. It seems to be able to sense and perceive certain people's qi within 300 miles. That's powerful!' Zhang Tie was a bit scared when he realized that the demon general chased after him using a soul-chasing butterfly. 'Although it's very cool to go deep into the enemy's rear which may bring a great achievement, it's also very risky.'

'Besides soul-chasing butterfly, demons and Three-eye Association have another method to deal with me. They triggered the Class II warning across their territory. After that, all the knights of demons and Three-eye Association across their territory started to combine with each other, 2 in a unit in case of risks in independent action. Therefore, I also lost my chance to attack them one after another.'

...

After being full, the two knights in the tent decided to take a round in the valley.

After they left the tent, the little beetle instantly slid out of the tent and entered Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie in the palace of the palace tree opened his eyes right away.

'Soul-chasing butterfly?'

'This soul-chasing butterfly really poses a great threat to me.' Zhang Tie didn't know whether this thing could sense the existence of his incarnation. He wanted to learn about this living being first.

Zhang Tie took out his knight's plate and entered the Mountain of Brightness at once.

Whenever Zhang Tie used his remote-sensing crystal and knight's plate in Castle of Black Iron, the marvelous arch door in Zhang Tie's mind sea would send a special energy to cover Zhang Tie's communication tools. Only in this case could the remote-sensing crystal and knight's plate be used to contact the outside world. In Heller's words, only Zhang Tie could contact the outside world in Castle of Black Iron.

Mountain of Brightness was inclusive, which could not be touched by commoners. Zhang Tie believed that he could find an introduction about soul-chasing butterfly in the Mountain of Brightness.

——Chakra's tiger, welcome to Mountain of Brightness.

A line appeared in Zhang Tie's mind sea.

After entering the Mountain of Brightness, Zhang Tie felt like entering a web forum that humans established by scientific means before the Catastrophe. The Mountain of Brightness even contained retrieval service.

After inputting soul-chasing butterfly in the retrieval box by his spiritual energy, Zhang Tie clicked "enter" by his spiritual energy.

A dialogue box then appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

——This retrieval service fee is 1,000 gold coins. You've got 100,000 gold coins left in your account, will you continue?

——Yes——No

'1,000 gold coins? It would cost my dad's 90 years of salary in

Blackhot City. That's too expensive.'

'However, that's the value of information, especially when this information is involved with my life, it's not expensive.'

After swearing inside, Zhang Tie clicked "Yes" without any hesitation.

After a few seconds, many titles about purchasing or eggs of soul-chasing butterflies appeared. Each egg of soul-chasing butterfly was worth about 1 million to 1.5 million gold coins.

Some posts were about organizing teams so as to hunt for soul-chasing butterflies in the abyss of the earth-element realm sent by some knights.

A few messages were paid to read at a high price which ranged from tens of thousands of gold coins to hundreds of thousands of gold coins. They were about how to extend the service life of soul-chasing butterflies by 3-5 days using medicine.

When Zhang Tie noticed a title "Soul-chasing butterfly and the extermination of the Great Wilderness Sect in Taixia Country", he quivered all over...

...



# Chapter 787: Being Firm

---

The article "Soul-chasing butterfly and the extermination of the Great Wilderness Sect in Taixia Country" was free to read. The author of the article was anonymous. It took Zhang Tie over 10 minutes to read that article three times carefully. After that, he started to consider about it.

Soul-chasing butterfly was an exotic species in the abyss of the underground world. It had very special property——after a knight gained its egg, the knight would have a telepathy with the soul-chasing butterfly after it hatched as long as he fed it with a bit of his own blood. With the help of the soul-chasing butterfly, the knight would be able to find or lock anyone.

A person would leave his odor in a certain territory or space. Gundogs and military dogs might easily identify a person's odor and find the owner through his odors. In addition to such an odor, there was another invisible odor, which came from one's inner properties. It was released from one's spiritual energy or soul. Soul-chasing butterfly's strength was that it could sniff such an invisible "odor" like gundogs and find its owner through this special "odor".

Through many studies, as long as one had stayed in one place, his "soul's odor" would remain there for 72 hours after he left there. After putting one soul-chasing butterfly in that place where the man had stayed, the soul-chasing butterfly would be able to precisely identify that one's "soul's odor". After that, it would be able to sense that one's location within 300 miles.

Zhang Tie remembered two key data about soul-chasing butterfly——3 days and 300 miles.

Of course, the two data would variate slightly due to physical differences between different soul-chasing butterflies. For instance, some soul-chasing butterfly would be able to sense their

targets within 310 miles while some could only sense their targets within 290 miles; some soul-chasing butterflies could still precisely identify the person's "soul's odor" after the person left the place for 74 hours; some could not precisely identify the person's "soul's odor" after the person left the place for 65 hours.

According to the presumption of Northmountain Cloud in the article "Soul-chasing butterfly and the extermination of the Great Wilderness Sect in Taixia Country", there were two reasons about the relevance between soul-chasing butterfly and the extermination of the Great Wilderness Sect in Taixia Country": First, it was said that an elder of the Great Wilderness Sect deepened into the underground abyss and controlled a mutated soul-chasing butterfly by soul-based animal controlling skill. Compared to common soul-chasing butterflies, the mutated soul-chasing butterfly not only had a longer service life but also had a terrifying ability in chasing souls, which was 20 times better than common ones. After getting that special soul-chasing butterfly, that elder of the Great Wilderness Sect cooperated with some people and did some major events by that mutated soul-chasing butterfly. He became famous at once. However, due to the "major events", he enraged some powerful forces in Taixia Country. Finally, those forces joined hands with each other and exterminated the Great Wilderness Sect.

Second, although soul-chasing butterfly could identify everyone's soul's odor, it could do nothing to the soul-based animal-controlling skill of the Great Wilderness Sect. The soul-chasing butterfly could not identify and lock the souls of humans on animals. In the second holy war, the members of the Great Wilderness Sect adopted the soul-based animal-controlling skill to deepen into the demons' territory so as to seek for key intelligence and destroy many actions of demons. Due to this reason, demons and Three-eye Association cleared the Great Wilderness Sect from both inside and outside.

To be honest, this article was very gossipy. Some details were obscure. However, it was useful to Zhang Tie more or less as Zhang Tie learned two information about soul-chasing butterfly—How's the ability of soul-chasing butterfly? Whether he would be found by the soul-chasing butterfly in the state of soul-based animal controlling state or not?

Zhang Tie wondered what he would do if the demon general had more than one egg of soul-chasing butterfly. 'Unless I hide myself in Castle of Black Iron for 60 days after each action, I probably will be besieged by demon general and the other knights. Today, the demon general has 1 soul-chasing butterfly to chase after me, who knows whether he will send 3-5 soul-chasing butterflies to chase after me in the future? As long as he sends over 3 soul-chasing butterflies to chase after me, each of 3 groups of knights could extend their search range to 1,800 miles with one soul-chasing butterfly. In that case, the 3 groups of knights only need to fly towards the north in a line. The moment any group of them found me, they would instantly lock me. I would face tens even hundreds of times more risks by then.'

'Even though I could turn into an incarnation or directly hide in Castle of Black Iron at the critical moment, I would suffer by exposing my secrets. The moment those secrets were exposed, I would have endless troubles.'

'Nothing is free. Emperors will risk their life in common restaurants; handsome boys will lose their semen fluid in brothels; even I will risk exposing my secrets while deepening into the enemy's rear even though I have Castle of Black Iron.'

Zhang Tie considered to leave out of here. He wanted to stop this action. 'To be honest, I've already made a great military exploit—I almost destroyed two cities of demons and Three-eye Association, killing over 10 precious grave tower demons and one knight. Besides, I disrupted the plan of demons and Three-eye Association. With such a glorious achievement, it's reasonable for me to leave

even if I face dangers.'

However, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled the pair of swollen and matted feet and how the owner of that pair of feet was shared by the demonized puppets on the snow land.

'What should I do at this moment so as to make my parents proud and relieved?'

Zhang Tie would always ask the same question whenever he met the situation where he could hardly make a choice...

After being tortured by this question for many times, Zhang Tie's eyes gradually became firm...

# Chapter 788: A Protracted Guerrilla

---

Three days later, at dusk, in the Knights' tent outside the valley...

"Elder Cologne, here are this month's earth-element crystals..." a 50-year old man in a brilliant silk robe took out a crate and opened it in front of Cologne. There were 3 golden earth-element crystals in the crate. "As the Class II warning has not been canceled off, these crystals arrived here a bit late, sorry for that!"

"Is everything okay with Bayon Kingdom?" The knight Cologne put away the crate as he asked.

"Everything is okay. Several days ago, the demon general traveled to Bayon Kingdom and didn't find nothing abnormal!" That 50-year old man replied respectfully.

"Hmm, please tell the head, Adam, to be more vigilant these days. When the Class II warning is canceled off, I will return to Salent City!"

"Yes, sir, thanks for your warning!"

Elder Cologne waved his hands. The 50-year old guy then moved backward and left the tent.

After seeing off that guy, Cologne rubbed the 3 earth-element crystals in his hands as he told Sessie with a smile, "Thank God, my February's earth-element crystals finally arrived. I will not waste time in the next few days. When will your earth-element crystals arrive?"

"Hoho, I've already received the February's earth-element crystals before I came here!" Knight Sessie smiled, "You can cultivate here, I will take a look outside for a while!"

"Okay!"

Sessie then left the tent. With two earth-element crystals in the left hand, one in the right hand, Cologne started to cultivate with

closed eyes. The tent was gradually filled with knight's enshrouding battle qi...

After Sessie left, a little, black beetle threw a glance at Cologne before flying away from the bottom of the arm-rack to the outside of the tent through a tunnel that he had just dug these days.

As a knight, Cologne could maintain a powerful perceptive and protective ability even if he was cultivating in elements realm. The enshrouding battle qi over this tent was equal to his tentacles and armor. Anyone appeared in the tent would be sensed by him. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't think this was a good chance to launch an attack on him.

However, Zhang Tie didn't waste time in the tent in the past three days as the one whom he was waiting for arrived just now.

The exit of the tunnel dug by the little, black beetle was right below a rock over 5 m away from the tent. After leaving the tent silently, the beetle appeared below that rock. After throwing a glance at Knight Sessie above the valley, the beetle set off too and flew towards a medium-sized airship which had landed in the far.

That man in a brilliant silk robe put on a bear-hide coat after leaving the tent. He directly strode towards that airship. After shaking off the snowflakes from his coat, he looked up at the cloudy sky before boarding the airship.

"Go back to Salent City!"

The man whose voice was humble in the tent became imposing at this moment.

The crew of the airship became busy right away. After 2 minutes, the airship set off towards Salent City.

Nobody found that one more person had boarded this airship.

Zhang Tie had determined his mind to have a fierce protracted guerrilla with demons and Three-eye Association in the demon's area across the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. As long as he

was in the demon's zone, he would not let demons and Three-eye Association live well.

'As long as I could restrict the most part of forces of demons and Three-eye Association within the north of Blackson Humans Corridor, it'd be equal to saving numerous humans' lives.' Zhang Tie knew that what he chose would make his parents proud of him.

'It's just a soul-chasing butterfly. I don't think that I would be defeated by a butterfly. From today on, after doing each killing spree, this father will stay in Castle of Black Iron or wander in the outside in my incarnation for 2 months. Until the soul-chasing butterfly dies will I come out of Castle of Black Iron and do another killing spree. Even if the demon general has 10,000 soul-chasing butterflies, he's destined to eat my sh\*t behind me. Although I was unable to defeat the demon general by force, as long as I don't collide with it, it would be useless.'

Zhang Tie didn't believe that the Class II warning across the demon's zone would not be canceled off.

By adopting this tactic, the only cost of Zhang Tie was 2 months' lifespan of soul-chasing butterflies, during which period, he could not cultivate to form his chakra in Castle of Black Iron or in the state of incarnation.

After promoting to a knight, the priority of Zhang Tie was to form his chakra. Therefore, Zhang Tie's next step was mainly targeting at earth-element crystals of Three-eye Association.

Those Three-eye Association clans with employed knights would provide some earth-element crystals to their employed knights per month. The earth-element crystals could not be gained from earth-element realm whenever they wanted; therefore, those clans must have some storage of earth-element crystals in confidential places.

Zhang Tie's next target was Lukas Clan in Bayon Kingdom.

Zhang Tie had enough time to discover the stored earth-element crystals of Lukas Clan. When he discovered them, Lukas Clan had to exterminate.

...

When the airship set off at dusk. After flying for less than 2 hours, it became completely dark. Besides the crew, all the guards and that 50-year old deacon of Lukas Clan who brought the 3 earth-element crystals to Cologne in Highcloud Empire went to bed after having some food.

At midnight, that airship was still flying in the heavy snow and the chilly, wuthering wind. By contrast, the berth cabin of that deacon of Lukas Clan was pretty warm. It was the only room connected to the boiler engine room of the airship.

The blinds of the window were pulled down, the crystal fluorescent lamp was shaded. As a result, the entire berth cabin was pitch-dark, except for the faint sounds caused by the friction between the chains and the gears that drifted from the boiler engine room.

Zhang Tie appeared in the deacon's berth cabin silently while his eyes radiated a weird light. After touching the head of the deacon who had fallen asleep, Zhang Tie disappeared at once. It took him less than 0.5 second to finish this action...

That deacon turned over on the bed and had good dreams one after another...

On the second day, when he got up, he found a little, black beetle lying on his stomach on the table. All in a sudden, the deacon who always hated insects, felt happy inside. He felt that little beetle was very cute. Coincidentally, he was thinking about feeding a special pet food so as to relieve his mood when he was free. This little beetle looked proper.

After putting on his clothes, that deacon carefully took that little,



black beetle and put it in his sleeve. After finding that the insect just stayed in his sleeve, he burst out into laughter at once as he felt this little beetle was destined to be his pet...

'I have to keep this as a secret. If someone else finds out that I have a pet in my sleeve, those members of Lukas Clan may not feel that I'm reliable. In that case, I will end up losing my bright future.' The Deacon thought.

...

Two days later, this medium-sized airship finally arrived at Salent City, the capital city of Bayon Kingdom after accomplished its task.

Being close to Golan Empire and one of the earliest countries that were collapsed by demons in Blackson Humans Corridor, Bayon Kingdom was severely managed by demons, especially its capital city, Salent City.

Right outside Salent City, over 30 grave tower demons were standing, the number of which was larger than that in any place that Zhang Tie had ever seen.

Only less than 2 million of the former 6 million people survived in this city, which was once prosperous. All the remaining people had been converted into demonized puppets, who had surged towards the south 1 month ago.

Therefore, Salent City looked a bit deserted at this moment.

...

After getting off the airship, Prudden, the very deacon of Lukas Clan became spirited and hurriedly headed for the imperial palace.

In the car, Prudden watched the streets which looked emptier after the snow. He then touched the inside of his sleeve and found that cute, little, black beetle was still there. Therefore, he became happy at once.

After passing some checks, Prudden finally met Adam, the head of Lukas Clan and the king of Bayon Kingdom in a warm room with fresh flowers.

After reporting to the head, Prudden left the imperial palace.

Before he left the imperial palace, he touched the inside of his sleeve and found that little, black beetle had disappeared.

'Perhaps, that little thing went for food. It might come back soon!' Prudden thought...

...

Two days later, when Prudden came to the imperial palace once again, he saw the little, black beetle entering his sleeve directly.

Prudden was deeply moved...

# Chapter 789: Will You Continue Your Dig?

---

The Class II warning in the demon's zone was not canceled off until March 12th. After almost 2 months of extensive search, even though the demon general himself attended the investigation and the soul-chasing butterfly died, they still failed to find that black-robe knight. Thus, the demons thought that the black-robe knight had already escaped far away by a secret method after killing Unther.

Cologne, the employed knight of Lukas Clan also returned to Salent City, the capital city of Bayon Kingdom on March 13th.

In March, the chilly winter had finally come to an end while the spring approached, which was featured by tender sprouts and grasses and melting ice. It was believed that the weird black-robe knight had already left together with winter. After over 2 months of search, it seemed to be the last small frustration facing demons and Three-eye Association before they completely conquered the north of Blackson Humans Corridor.

All the Three-eye Association clans understood that demon general had fixed the 896th year of Black Iron Calendar as the year when demons and Three-eye Association would completely conquer the north of Blackson Humans Corridor.

'Lord Demon General is ambitious. Although Lord Demon General's super demon corps faced a setback in the War of Upton City last year, it didn't damage the foundation of the entire demon corps. In front of the power of Three-eye Association, that was just a small failure in the entire holy war.'

All the Three-eye Association clans were dreaming for the moment when they completely conquered the north of Blackson Humans Corridor, including Lukas Clan.

Those humans and wealth which had not evacuated and transferred away from human countries in the north of Blackson

Humans Corridor would soon become the population and wealth of Three-eye Association clans. Therefore, the Three-eye Association clans across Blackson Humans Corridor would soon have an expansion for the second time.

On the evening of March 15th, namely, the 3rd day since Cologne came back, the king held a banquet to welcome the harvest in the coming spring in the harvest palace of the imperial palace. All the major members of Lukas Clan and advanced officials of Bayon Kingdom were invited to join the spring banquet.

Spring banquet was the tradition of Bayon Kingdom. It would be held in the harvest palace of the imperial palace for the coming harvest in each year. Due to that boring black-robe knight, this year's spring banquet was delayed for over 10 days. However, nobody would like to mention about it tonight.

Soon after the banquet started, the atmosphere gradually upsurged. Those members of Lukas Clan and the advanced officials of Bayon Kingdom, who had been depressed for over 2 months, cheered up with big smiles.

Adam, the head of Lukas Clan, who had usurped the throne as a health minister, was sitting high on the throne of the harvest palace and watching the boisterous scene in the palace with a big smile.

Nobody across Bayon Kingdom could have imagined that the health minister of this country belonged to Three-eye Association before the holy war. Right under the push of this former health minister, the entire medicare system of Bayon Kingdom deteriorated into the agency for the growth of the eggs of the parent worm and the entire Bayon Kingdom was collapsed at the fastest speed when the demon corps arrived. Even the former royal members of Bayon Kingdom had turned into demonized puppets.

"Prudden..."

The one on the throne opened his mouth as he implied Prudden

with his eyes. Prudden who was serving in the palace instantly became spirited as he hurriedly cupped a tray being covered by a piece of red silk cloth and walked to the front of Cologne. He then slightly put the tray in front of Cologne.

After hearing the king's voice, all the others in the harvest palace became silent as they looked at Cologne.

"Elder Cologne, thank you for your hard work during the past 1 month, with Elder Cologne in Salent City, we feel much reassured. When we occupy the entire Blackson Humans Corridor, if Lukas Clan promoted to a higher stage, we will never forget about the great contribution made by Elder Cologne!" Adam said in an elegant, majestic tone just like a king.

After throwing a look at the tray, Cologne instantly knew that there were 4 earth-element crystals in the tray given the raised outline of the red silk cloth. It was one more than that in previous months, which meant that his treatment had increased by 33% at once. Elder Cologne became excited immediately as he got up and faintly bowed towards Adam. After that, he looked around and raised his jaw before saying firmly, "Trust me, Your Majesty, as long as I am here, nobody will dare to hurt Lukas Clan!"

After hearing this reply, the man on the throne nodded satisfactorily. After that, he slightly raised his glass, followed by all the others in the palace. They all proposed a toast to Elder Cologne at the same time, making the atmosphere boisterous once again...

At this moment, Prudden put his hand into that sleeve once again; however, he found that little, black beetle had disappeared once again...

Prudden then mumbled inside, 'Maybe that little thing went to eat something again!'

...

"Puff"...

With a faintly muffled sound, the dare-to-die corps member's head was shattered completely like falling onto the ground from above 20 floors, spraying the bloody brains onto the alloy wall and those operating arms beside that guy.

Zhang Tie hadn't imagined that Lukas Clan's backroom was so confidential until he came here.

The backroom was not in the imperial palace of Bayon Kingdom but in the underground of a common castle outside the imperial palace of Bayon Kingdom.

Who could imagine that Lukas Clan would put the most important objects in here; instead of the secret warehouse in the imperial palace.

This backroom was 100 m deep under the castle. People could only access to it by one tunnel. The walls were made of alloy which was as thick as 2 m. If a person inside the backroom locked the alloy door from the inside, even a knight could barely break it in from the outside.

People could only open this door by a key, code and facial recognition system...

The facial recognition system here was not the same one before the Catastrophe; instead, it was a more time-honored, more advanced and safer facial recognition system—A dare-to-death corps member of Lukas Clan who was controlled by a special medicine was in the room. When the key and code were right, this guy would check the look of the person outside the room through an imaging device like a periscope. If that person outside the door was Adam alone, this guy would manipulate the hydraulic device in the room to open the door.

As Zhang Tie knew that Lukas Clan would hold a spring banquet today, he came here with Adam, the head of Lukas Clan in the incarnation of the little, black beetle ahead of the spring banquet.

As Adam was just LV 9, he couldn't find Zhang Tie even though Zhang Tie was on the tail of his robe.

After Adam took 4 earth-element crystals and left out of here half an hour ago, Zhang Tie showed himself in the room and killed that dare-to-death corps member of Lukas Clan in a split second.

Looking at this backroom, Zhang Tie took a deep breath as he felt that his patience and efforts over the past over 1 month were worthwhile.

Zhang Tie dared say that he knew the secrets of Lukas Clan better than anyone else.

With the incarnation of a beetle and the power of the secret skill "soul capture skill", Zhang Tie, who had traveled between the deacon of Lukas Clan and many major clan members of Lukas Clan in the imperial palace these days, finally completed his "anatomy" of Lukas Clan.

'Although it is cool to chop off their heads, if I want to uproot a Three-eye Association clan and shake the ruling of demons in the demon's zone, I have to collect detailed intelligence and information. Otherwise, even being a knight, I could barely destroy a Three-eye Association clan and demons.'

Zhang Tie let out a sigh.

He would launch the fatal strike today.

He knew that he had made the right plan.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt like falling into the barn as a hungry mouse.

Over 200 earth-element crystals were piled up tidily in the backroom. Of course, Lukas Clan was not the owner of these earth-element crystals. Zhang Tie estimated that these items might be used by demons to bribe Lukas Clan. Of course, they might be the previous stockpile of Bayon Kingdom.

'I don't care whom these objects belonged to. The key is that they belong to me now.'

Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva before walking over there. After waving his hand, he moved all the earth-element crystals into Castle of Black Iron.

Besides earth-element crystals, this backroom contained some crates and boxes.

Zhang Tie opened a box and found a pile of gold checks lying inside tidily. He then opened some crates and found jewelry, sorts of medicament and other precious items inside.

Those items lying here should not be common. Therefore, Zhang Tie moved all of them into Castle of Black Iron.

Additionally, Zhang Tie found 9 huge boxes in the backroom, each of them was as high as 0.8-0.9 m. Zhang Tie opened the boxes and found huge ostrich eggs with spiral, black and white decorative patterns on their smooth surface.

Zhang Tie seemed to have seen such objects before.

Heart racing, Zhang Tie injected some spiritual energy into one black and white ostrich egg.

——High-performance alchemist's bomb, TNT equivalent, 1000 kg.

——This bomb could be detonated in two modes. It supports time and collision detonation!

Followed by the usage of an alchemist's bomb...

'Alchemist's bomb? These are alchemist's bombs...'

Zhang Tie's eyes gleamed at once...

...

After 10 minutes, Zhang Tie came to the gate of the harvest palace of Bayon Kingdom.



Before the two rows of guards outside the gate of the harvest palace asked who this guy in black robe was, Zhang Tie had chopped off all of their heads by waving his hand...

Cologne instantly raised his head and threw a glance at the gate.

With a weird laughter, Zhang Tie rushed into the harvest palace as fast as a lightning bolt. Closely after that, the entire harvest palace was filled with dense roars and cracks of limbs...

In less than 1 minutes, the harvest palace had collapsed while two meteors shot to the sky from the ruins and started a fierce combat above the imperial palace. The entire city was shocked.

After over 20 minutes, with a miserable shriek of Cologne, his one arm was broken off by Zhang Tie.

In a split second, Cologne turned into a bloody rain.

After catching all the valuables of Cologne in the air, Zhang Tie rapidly flew away from the city.

Those grave tower demons couldn't even stand 5 minutes under Zhang Tie's fierce attack.

After turning those terrifying grave tower demons into smelly flesh, Zhang Tie disappeared in the night sky as a meteor...

...

After 1 hour, many meteors landed in Salent City while the entire Salent City reverberated with an extremely, terrifying roar.

Closely after that roar, a fiery figure rushed to the sky and accelerated towards where Zhang Tie headed for, hurriedly followed by all the other meteors...

The soul-chasing butterfly loomed in the sky ahead of them. When the soul-chasing butterfly stopped, a broken valley, which they had excavated severely, appeared in front of all the knights of Three-eye Association and demons...

This was where Zhang Tie left from, also the very valley that

demon general's soul-chasing butterfly had reached last time.

Demon general became dumbfounded like having being stricken by a lightning bolt.

All the other knights who followed demon general here dared not see the extremely furious look of demon general...

'The same valley!'

Zhang Tie heavily slapped the demon general's face as if he was asking in a frivolous look——will you continue your dig?

# Chapter 790: A Nightmare

---

On June 4th, the 898th year of Black Iron Calendar, in the demon's camp outside Tokei City, the capital city of Titanic Duchy...

It had been two and a half years since Zhang Tie left Huaiyuan Prefecture in the excuse of enclosed cultivation. During this period, the grasses and woods had withered twice. After each winter, the grasses and woods would recover vitality once again. However, for demons and Three-eye Association clans in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor, the demon's zone kept "withering" instead of recovering "vitality".

Since January 1st, the 896th year of Black Iron Calendar, the entire demon's zone in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor had been in a nightmare.

Neither demons nor Three-eye Association clans would like to face a such a nightmare—the most painful nightmare caused by a human knight called Gorath.

During the two and a half years, over 80% of grave tower demons were destroyed in the demon's zone. 7 of the 18 Three-eye Association clans in the demon's zone were cleared, while all the other 11 were severely struck. Numerous elites and bloodlines of Three-eye Association clans were killed by that human knight.

One demon knight and 3 knights of Three-eye Association clans were killed. Across the entire demon's zone, everybody was in a great danger. Even the demon general's super demon corps became that human knight's target 1 year ago. When the demon general and its subordinate knights were seeking for that human knight, that Gorath appeared in the super demon corps and made a killing spree, making them suffer the second major frustration since the Upton Battle. Almost the entire wing demon troop of the super demon corps was cleared by that human knight.

That loss was regarded as the extreme shame by the demon general.

For commoners, all the members of Three-eye Association were as terrifying as demons; however, for those members of Three-eye Association, that guy called Gorath, was the real demon.

Nobody could catch that devil's trace. However, that devil always jumped out of the dark hell and brought them a terrifying destruction and massacre before disappearing.

During the past two and a half years, many things were changed.

Except for the demon general, no other knights dared move alone across the entire demon's zone. The Three-eye Association clans which were bossy in the demon's zone also dared not show themselves in the public like a bird being startled by the mere twang of a bow-string. All the Three-eye Association clans had canceled off the large-scale party of clan members. Their clan members scattered around the demon's zone.

...

The demon general was standing in the main tent of the camp of the demon corps and watching one map and a drawing while his grim qi filled the tent like an icy, black cloud.

The map was the military map of Blackson Humans Corridor. In the demon's zone, dozens of cities were covered with black crosses, which meant that they had been severely destroyed during the past two and a half years. Starting from Glivec City, he moved to the capital city of Highcloud Empire, then Salent City, the capital city of Bayon Kingdom, then the Trisi City of Golan Empire, Malkalden City, Esener City, Democracy City, Delfo City, Eshwigen City, Milson City, Direnburg, Marmedi...

The black crosses covered the entire north of Blackson Humans Corridor. Some cities were even crossed twice, which meant they suffered two raids from that guy consecutively. Democracy City,

the capital city of Verov Federation was attacked 3 times by Gorath. Although Arthur Clan, the ruling clan in Democracy City was not exterminated, it had been severely uprooted.

It seemed that Gorath was warning them to not think that he would not come here for the second time, even the third time in such an ironical method.

At the beginning, many people were studying Gorath's movement rules; however, they finally found that that guy's movement didn't have any rule at all. All the bases and key towns of Three-eye Association clans across the demon's zone were his knacker's yards.

Next to this military map was a drawing of Gorath, which was drawn according to the memory of those who had seen Gorath. With a black robe, raised insidious hooknose, weird flickering eyes, flying silver hair and ghost-like claws, the drawing was especially vivid.

A year ago, Gorath's drawing was fixed in the main tent of the demon general and had not been removed until now.

Watching the figure in the drawing, the demon general seemed wanting to devour this guy.

For others, Gorath was a demon; however, for the demon general, this guy was a ghost.

Demon general was not afraid of demons, because it was the prototype of a demon in human legends. As this ghost always stayed near the demon general and paid attention to its movements in the hidden place, the demon general tasted the real failure.

Over the past two and a half years, the demon area became completely chaotic. As the rear was unstable, the ruling foundation of demons and Three-eye Association was shaken by Gorath. In this state, the demon corps's movement towards the south became

stagnated. Benefited from this, those human countries in the north of Kalay Mountain Range had a chance to move their population and materials to the south of Kalay Mountain Range during the past two and a half years. By now, humans had built a new defense line in Kalay Mountain Range. Across the north of Kalay Mountain Range, except for those increasingly active human paladins and demon hunting squads, demons and Three-eye Association were only left with destroyed empty cities and wild land. Additionally, thieves and brigands existed everywhere. Therefore, demons' strategic plan—to occupy the north of Blackson Humans Corridor and plunder a lot of humans and materials in the shortest period failed.

Over the past two and a half years, the demon's power in the demon area was not intensified; instead, it was weakened. Whenever that human knight attacked a city, he would uproot the forces of demons and Three-eye Association in that city. After his attack, those human slaves in the city would escape or arouse a riot, which was barely handled by demons and Three-eye Association clans.

In order to catch this guy, demons and Three-eye Association had tried every method that they could come up with such as setting traps and bribery at a high price in the public, etc.. They even hatched 7 soul-chasing butterflies and made them chase after Zhang Tie at the same time; however, they gained nothing. That guy was never taken in. He kept stabbing into the soft underbelly of demons and Three-eye Association, causing a great loss to demons and Three-eye Association physically and spiritually.

'That guy succeeded. Black-robe Gorath's name is well known across Blackson Humans Corridor. However, I became the poor foil of this guy.' The demon general sighed.

Watching the image of Gorath, the demon general became confused, 'Although this guy's image is hanging in front of me, I'm doubting whether this guy really exists or not.'

——Being proficient in the secret skills of Sacred Light Empire; being able to use some powerful battle skills and saber skills; being able to exterminate a Three-eye Association clan with poison in a split second; having rich experience in close combat; being brutal, cunning, witty, selfish and powerful; additionally, he mastered a secret skill which could help him get rid of the chase of soul-chasing butterfly; probably carrying an expensive, rare teleportation equipment.

The above information was all about Gorath that had been gathered over the past two and a half years. In order to find this guy's origin, demons had mobilized all the forces of Three-eye Association in humans; however, they still got no useful information. Among all the human knights, none of them could fit the traits of Gorath. This guy was like coming from the underground all of a sudden.

Generally, human knights could be divided into two camps, namely, human camp and Three-eye Association camp. According to the division method of humans, the two camps were hostile, one in public, one in dark. Besides, there was the 3rd knights camp, which was called evil or grey light knights. These knights were featured by always being alone. They cultivated and moved alone. They didn't join the party of Three-eye Association at the price of betraying humans or the human force even the Mountain of Brightness; instead, they chose a mediocre way which was free of restrictions. They had no bottom line in actions. They did everything for themselves. They were extremely selfish and dangerous.

According to the investigation of Three-eye Association, Gorath probably was a grey light knight who had been cultivating secretly in somewhere.

The demon general's dubious look gradually faded away; instead, a firm and berserk look appeared.

'I can't keep going like this. If I cannot have Blackson Humans

Corridor, I will destroy it completely. I won't let humans recover their vitality; neither would the entire demon corps and Three-eye Association across Blackson Humans Corridor be mired in the trap set by a human knight, no matter whether he was righteous or evil...'

After watching the map and the drawing for half an hour, the demon general looked icier. Finally, he clenched his fist, filling the main tent with a berserk, decisive atmosphere.

A close guard entered the main tent meticulously and reported the latest message to the demon general.

"Lord Demon General, we've just received the intelligence. Two hours ago, Gorath raided Moorne City of Golan Empire. Timothy clan suffered a great loss in Moorne City. The second in line heir of the clan was killed. Besides, the grave tower demons outside Moorne City were destroyed by Gorath..."

This was not a good news. Therefore, that close guard was very meticulous when he reported it to the demon general. Although being intense, he tried to remain silent. Over the past two and a half years, the demon general was always berserk. As the close guards of demon general, they always risked their own lives to report any news about Gorath. Three months ago, a close guard was punched into powder when he reported the news about Gorath to demon general.

After reporting it, the close guard thought Lord Demon General would be angry. However, he had not imagined that Lord Demon General just replied calmly, "I know!" like having heard a trivial information.

The close guard dared not leave. He just stayed there, lowering his head, he waited for the order of Lord Demon General.

"Notice the heads of all the Three-eye Association clans and the directors of all the demonized puppets corps. Tell them to come to Tokei City 3 days later. I have an order to issue!"



"Yes, sir!"

Although the close guard became dubious inside, he just left silently.

After the close guard left, the demon general burned the military map and the drawing of Gorath into ashes...

...

Three days later, although the aftermath of Moorne City had not come to an end, the heads of all the Three-eye Association clans and directors of demonized puppets corps still arrived at Tokei City accompanied by a lot of clan powerhouses, including knights.

Compared to three years ago, none of them could imagine that they would not go out without having at least 2 knights on their side in the demon's area.

Compared to the boisterous scene in the main tent of the demon general, only small representatives of Three-eye Association clans could arrive here this time.

Watching the current situation, all the heads of Three-eye Association clans felt a bit embarrassed.

The black-robe Gorath was the real nightmare of all the Three-eye Association clans.

All of them believed that Lord Demon General fetched them here to talk about how to deal with Gorath.

However, none of them were optimistic about this. Because they had tried all the methods. However, none of the methods were effective. That guy seemed to know what they wanted to do in advance each time.

They just threw a glance at each other silently, causing an extremely depressed atmosphere in the main tent.

Being accompanied by another two demon knights, the demon general entered the main tent with a calm look. After that, he

briefed his order in one word.

After hearing that order, all the heads of Three-eye Association became still as if they had lost their thinking abilities.

"This time, we will have no rear any longer. I will lead all of you all the way towards the south without any stop until our army reaches the coastline of Jinyun Country in the southernmost part of Blackson Humans Corridor!" The demon general's icy voice reverberated inside the tent, "Who disagrees?"

Everybody became silent. Some of them even quivered all over...

# Chapter 791: The Changes

---

After raiding Moorne City, Zhang Tie didn't leave right away.

After combating demons and Three-eye Association for over two years, Zhang Tie had experiences in responding to the investigation of demons and Three-eye Association.

Zhang Tie knew that if soul-chasing butterfly found that he was still in Moorne City, Timothy Clan would not dispatch major figures and elites to take over this city in the next three months.

They had learned about it at the price of a great loss.

Before Moorne City restored its order, many brave humans had enough time to escape.

This was the maximal effort that Zhang Tie could make.

Zhang Tie had been in this city for over 20 days. He made a harvest this time. Besides killing a major figure of Timothy Clan, he also gained a great amount of wealth that this clan had transferred to Moorne City and over 50 earth-element crystals.

Although there was no elements realm in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie could directly absorb earth elements from earth-element crystals. It took him 2 weeks to consume all the 50-odd earth-element crystals.

On June 18, Zhang Tie opened his eyes under the small tree while the last earth-element crystal became as purely white as milk in his hand.

After standing up, Zhang Tie took out his knight's scale and found that 6 golden scales had been lit on it. It indicated that Zhang Tie had been a 6-scale black iron knight after over 2 years of practice.

It was an extremely high speed for Zhang Tie to advance to a 6-scale black iron knight in 2 years. All this was benefited from the

earth-element crystals that he had collected from the Three-eye Association clans during the past two years.

Zhang Tie knew that it required him to consume 318 earth-element crystals before advancing to one more scale. If he wanted to light all the entire earth chakra, he needed to consume over 110,000 earth-element crystals.

If it was 110,000 gold coins, it was pretty easy for Zhang Tie. However, if it was 110,000 earth-element crystals, it would be an astronomical figure for any clan.

When he recalled his distant cultivation road, Zhang Tie forced a bitter smile. After that, he walked out of the palace of the palace tree.

The moment Zhang Tie walked out of the palace and took a deep breath of the fresh air, an oily, smooth 30-cm longer rat had jumped to Zhang Tie's side and looked up at Zhang Tie while uttering a sound "Tzi Tzi Tzi Tzi".

Zhang Tie lowered his body and stretched out his hand. That rat jumped onto his hand right away.

Zhang Tie cradled the rat and lightly fondled its head. The rat then narrowed its eyes satisfactorily.

It was a good weather in Castle of Black Iron, which also indicated a good weather outside.

This rat was the first animal that Zhang Tie applied his soul-based animal controlling skill to. It could be treated as Zhang Tie's "savior". It lived so well in Castle of Black Iron. It drank spiritual spring, mutated juicy fruits, flesh of a huge deep-sea monster and ran around everywhere every day. It was definitely living like an immortal being in rats. Sometimes, it would play cute in front of Zhang Tie.

However, this rat was a bit special today. Only after being fondled for a short while, it had already raised its head and uttered

a sound "Tzi Tzi Tzi Tzi" towards Zhang Tie. It seemed wanting to tell something to Zhang Tie.

After being silent for a second, Zhang Tie had already known the rat's intention, "You want to leave out of here?"

The rat nodded like a man as it watched Zhang Tie with an eager look.

"But why?"

"Tzi...Tzi...Tzi...Tzi..."

"You want to find many female rats and have a lot of babies? You want to have a harem?"

That rat nodded seriously.

Zhang Tie laughed as he faintly patted his forehead, 'Oh, my god. I've almost forgotten about it. Although it lived well these years, I ignored its demands in some aspects. I forgot that a rat would also dream about having a clan and kingdom.'

"Alright. When I leave out of here, I will let you go to a proper place. But I have to warn you that the outside world is dangerous than here!"

The rat directly rolled backward twice on Zhang Tie's hand which looked difficult for rats. After that, he revealed its fangs and raised its claws. It seemed to tell Zhang Tie that it had already been ready for that. It was powerful enough.

Zhang Tie burst out into laughter...

Right then, the sound of flapping wings drifted from the sky. Hearing that sound, the "powerful" rat quivered all over and immediately jumped onto the ground from Zhang Tie's hand. Closely after that, it rushed into a hole of a phoenix tree and dared not come out anymore.

In a split second, a huge thunder hawk and four smaller thunder hawks landed in front of Zhang Tie while flapping their wings.

Like puppies who saw their owner, they started to warble around Zhang Tie with their mouths widely opened like waiting for Zhang Tie to feed them.

The bigger thunder hawk then turned around and warbled towards the tree hole, scaring that rat's head back inside at once.

Watching these cute guys, Zhang Tie felt pretty good in a split second. With laughter, he squatted down and fondled those little thunder hawks' furry heads, "I'm sorry. I forgot to bring food for you. After a while, I will have Aziz bring you some tasty food!"

Those cute little thunder hawks seemed to have understood Zhang Tie's words as they all closed their mouths and started to rub their furry heads onto Zhang Tie's body.

During the past two and a half years, the male thunder hawk that Zhang Tie brought in Castle of Black Iron at the beginning had established a family and became a father of four babies.

The four cute thunder hawks were just a bit over one year old. Their feathers looked a bit tender. They had just learned how to fly. Compared to their father, although they had not been mature, they had already looked different than their father—brighter feathers, stronger bodies and sharper eyes.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether it was because these thunder hawk babies grew up by eating the flesh of the huge deep-sea monster or the special environment in Castle of Black Iron or both of them.

Aziz came here with a plate of the flesh of huge deep-sea monster.

Aziz fed these thunder hawk babies in a special method. He walked to the edge of the cliff and directly threw off the plate of the flesh of huge deep-sea monster so that those thunder hawk babies could dive sharply towards those falling flesh while competing with each other...

Watching Aziz taking care of these thunder hawk babies, Zhang

Tie took a walk on the immortal mountain. He used to relieve his stress in this way.

At this moment, the immortal mountain and Castle of Black Iron had been lush all over. Taking a broad view, Zhang Tie saw huge trees, exotic flowers and fruits everywhere. A waterfall of melting snow flew off the peak of the 12,000 m high immortal mountain, which was extremely splendid.

Below that high waterfall was the place where Zhang Tie cultivated his battle skills and stimulated the production of iron-body fruits. Over the past two and a half years, Zhang Tie ate another 20-30 iron-body fruits.

When Zhang Tie appreciated the landscape on the hillside of the immortal mountain where the palace tree was, a team of hundreds of people arrived at the foot of the immortal mountain.

The team came from that human town far away from here. The team members carried a lot of items. At the foot of the immortal mountain, they started to kneel down and offer sacrifice to the immortal mountain.

Zhang Tie was attracted by these people's weird behaviors.

Heller had already been on Zhang Tie's side.

"What are they doing?" Zhang Tie turned around and asked Heller with a curious look.

"They are worshipping their God, you!" Heller watched downside there with a smile while his eyes were filled with endless mysteries, "They even brought you some sacrifices!"

"Sacrifices?" Zhang Tie became shocked. As he always set fires, plundered everywhere during the past two and a half years, he had been used to plunder the territory of Three-eye Association clans for what he needed. What he did was completely like the style of pirates. Therefore, when he heard that some people were offering sacrifice to him, he felt a bit weird. 'It is like how pirates feel when

they are pushed onto the altar by people.' Zhang Tie mumbled as he touched his insidious, raised hooknose.

"They are the best items that those villagers could produce, such as cloths, drinks, fruits, grains and daily utensils."

Zhang Tie knew that their sacrifices indicated that they had settled down in Castle of Black Iron. When he recalled how he saved these people out of the miserable underground mountain cave of Misty Moon Woods in Selnes Theater of Operations a few years ago, Zhang Tie sighed with full moods. 'If possible, who the motherf\*cker would not like to live a safe and sound life; instead of risking their lives every day?'

"Take their sacrifices!" Zhang Tie nodded towards Heller. After that, he added, "Erm, let them select some of the cultivation secret books and professional books that I've got from the demon area over the past two and a half years. If these guys have offsprings, they could pass some knowledge to their offsprings, which might be useful in the future!"

Zhang Tie had already moved numerous, inclusive secret books from Three-eye Association clans into Castle of Black Iron, which were even more than that he collected in Huaiyuan Palace. Many of these books were collections of the royal households or major clans in the former 17 human countries in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. After the 17 human countries were collapsed, these items fell into the hand of Three-eye Association clans and finally entered Castle of Black Iron.

Those Three-eye Association clans robbed the 17 human countries in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor. Zhang Tie then robbed those Three-eye Association clans.

Zhang Tie had read some of those secret books. In Heller's words, as long as those secret books entered Castle of Black Iron, it was equal for them to enter Zhang Tie's private warehouse. Even if they were destroyed, they could still be recovered at any time.



Heller could not create or take out any secret book or professional book; however, as long as these secret books entered Castle of Black Iron, it was equal for them to enter Heller's head. Zhang Tie didn't need to worry about losing them at all.

Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't think too much about that, he just issued an order to Heller...

# Chapter 792: A Disaster across the Blackson Humans Corridor

---

When the colorful fog in Castle of Black Iron gradually faded away and the night fell, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron and appeared in a pine forest on a hillside outside Moorne City.

Like before, he came out in the incarnation of the little, black beetle.

It was a good weather outside Moorne City. Two bright moons were hanging in the sky; plus the dense stars and clear air, the ground across Moorne City was covered with a silver light, with which, Zhang Tie could see far away.

Singing Bugs and the warm breeze made the whole hill especially tranquil.

The Moorne City in the distance was pitch-dark like falling asleep.

Zhang Tie felt a bit weird. Even if Timothy Clan and demons were preparing for preventing his second raid, Moorne City could not be so silent.

Zhang Tie flapped his wings and flew towards Moorne City together with some fireflies.

The black beetle moved very fast. It took it only 5 minutes to arrive at the city wall from the pine woods.

The city wall was wide open. However, nobody was on the city wall. At the sight of this scene, Zhang Tie felt strange.

He accelerated and flew into the city.

Only some stray dogs and cats were loitering on the broad avenues and sobbing in a low voice. Even stray dogs and cats might not be adapted to such a weird scene.

The black beetle ascended to over 200 m high and flew around Moorne City rapidly.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie thought it was another trap set by demons as he had experienced various traps during the past two and a half years. However, after flying around the city, he found that it was not a trap at all. Instead, the entire Moorne City had completely become an empty city.

All the humans had disappeared. This city seemed to have been deserted.

'What happened' Zhang Tie asked himself. The beetle instantly arrived at a hidden place. Closely after that, Zhang Tie incarnated into the male mature thunder hawk and rushed to the sky. He then flew towards the neighboring city.

Watching the empty city, Zhang Tie felt extremely restless and sorrowful.

It took Zhang Tie less than half an hour to reach Sessie City.

Hovering above Sessie City, Zhang Tie glanced over the ground with sharp eyes.

Like Moorne City, the entire Sessie City also became empty. The city gate was wide open while nobody was in the city.

All the demonized puppets in the city just disappeared, leaving no trace of massacre and riot.

Of course, these humans would not disappear out of no reason. A possibility occurred to Zhang Tie. However, Zhang Tie tried to not think about it as it was too miserable for the humans in the two cities.

'No way, no way. It should be some other reason...'

Zhang Tie warned himself repeatedly as he rushed to the sky and flew towards the south.

After a few hours, Zhang Tie saw more and more empty human

cities like Moorne City, including Milvo City, Saint Paul City, Gofa City, Delus City, Wilisdon City and Conjiken City...

Zhang Tie became disappointed completely while the temporary, warm pleasure that he felt in Castle of Black Iron was shattered.

More and more empty cities made the possibility of which Zhang Tie was scared the most turn into a fact.

Zhang Tie continued to fly towards the south. After a few hours, he passed through the entire Golan Empire and the neighboring country Basas Kingdom and came to the Dicalo Plain in the north of Verov Federation.

With the starlight, Zhang Tie saw dense population walking towards the south on the Dicalo Plain. They were not humans but demonized puppets.

Wherever they passed by, they would gnaw everything, including grassroots, barks and animals such as rhinos, wild elephants, even mice and cockroaches.

Endless demonized puppets rolled over the entire Dicarolo Plain. Everywhere they passed by, they would leave nothing alive. Watching them from the sky, Zhang Tie felt they were surging worms in shit holes.

With bloody eyes, the demonized puppets walked and gnawed everything they could eat. Some wore simple protectives such as armors and held weapons such as sabers and swords; some held a kitchen knife or a manure fork...

There were over 20 million demonized puppets across Dicarolo Plain. All the demonized puppets were heading for the south!

The thunder hawk disappeared when Gorath appeared tens of thousands of meters high in the sky. Lowering his head, he watched those endless demonized puppets with widely opened, teary eyes.

For Zhang Tie, those walking deads were not demonized puppets

but commoners who were killed by demons.

Zhang Tie finally understood that nobody was alive across the demon area. However, before this, there were almost 200 million humans under the ruling of demons and Three-eye Association in the demon area, who were striving to survive themselves.

This was the cruelest aspect of holy war.

After dropping off his tears with the wind, Zhang Tie roared towards the sky and disappeared into the sky.

...

Two hours later, in a hidden place outside Williamslack City in the south of Verov Federation, a subordinate member of Arthur Clan quivered under Zhang Tie's wrinkled claws. Rolling up his eyes, he seemed wanting to look at Zhang Tie's wrinkled claws...

In less than half a minute, Zhang Tie had already known everything that happened these days.

Zhang Tie intensified his battle qi and broke all the bones of that guy into powder at once. After that, he threw that guy's corpse into the Abyss of Chaos and disappeared once again...

...

Titanic Duchy...Selnes Plain...Symbian Republic...north of Norman Empire...

Endless demonized puppets poured towards Kalay Mountain Range. No human force could block such a destructive flood across Blackson Humans Corridor...

When his tears dried up, Zhang Tie's heart was full of fury and animosity.

'Demon general... Three-eye Association...'

Zhang Tie kept the two names deeply in his mind...

...

On the evening of June 19th, Zhang Tie finally returned to the encampment of Hurricane Corps of Huaiyuan Prefecture silently after two and a half years.

The black beetle drilled into the underground palace through that hidden air hole on the rockery in the temporary palace of the corps leader. Zhang Tie recovered to his original look.

The underground palace remained unchanged. Nobody had broken in during the past two and a half years. The emergency device which was used to wake him up in the underground palace had not been triggered either...

After taking a walk around the underground palace, Zhang Tie threw some daily goods that were stored in the underground palace into Castle of Black Iron, making it look like having been consumed during the past two and a half years.

After that, Zhang Tie stood still there with his eyes closed for a short while so as to recover his composure. Closely after that, he sat on the ground with crossed legs and started his cultivation in the elements realm.

Zhang Tie knew that the real test was coming.

'In the future war, as long as I'm a bit more powerful, I will have a greater possibility to kill enemies and survive myself.'

Zhang Tie had not been craving for power so much before.

In the elements realm...

After entering his meditation, the first spiritual hand appeared and started to capture those golden, polyhedral earth elements...

Soon, the second spiritual hand appeared...

Then the 3rd, the 4th, the 5th, the 6th, and the 7th...

Seven spiritual hands appeared in the elements realm in total. They were very agile like being controlled by 7 knights. Sometimes, the 7 spiritual hands worked independently;

sometimes, they cooperated with each other so as to capture those golden earth crystals, throwing them into the rotating chakra and having them crushed into pieces. As a result, the complex geometric patterns on the second earth's chakra gradually became bright.

Zhang Tie's cultivation speed was 7 times more than that of common black iron knights.

...

In the process of cultivation, Zhang Tie could almost not sense the elapse of time. Not knowing how much time had passed, Zhang Tie heard a loud bell ring. He then opened his eyes.

The emergency awakening device in the underground palace was triggered from the outside. Besides the loud bell ring across the underground palace, red fluorescent lamps moved out of the top of those rooms in the underground palace, rendering the underground palace with amazing red color. Even his tiger-shaped command plate was vibrating due to the remote-sensing message.

The bell rung once again while the distant and silvery bell rings reverberated around the underground palace.

Zhang Tie looked at the clock on the wall and found it was already 7 am, June 21st. He then picked himself up from the bed. After that, he flicked his clothes and opened the gate of the underground palace calmly after two and a half years of 'cultivation'...

# Chapter 793: Conference

---

In the conference of Hurricane Corps, all the commissioned officers with ranks above colonel were sitting at the long desk with very solemn looks.

Everyone was silent except for the "rustle" sound between papers when one person flipped through bulletins.

The morning sunglow shone onto the excessive young face of the man in the main seat of the conference room through one window. Although over 2 years had passed, that man's face remained unchanged, his skin looked a bit white due to over 2 years of cultivation in the underground palace.

When he was browsing the bulletins of the corps over the past two years, all the commissioned officers in the conference room were stealthily throwing a glance at that man.

For many commissioned officers, it was the second time for them to see this guy since he came to Hurricane Corps about 3 years ago.

Compared to November 10th, the 895th year of Black Iron Calendar when this guy came to Hurricane Corps for the first time, his qi seemed to have changed. Last time, he felt aggressive and profound; however, after over 2 years of cultivation, his aggressive and profound qi had completely disappeared. Now, he looked like an extremely common juvenile. People could hardly feel any danger from him.

For those commissioned officers who had not promoted to knights, they didn't know what this change meant. Many people were amazed and puzzled about this. They even thought that Zhang Tie met some problem in the process of cultivation and degraded in battle force. However, if there was a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace at present, he would definitely be shocked by Zhang Tie's change.



Those poor ones liked to show off their money; however, the real rich ones preferred to be low-key.

A new top quality sword couldn't wait to show off his sharp blade to the whole world; however, the real unrivaled blade would hide its sharpness inside the thick sheath.

The most agile state was like being clumsy. Such a state could not be reached by knights without experiencing life or death situation for numerous times. One had to constantly improve his battle force physically and spiritually. Without over 20 years of deep cultivation, many black iron knights could not even touch this state at all. However, it only took Zhang Tie two and a half years to reach this state. Although it was a long time for commoners, it was not long for knights as it was even shorter than 10 years.

The commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps didn't understand what Zhang Tie's current calm state meant. However, due to his invisible, powerful qi field, he could still influence the others although he just sat there and checked the bulletins silently.

It was a tranquil and detached temperament which would remain unchanged even when the Mountain Tai collapsed.

Although sun rose in the east and set in the west, moons waxed and waned, the sun and the moon didn't change their trajectories for foreign bodies.

Being influenced by Zhang Tie's calm, those anxious commissioned officers also gradually recovered their composure.

"Not bad!" Zhang Tie made a brief comment after browsing the bulletin, "You've done a good job during the past two and a half years!"

Some maneuver troops had gained more than 7 million gold coins in the mode of mercenary groups. The garrisons who were responsible for the military management and defense of the three cities didn't break out any major event of violating the military

disciplines. All the three cities were running well. The taxations and number of immigrants broke records year after year. Even though last winter was the coldest winter during the past dozens of years in Blackson Humans Corridor, the three cities below Huaiyuan Prefecture still didn't find anyone being starved to death. Additionally, all the members of the special elite troops of Hurricane Corps had accomplished two rounds of training in Kalay Mountain Range. They had built 117 hidden materials supply points. Even if their supplies were cut off, they could still stick to over 2 years of fight in Kalay Mountain Range independently.

It could be said that the current situation of Hurricane Corps had gradually aligned with Zhang Tie's designing. That was what Zhang Tie demanded.

'Pitifully, if not the emergency, Hurricane Corps would have made more contributions across Blackson Humans Corridor. However, due to the decisive strike of the demon general and Three-eye Association, Hurricane Corps have to stop enjoying the brilliance in advance. Whereas, what Hurricane Corps have done is not useless. It's like a seed which would sprout sooner or later. Even if Hurricane Corps had to leave Waii Sub-continent in the end, they would also play a great role in the new place. They would be favored by all the honors and brilliance.' Zhang Tie told to himself.

Zhang Tie had already known why the commissioned officers woke him up from the underground palace; however, he still pretended to know nothing about it. After controlling his pain and grief, Zhang Tie asked in an indifferent tone, "Why did you wake me up?"

After hearing Zhang Tie's question, all the commissioned officers moved their eyes onto the chief of staff of Hurricane Corps.

The lieutenant general chief of staff of Hurricane Corps stood up. After taking a deep breath, he told Zhang Tie with a solemn look, "Because the major emergency in the north theater of operations of

Waii Sub-continent has already posed a rudimentary influence to the overall situation of the holy war across Waii Sub-continent, we had to wake you up, Elder Mushen. We needed to report it to you!"

"Go ahead!"

"According to our intelligence, over half a month ago, namely between June 6 and June 10, with the request of demon general, all the 17 Three-eye Association clans across the north demon area had already killed all their human captives and slaves and converted them into demonized puppets. According to our estimation, 190 million to 210 million humans were killed across the north demon area. These demonized puppets were pouring towards Kalay Mountain Range ceaselessly..."

Closely after the chief of staff's report, the atmosphere in the conference room became gloomy...

# Chapter 794: A Confidential Task

---

With the impact of about 200 million demonized puppets, Kalay Mountain Range would be broken through sooner or later.

The Three-eye Association clans across the demon rear had already given up the northern cities. The powerhouses including knights of those Three-eye Association clans were pouring southwards together with the demon corps and the over 200 million demonized puppets.

Nobody could block such a terrifying flood, not even knights.

Given the base force, the population of the demon corps was over 20 times more than that of the total population of human soldiers in the south of Kalay Mountain Range.

Due to the dauntless madness, common demonized puppets' battle force was greater than that of common human soldiers. Additionally, the number of LV 9 demon fighters in the demon corps was even more than the summation of LV 9 human fighters in southern human countries.

The only strength of humans on the battle force was that humans had slightly more knights than demons and Three-eye Association.

According to the intelligence of Hurricane Corps, demons and Three-eye Association had 17 knights in total; besides, the demon general had mastered the aiding strength, which could increase the battle force of all the other demons on the battlefield by 30% at once. By contrast, there were 21 human knights in the south of Kalay Mountain Range.

Although human knights slightly outnumbered the knights of demons and Three-eye Association, it was almost meaningless.

The 17 knights of demons and Three-eye Association could unite with each other and follow the rule of the demon general completely; however, human knights in the south of Kalay

Mountain Range could barely unite with each other. Many human knights, especially those No. 1 human knights in a country had their own plans. Those human knights would fight demons; however, they would never risk their lives making confront combat with knights of demons and Three-eye Association.

Additionally, over the past two and a half years, many human knights had left Waii Sub-continent.

For many human knights, Waii Sub-continent was just a station, a scenery or a memorable place in their lives; therefore, they would never lose their lives here.

As many knights and powerhouses had already seen clearly the poor future of this Sub-continent and had already left one after another. The holy war had just started, it was very hard for many knights to determine to fight demons to the death on this remote sub-continent where humans were outnumbered by demons. Even major Hua clans such as Huaiyuan Palace would not make such a stupid choice; instead, they would return to Taixia Country. Nobody would like to put their whole lives in a hopeless place. Even experienced gamblers would not bet all their bets when they were unlucky, not to mention knights and major clans.

Even if someone bet all of his bets and made a victory for the time being here, it would just buffer the momentum of demons and consume a part of the strength of demons. However, it didn't mean that he could smile at the end. Because more and more demon knights and demon corps would constantly arrive at the Waii Sub-continent from the underground world. 'Although you were dauntless and admirable, it didn't mean that you could survive on and ensure your clan to be vigorous forever.'

Holy war was between demons and humans. In such a war, each one was balancing his interests, demons or humans, especially high-end knights. Nobody would like to be cannon fodder and die before the holy war.

Huaiyuan Palace and those knights who had left Waii Sub-continent were very realistic and selfish. Instead of shouting any battle calls, they were just striving for their own future in this holy war, major clans or knights.

Even Norman Empire, which was regarded as the most powerful country for defending demons in the north of Blackson Humans Corridor had deserted Blackson Humans Corridor and accomplished the evacuation and transfer from the north at once since the new tactic was adopted by demons. Norman Empire had moved most of its royal members and elites to the Western Continent. A small part of its royal members and elites headed for the Eastern Continent. Now, the remaining force of Norman Empire was restricted in the three cities of Benolisburg across Blackson Humans Corridor.

Compared to three years ago, Benolisburg had become as trivial as the remaining three cities of Huaiyuan Palace. It became the place where Norman Empire made money from.

Zhang Tie was thinking about something while listening to the report and situation analysis of the chief of staff of Hurricane Corps. He knew that the real large-scale evacuation and escape in the south of Blackson Humans Corridor would arrive. Everybody was involved in.

"According to the comprehensive intelligence, the Staff has made a deduction. We've got the following key points: after 10 days, namely, at the beginning of July, the vanguard troop of the corps of about 200 million demonized puppets would arrive at Kalay Mountain Range. It would take the vanguard of demonized puppets corps 2 months to penetrate through Kalay Mountain Range. That's to say, before October, the vanguard of demons would enter the south of Waii Sub-continent and move all the way towards the south. In next January, the vanguard of the demon corps would push to the north bank of Yuanjiang River. The demon corps would choose to break through Yuanjiang River from

the northwest of Qilan Country due to the frozen river over there. Closely after that, they would attack Huaiyuan Prefecture!"

"Do you mean we only have half a year left?" Zhang Tie asked calmly. He didn't even ask how could the demonized puppets penetrate through Kalay Mountain Range so fast, which had carried high hopes from the southern countries.

No matter how many hopes did southern countries even Zhang Tie hold on Kalay Mountain Range, the so-called human defense line was as thin as a piece of paper facing 200 million demonized puppets. Only by surging forward ceaselessly could they destroy the human defense line in Kalay Mountain Range which was used to handle millions of demonized puppets. Actually, it would take most of the demonized puppets about 2 months to walk through Kalay Mountain Range.

The demon corps didn't even need to concern about their logistics and supply. They would eat everything on the way, including corpses. If there was no corpse, they would eat those weak or wounded demonized puppets. Each demonized puppet was a dauntless soldier and mobile dried humanoid rations. That was the sheer terror of the demonized puppets corps.

"I'm afraid...yes!" The chief of staff hesitated a bit, "Demons might have already considered the factors like season and climate. From July to September, demons could easily pass by Kalay Mountain. In winter, the frozen Yuanjiang River would provide convenience for demon corps to pass by. Given the emergency facing Waii Sub-continent, we especially invite corps leader to determine how to respond to the demons!"

Soon after the chief of staff finished his words, everybody in the conference room had moved their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

"From now on, the rotating operations of special elite troops is canceled off. All the special elite troops of Hurricane Corps should set out for Kalay Mountain Range. The evacuation time will be

determined by the special elite troops themselves!"

As it would take demons less than 3 months to pass by Kalay Mountain Range. It became meaningless for the special elite troops of Hurricane Corps to execute rotating operations. As Hurricane Corps had already prepared in Kalay Mountain Range for a couple of years, they should have a real fight more or less so as to live up to their military uniforms.

All the commissioned officers in the conference room were shocked by Zhang Tie's first command.

However, Zhang Tie didn't stop.

"After the conference, you can arrange the camp families of Hurricane Corps to leave Waii Sub-continent for Taixia Country!"

The second command made many commissioned officers reassured as they watched Zhang Tie with appreciative looks. Because Hurricane Corps was still in Huaiyuan Prefecture, the camp families had not left here. Therefore, many people were reassured by Zhang Tie's command. At such a critical moment, as long as their family members could survive on, they would have no regret to fight demons to the death.

"The Staff of the corps, show me the evacuation plan of Hurricane Corps as soon as possible. I have three principles for this evacuation plan: first, orderly; second, by batches; third, prepare for emergencies. If there's no emergency, we need to ensure that Hurricane Corps evacuates completely from Waii Sub-continent by December 1st..."

A Hurricane Corps of over 400,000 soldiers would be fully digested by over 200 million demonized puppets for sure. Zhang Tie could fight demons to the death; however, he was not allowed to sacrifice the precious force of hundreds of thousands of soldiers of Huaiyuan Palace for his impulsion and the so-called heroic reputation. With the strength of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie knew clearly that it was not his turn to be a hero in the holy war. In



order to ensure the safe evacuation of Hurricane Corps, Zhang Tie could even give up the 'last piece of bloody flesh' 1 in the three cities of Huaiyuan Palace.

After hearing Zhang Tie's three commands, all the advanced commissioned officers in Hurricane Corps exchanged a glance with each other as they became completely reassured.

"Well, you can leave now. And, don't forget to report this conference to Long Wind Business Group!" Zhang Tie waved his hand. Long Wind Business Group was used by Huaiyuan Palace to make profits in Waii Sub-continent. All the current businesses of Huaiyuan Palace in Waii Sub-continent was managed by Long Wing Business Group.

When the commissioned officers stood up and walked towards the door, Zhang Tie opened his mouth once again.

"The chief commander of engineer troops, wait a moment..."

The moment a colonel officer was about to step out of the gate of the conference room, he stopped.

...

After two minutes, everybody left except for that colonel officer of the engineer troop, who was standing in front of Zhang Tie with a solemn look.

"I give you a class A confidential task. You're only responsible for me. You could allocate all the materials and personnel across Huaiyuan Prefecture. After accomplishing this task, all the personnels who had attended this task should leave Waii Sub-continent by sea at once!" Zhang Tie told the colonel.

After hearing this, the colonel straightened up immediately, "Please issue the order, corps leader!"

"Do you know how to make alchemist's bomb exert its utmost effect?"

Zhang Tie asked with an indifferent look while the colonel's eyes radiated a shrewd light at once...

# Chapter 795: The Smell of Doomsday

---

Walls had ears. In the holy war, nothing spread faster than gossips.

Only after one week since Zhang Tie came out of the underground palace, the news that demons slaughtered all the humans in the north Blackson Humans Corridor and almost 200 million demonized puppets and the super demon corps were approaching Kalay Mountain Range had spread over the southern human countries. Even commoners had already known about it.

All the human countries in the south of Kalay Mountain Range were in a panic.

It was paladins, demon hunting squads and bandits who brought the news to the south from the north battlefields. After escaping to the south, all the bandits became the "brave forces" who had resisted demons in the north demon area.

A few smart guys sniffed the smell of doomsday from those real rulers and major clans' movements in the southern countries.

For several consecutive days, the major clans even royal members of some countries being closest to the south edge of Kalay Mountain Range had evacuated to the south. People in the southern human cities found more and more airships flying towards the south in these days. However, very few airships flew towards the north.

The entire Blackson Humans Corridor was shocked.

...

On June 28th, Qihai City, Huaiyuan Prefecture...

The harbor of Qihai City had enlarged a lot after three years of expansion. However, compared to Yiyang Harbor, the largest harbor in Huaiyuan Prefecture, the harbor in Qihai City was still much smaller. Whereas, Qihai Harbor had been able to hold

50,000-ton ships.

Although having been in Huaiyuan Prefecture for many years, it was Zhang Tie's first time to come to Qihai City.

However, the name Qihai City had changed to Hellnar City by Norman Empire.

However, Zhang Tie had been used to call it Qihai City.

A 40,000-odd ton battleship with flying colorful flags anchored at a pier. A military band in tidy uniform was playing a cheerful fleet marching music on the pier.

Only a few people were on the pier. The soldiers of Norman Empire had already blocked the entire pier. Zhang Tie was one of them.

Zhang Tie came here to bid a farewell to Filis, the crown prince of Norman Empire. Even at such a critical moment, it was like holding a cheerful and solemn ceremony.

Filis was leaving in a very low-key manner. Besides some subordinates of Filis, Zhang Tie was the only one who came here to bid a farewell to him.

After knowing that 200 million demonized puppets were pouring towards the south, Filis, the crown prince of Norman Empire who was staying in Benolisburg finally received the command of the royal household of Norman Empire who requested him to leave Waii Sub-continent.

Donder once said that when one's enemy was powerful enough, one would always be collapsed without having to fight. Facing such a powerful enemy, those people outside the battlefield lost their confidence earlier than those soldiers on the frontline.

When there was no hope of winning the war, nobody would like to stick to it. When the decisive strike of demons and Three-eye Association completely overdraft the war potential across the demon area and the power and wealth of Three-eye Association

clans, it also collapsed most southern countries' will to resist.

Through this decisive strike, 17 northern countries' strength was mobilized.

The number 200 million alone was already astonishing, not to mention that it was followed by extremely terrifying demonized puppets. Even if it was followed by fleas and mice, it would also be frightening enough.

What a decisive strike!

Filis was not the first important person who would leave out of here. Zhang Tie knew that two knights of southern countries had already left Waii Sub-continent in the past week. The human knights' advantage in number was reduced, which accelerated the mental collapse of more people. All the southern countries seemed to fall into a frustrating vicious circle.

It was meaningless for Filis to stay in Benolisburg.

Knight Leo, the teacher of Filis, would escort Filis out of here. Therefore, 3 of the 22 human knights had left Waii Sub-continent as of now.

Zhang Tie didn't make any comment about this. It was their personal choice. Although it was not a noble behavior, there was no ground to blame them.

As the last royal member of Norman Empire to leave Waii Sub-continent, Filis' performance today looked a bit sentimental. Facing Zhang Tie, the only one who came to bid a farewell to him, he revealed some true moods.

"I believe it now, good luck would always be used up whether for a person or a country!" Filis sighed with full emotions while watching the harbor in front of him, "Two years ago, when the black-robe Gorath appeared in the demon area and made big trouble over there, I thought that Norman Empire's good luck was coming. Due to the appearance of Gorath, the human countries in

the north of Blackson Humans Corridor and the Norman Empire won the most precious two and a half years to evacuate. Many people survived. There was a period when I even thought that we could confront with demons in this way with Kalay Mountain Range as our shield. We might gradually take advantages and restore the homeland of Norman Empire by the end of the holy war. However, I understand it now that no good luck could match genuine battle force. Even if there was one more Gorath, what's coming would still come. I heard that the special elite troops of Hurricane Corps had already driven into Kalay Mountain Range and prepared to fight demons. Will you jeer at me for my leave?"

"No!"

"Really?" Filis seemed to mind the opinion of the youngest Hua knight of Huaiyuan Palace about him.

"If I were in your position, I would have left even earlier than you. Additionally, the holy war would last for a long time. As long as we're alive, we will have a chance to win!" Zhang Tie said seriously.

With a faint smile, Filis continued, "I will go to the Western Continent, I wonder when will we see each other next time?"

"When we win the holy war, we can meet here again!"

After being silent for a second, Filis burst out into laughter, "Fine, we will meet here on the day we win the holy war!"

"That's the deal!"

"That's the deal!"

The two parties clapped.

"If you returned to the Eastern Continent one day, remember to take a look in Bloody Dragon City in Guizhou Province..." Filis said.

"Bloody Dragon City?"

"My two brothers are there. When they left, I had talked to them

about you. Bloody Dragon City is built by Norman Empire in Taixia Country. You know, for our royal members, if we could maintain a branch of the bloodline in the Eastern Continent, our bloodline would not break off even if Western Continent was collapsed!"

"Alright, I know!" Zhang Tie nodded. Zhang Tie knew that Filis wanted him to look after his two brothers. After all, Norman Empire didn't have knights in the Eastern Continent, although they didn't lack money.

Eastern Continent was ruled by Hua people. With Zhang Tie's help, the royal members of Norman Empire who exiled to Taixia Country might face fewer troubles.

"Watch out the demon general!" Filis warned Zhang Tie as they embraced each other. After that, he boarded the battleship in the cheerful music.

Before leaving, Filis' teacher threw a deep, amazed look at Zhang Tie. Although he had met Zhang Tie twice in the past 3 years, he had sensed the change of Zhang Tie. For a young man who had just promoted to a knight 3 years ago, this was a very terrifying change.

...

The battleship soon left. Standing on the deck of the battleship, Filis and Knight Leo were watching the scene over the dock. They were clear that the Norman Empire had abandoned this place completely.

Norman Empire's royal members would leave their homeland and build their country in the Western Continent once again. Thankfully, the royal members of the Norman Empire had a deep root in the Western Continent. Just like Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace had a deep background in Taixia Country, Leminy Clan, also had a deep background in the Western Continent.

In each holy war, major human clans would have a chance to divide their clan forces once again. Some clans would fall, some

would rise. Norman Empire's royal members had not fallen completely. They had a chance to rise again.

Remembering the appointment that he had made with Zhang Tie just now, Filis became a bit thrilled.

"Zhang Tie is very terrifying!" Knight Leo opened his mouth suddenly.

Filis turned around and watched his teacher with a bit dumbfounded look.

"Don't be hostile to such a person!" Knight Leo watched Filis with a solemn look.

"Ahh? Why do you say so, Mr. Leo? I feel that Zhang Tie became more genial after two and a half years. He lacks arrogance now compared to that in the Rotating Chakra Ceremony. I almost mistook him for another person. Perhaps, he has some problem in cultivation!" Filis replied with an amazed look.

'Genial? Some problem in cultivation?' Knight Leo revealed a bitter smile when he listened to such a description and recognition about Zhang Tie's change, "You're not a knight. I cannot explain things about knights to you. However, you need to believe in my judgment and feeling. The cultivation method grants me with a powerful perception of the unknown things, this guy is very terrifying. Perhaps, his name would be well known across Western Continent in the near future!"

Filis completely changed his face...



# Chapter 796: The Unspoken Words

---

It was out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Knight Leo, the teacher of Filis, could speak highly of him. Seeing off the battleship, Zhang Tie recalled his friends and partners in Norman Empire who had separated with each other; therefore, he felt like he lost something.

This was common in holy war, numerous departures happened at each second. Some of the departures could not be sensed at the beginning; however, as time went by, it might become a farewell forever.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether he could see his friends anymore——Reinhardt, Guderian, Alice, Hanna and Pandora who had disappeared since he caught sight of her last time...

If he couldn't see them in the future, Zhang Tie only hoped them to live well, especially the three girls. As Hanna had already married, Zhang Tie hoped her to have a happy family; as for Alice, Zhang Tie hoped her to get her real love; as for Pandora...

When he thought about Pandora, Zhang Tie had complex moods. Zhang Tie always had three women in his heart, one of them was Pandora.

Compared to Hanna and Alice, who were common girls, Pandora had too many secrets. If he could return to the period before the holy war, Zhang Tie would definitely rush to Sacred Golden Orchid Empire to meet Pandora. However, due to the Abyan event, Zhang Tie might not see her for the rest of his life. Whenever he thought about this, he would feel a pain in his heart.

Zhang Tie would not forget that appointment he made with Pandora at the small bus station in the rainy night when he left Blackhot City for Kalur Theater of Operations——When I grow as beautiful as Miss Daina, could you marry me on behalf of her if you're still alive?

Zhang Tie remembered that he put the black seal ring on Pandora's middle finger while dropping tears...

Zhang Tie knew that he would not make the same appointment with another woman for the rest of his life. Because this appointment was exclusive to Pandora.

At that time, they were still young, passionate, pure and as nice as the wildflowers all over the hillside...

Time would not fly back.

Due to the cruel and chaotic holy war, the goodness which could have lasted faded away earlier. Even animals had disappeared, not to mention humans...

"Motherf\*cking demons; motherf\*cking Three-eye Association; motherf\*cking holy war!" Zhang Tie swore at the pier, arousing the attention of some commissioned officers of Norman Empire who came here together with him. They exchanged a glance with each other and didn't know why this youngest clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace was losing his temper.

"Elder Mushen..." A garrison commissioned officer moved close to Zhang Tie.

If he could sweet-talk a knight at this moment, his family members might be saved at a critical moment.

Zhang Tie didn't feel like saying anything at this moment. He even didn't want to put off that guy. Those who were left by Norman Empire to fight demons at this critical moment must be poor.

"Leave out of here before the start of this December. Save as more people as you can. Good luck to you!" Zhang Tie issued the order after throwing a glance at that commissioned officer and the surrounding guys. After that, he turned around and left.

After hearing Zhang Tie's warning, all the commissioned officers exchanged a glance with each other as they seemed to have

understood something.

...

A wholly-new black Faerie-Dragon T9 sports car was parking in the dock. Zhang Tie entered the car and started it. With a roar, he drew a U-shaped line in the dock before turning around and leaving under the gaze of numerous soldiers of Norman Empire...

An elder who drove a sports car...

If not at the present, many people would not believe that there was such a knight, a clan elder in Huaiyuan Palace...

'Perhaps he's still too young and lacks experience. It's heard that this clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace has just promoted to a knight lately. He might not have killed any demon at all. ' At the sight of this, many commoners became more pessimistic about the future in Waii Sub-continent. Such a flirtatious knight and clan elder really made people restless.

...

The black Faerie-Dragon T9 soon entered the Qihai City-Yiyang City highway.

Although Huaiyuan Palace had sold Qihai City to Norman Empire, the two cities still maintained their usual traffic intercourse. Goods and personnels could access to each city for free.

Zhang Tie had guessed what those commoners thought about him. If he watched elders of Huaiyuan Palace driving such a sports car everywhere, he might also have the same thought. As sports cars belonged to young people, which didn't match the steady and respectable image of elders and knights.

However, Zhang Tie didn't care about that.

During the past two and a half years, Zhang Tie had killed more than one knight of demons and Three-eye Association in the

demon area in the north of Kalay Mountain Range. Besides, he had exterminated at least 6 Three-eye Association clans, big or small. Of course, he would not care about his image in others' eyes.

As for the reason that he drove the sports car, it was simple. He had been tired of flying in the sky; therefore, he wanted to review the feeling of driving a car on the ground so as to relax himself.

After staying outside for so long, Zhang Tie had been used to enjoy such a free feeling.

'Filis has gone. However, I will stay here to respond to the toughest situation in the next half a year...'

In the next half a year, more and more humans would die and the overall situation across southern countries would deteriorate. Even Zhang Tie didn't know how bad the situation would be.

In the next half a year, not all the humans in the south of Kalay Mountain Range could evacuate from Waii Sub-continent safely. This was the source of the coming chaos. In such a critical moment, humans' dirtiest and most selfish side would be revealed. Therefore, Zhang Tie was not optimistic about this at all.

As Zhang Tie was considering something, he accelerated unconsciously. However, Zhang Tie had no sense about the increasing speed; because he could move much faster than this sports car in the sky, on the ground and underwater; especially in his knight's consciousness, he felt that this car was as slow as walking even if it had reached its highest speed.

The Qihai City-Yiyang City highway was built along the coastline. This road had the best scenery in Huaiyuan Prefecture. If not those tricky things in mind, Zhang Tie would definitely feel good on this road.

A red Faerie-Dragon T9 sports car gradually caught up with Zhang Tie and drove neck and neck with Zhang Tie's black Faerie-Dragon T9 sports car.

In the beginning, Zhang Tie just ignored it. As for young men, it might be stimulative to race cars; however, for Zhang Tie, it was extremely boring.

After driving neck and neck for about 8 miles, that red car started to provoke him. It moved ahead of Zhang Tie and started to shift to different lanes frequently. Zhang Tie ignored it and directly pressed the accelerator to surpass that red car...

However, that red car kept chasing after Zhang Tie. After maintaining the current situation for a few miles, they reached a turn. Closely after making a turn, Zhang Tie had seen a guy repairing a truck right in front. Of course, Zhang Tie could easily shift to another lane based on his responsiveness and driving skills. However, the driver behind him responded a bit slowly. The driver behind him didn't find that truck until Zhang Tie shift to a new lane. In an emergency, the driver's left hand used a bit more force; plus, she pressed the brake. As a result, the red Faerie-Dragon T9 lost its control and rushed towards the cliff...

With a powerful knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie had heard a familiar shriek from the red car the moment it lost its control.

'Sh\*t!' Zhang Tie swore inside as he forcefully swiveled the steering wheel. His black Faerie-Dragon T9 then leaned against the red one so as to prevent it from diving into the cliff. However, the red car moved so fast; even though Zhang Tie tried to block it ahead of it, the red car still pushed Zhang Tie's black one towards the cliff. Realizing that this method didn't work, Zhang Tie directly broke the steel plate of the chassis and braked his car in a knight style by his foot together with the other red one.

When Zhang Tie pulled his feet out of the ground, there was a huge hole in the chassis of his black Faerie-Dragon T9. He opened the door and got off his car. After that, he walked to the side of the red one and pulled open the door on one side of the T9 car before pulling out that woman whose face had turned pale due to extreme panic.

"Are you crazy? If you wanna die, please don't involve me in it. Why not bump into a bean curd to commit a suicide? Why do you imitate others to race cars? Why did you disguise as a tomboy? Other women have breasts yet no brains; however, you neither have breasts nor brains. If you're free, why not marry a man and nurse some babies? By doing this, you could even make contributions to the holy war and stimulate your secondary physical growth. If you're lucky enough, you can directly enter the list of having plump breasts yet no brains..." Zhang Tie swore loudly.

Even having promoted to a knight and clan elder, Zhang Tie's words were still acrid yet contained no dirty words; however, he could always realize a good effect.

At this moment, if someone heard a clan elder of Huaiyuan Palace criticizing a woman in this way, he would definitely giggle out his eyes.

That woman was Wang Shina. After two and a half years, Wang Shina had recovered her hot dress—a sexy, black, leather skirt; a pair of crystal high-heeled shoes; short hair; a pair of red lips; a pair of eyes which were as large as that of panda's; a pair of ears with 4-5 colorful earrings on each...

Zhang Tie made a mistake, Wang Shina's breasts were not small. Being restricted by her white braces skirt, the two "white rabbits" looked like two ripe pawpaws which would fall off at any time.

Wang Shina had not imagined that it was Zhang Tie who pulled her out of the vehicle. As the two cars' windows were deep-colored, she didn't know that it was Zhang Tie whom she was racing with just now. She just watched Zhang Tie stupidly as her pale face gradually blushed. Her eyes seemed to be misty. All of a sudden, she put her arms around Zhang Tie's neck. Meanwhile, she stood on her toes and kissed Zhang Tie forcefully with her red, hot lips...

Zhang Tie became stunned as he watched Wang Shina with

widely opened eyes.

It was his first time to be forced to kiss a woman...

Zhang Tie's spirit was shocked more than his body and senses.

Zhang Tie could sense that this woman had used all of her strength to kiss and embrace him.

Wang Shina also watched Zhang Tie with widely opened eyes, eyelashes against eyelashes and eyes against eyes.

They remained still for about 10 seconds.

After about 10 seconds, Wang Shina separated from Zhang Tie. After that, she moved back one step and faintly raised her face, "Your lips were a bit dry. I daubed some lipstick on them. You saved me and I daubed your lips with my lipstick, we're even now!"

Touching his lips, Zhang Tie watched this woman with a strange look. Zhang Tie knew that she was just pretending to be calm. With his knight's consciousness, Zhang Tie could clearly sense the woman's current state——her voice was quivering; her palms were oozing sweat; her face was red and hot; her ears were as red as being cooked; even her heart was pounding like beating a drum. Besides being forceful, her kissing skill was actually clumsy.

"Even?" Zhang Tie watched Wang Shina with a strange look, "I saved your life, you daubed your lipstick on my lips. We're even?"

"What do you want then?" Wang Shina asked as she raised her head.

Before Zhang Tie replied, the truck driver had already run towards here with a concerned look, "Are you alright?"

"We're okay!" Zhang Tie answered.

The truck driver was a short, fat man. Although running a short distance, he was already panting, "Thank God, you're safe; Thank God, you're safe. My truck had just broken down. I could only park there and repair it for the time being. Your cars..."

At the sight of the two beautiful sports cars, the truck driver's face turned pale. If he was held responsible for this accident, he could not afford it even if he sold his truck. Honestly, that second-hand truck was worth a bit more than 10 gold coins at most. However, a slave like him was not even valuable than that second-hand truck.

At the sight of the truck, Zhang Tie had already known what he was thinking about.

"Don't worry. This accident has nothing to do with you, you don't need to pay for that!" Zhang Tie comforted him. After hearing Zhang Tie's word, the truck driver became reassured at once. However, another surprise was waiting for him. Zhang Tie pointed at his black Faerie-Dragon T9 and told him, "Although that car has some problem; it could still work. After repairing it, you could still sell it at a high price. As we almost brought you big trouble just now, I gift that car to you as a compensation!"

The truck driver was shocked. 'Given the wholly new body of this black Faerie-Dragon T9. Although it had some problem, it would also worth a lot after being repaired. Why would that guy gift it to me?'

Zhang Tie didn't want to explain anything to him. Instead, he just watched Wang Shina as he pointed at her car, "Get in!"

The moment Wang Shina wanted to pull open the door next to the driver's seat, she had heard, "Sit on the back!"

After hearing this, Wang Shina pouted her mouth as she sat on the back of the red Faerie-Dragon T9. After sitting on the driver's seat, Zhang Tie waved his hand towards that truck driver who was still dumbfounded outside the car. After that, he drove away.

Although he drove far away, Zhang Tie could still see that truck driver being dumbfounded there.

Wang Shina, who was sitting on the back of the car, became



silent...

Zhang Tie didn't speak; neither did Wang Shina. They just exchanged glances with each other through the same rearview mirror.

After 5-6 minutes, that woman finally asked, "What do you want?"

"Cut the crap! I saved you. According to the rules of street racers and tomboys, what do you think I want?" Zhang Tie couldn't stand to catch a glimpse of Wang Shina's big pawpaws and beautiful legs.

After realizing where Zhang Tie was looking at, Wang Shina's face blushed once again. However, she still acted in a mighty way, "So what? At most making love with you!"

Zhang Tie just replied with a smile. Wang Shina didn't say anything. Therefore, the atmosphere in the car became a bit weird.

The car soon arrived at Yiyang City. After Zhang Tie parked the car, he led her to a roadside luxurious hotel. Wang Shina then became completely frustrated. She had not imagined that Zhang Tie could bring her to such a place...

"What? You're afraid of that?" Zhang Tie watched her.

"No...no way!" Wang Shina watched Zhang Tie in a bashful way, "I...I have an apartment in Yiyang City...Can we...not...do it...here? I'm not used to this place..."

"Apartment? That's not sentimental. I'll show you a new place this time. I'm sure you will have a memorable experience!" Zhang Tie said with a glassy-eyed look.

"A memorable experience?" Wang Shina became still when she remembered Zhang Tie's terrifying "strength" as a knight. Actually, she didn't have any experience in making love.

"Will...will I...get pregnant?" Wang Shina lowered her voice as that hotel was close to her.

"Pregnant? As long as you're cooperative, you will not get pregnant!"

After thinking about those weird things that she had heard of, Wang Shina's face turned completely pale...

...

After half a minute, Zhang Tie handed Wang Shina to a team of soldiers of Hurricane Corps who were on duty near the luxurious hotel. After that, he showed his tiger-shaped plate to them.

"This woman drove on a highway at an excessively high speed. Hold her in custody and call Wang Clan to take her away!"

After being taken away by that team of soldiers of Hurricane Corps like a national treasure, Wang Shina suddenly turned around and shrieked, "B\*stard, do you know that I will leave for Taixia Country with my family members next week? Do you know why I drove alone outside there? You know nothing about that. You bastard, you idiot..."

"Don't race car in this way when you come back to Taixia Country. Follow your parents' words. Additionally, thanks for your lipstick!" Zhang Tie replied with a smile. After that, he waved his hand towards her before turning around to leave...

Watching this man's back, Wang Shina burst out into tears...

Wang Shina finally understood one thing that Zhang Tie had understood well before——Many nice things were meant to be lost...

# Chapter 797: Breaking Through Kalay Mountain Range

---

On September 3rd, south of the Kalay Mountain Range...

Watching a team of hundreds of demonized puppets in the woods, Zhang Su sprung up and rushed towards those demonized puppets as fast as a lightning bolt with a battle call. When he was 10 m away from them, he had already released his battle qi. Before the front row of demonized puppets realized what happened, they had been exploded into pieces by Zhang Su.

The demonized puppets shrieked and rushed towards Zhang Su dauntlessly...

Closely after Zhang Su, the other 7 elites of this demon hunting squad charged out of the brushwood from both sides of the hillside and darted into those demonized puppets with weapons in hands like tigers entering the flock of sheep.

In a split second, a fierce battle broke out on that hillside, which was filled with shrieks of demonized puppets and roars of human fighters...

Over the past two months, such ambush operations would break out many times a day for these senior fighters above LV 9 dispatched by Hurricane Corps in Kalay Mountain Range. However, no matter how many demonized puppets did they kill, they would always see more and more demonized puppets. As a result, they had to retreat, retreat, and retreat. During the past two months, the special elite troops of Hurricane Corps retreated all the way from the northernmost part of Kalay Mountain Range to its southernmost part. After retreating another 100 miles, they would enter the south of Blackson Humans Corridor...

During the past two months, this demon hunting squad of 10 elites had lost 2 members when they met a squad of demon corps.

They collided with each other in less than half a second. In a split second, the woods were filled with shiny blades.

The squad of demons was composed of 10 LV 9 iron-armored demons. By contrast, the demon hunting squad was composed of 9 LV 9 fighters and 1 LV 10 strong fighter.

The result of that battle was that the demon squad was cleared at the cost of losing 2 members of the demon hunting squad.

After the battle came to an end, before they started to collect their battle companion's corpses, numerous demonized puppets had appeared in the woods. Therefore, Zhang Su had to issue the order to leave. Before leaving, the only thing they could do was to light the "glorious bombs" on their battle companions. "Glorious bomb" was like a super tiny white phosphorous gel bomb, which was carried by the elite squads of Hurricane Corps. With them, the members of the squad could set a fire when needed. In this case, the "glorious bombs" would turn the corpses into ashes as soon as possible in case of being profaned by demonized puppets.

...

Like each ambush that happened before, this time, it took the elite squad less than 10 minutes to kill over 100 demonized puppets on the hillside. After that, Zhang Su had to issue the order to retreat.

More and more demonized puppets were rushing out of the woods, followed by the endless demonized puppets corps.

"Retreat!" Zhang Su issued the order while he released his battle qi and exploded some demonized puppets in front of him into pieces.

When Zhang Su brought up the rear, the other members of the elite squad quickly sprung up and broke the encircling demonized puppets while stepping on their heads and shoulders and evacuated towards southwest...

With weird shrieks, the demonized puppets kept chasing after the elite squads. However, they were gradually lagged behind. Therefore, they could only roar towards the back of the squad...

When the following demonized puppets corps arrived, the sparse corpses of demonized puppets on the hillside became the rations of the demonized puppets corps. After picking up the bloody flesh, those following demonized puppets with grim, bloody eyes kept chewing them while blood flew out of their mouth. Meanwhile, they moved towards the south.

After the elite squad disappeared behind a hill, the over 1,000 demonized puppets who kept chasing after the elite squad finally slowed down and started to move towards the south at a normal speed. These demonized puppets became the vanguard of this troop then...

After two hours, this hillside where the battle broke out just now had been covered with demonized puppets. Numerous demonized puppets moved out of the woods and poured towards the south while releasing a disgusting and terrifying smell. No living being was left wherever those demonized puppets passed by.

The same horrifying scene was happening in many places in the thousands of miles of long Kalay Mountain Range from west to east.

About 200 million demonized puppets would move out of Kalay Mountain Range and enter the south of Blackson Humans Corridor...

...

After 3 hours, Zhang Su's squad arrived at a secret supply point about 50 miles away from the battlefield just now. While the two members stood sentry, the others started to take a rest and eat food.

Zhang Su checked the wounds of the members of the squad one

after another; at the same time, he shared the remaining all-purpose medicament and pressed meat with them.

Even LV 9 fighters would also suffer wounds in such a fierce battle. Those demonized puppets showed their extremely undying vitality in such a battle. Thankfully, they were just bruised. Only one squad member had a deep wound on his shank.

After 3 hours, the periphery of the wound had started to turn black. Taking a deep breath, the wounded member cut off those black skin and flesh from his shin.

"What's the matter, Brad?" Zhang Su walked towards him and gave him a vial of all-purpose medicament. After that, he started to clean the wound for that battle companion.

"Si..." The man gritted his teeth as his forehead was oozing sweat, "A demonized puppets' head had been chopped off for quite a while so I thought it was already dead. However, when I moved to its head, I got a bite on my shin. F\*ck, it bit off a piece of flesh..."

Although being a white tough guy, he could speak Hua language very fluently.

As demonized puppets carried a special biotoxin, whenever being bitten or scratched by them or being sprinkled by their blood on one's wounds, humans would suffer a risk of being infected. Although they would not die at once, their battle force would be sharply weakened as a result.

After daubing a vial of all-purpose medicament onto Brad's wound, Zhang Su dropped his own vial of all-purpose medicament to Brad.

"Ahh, head, what about you then?" After catching the medicament, Brad asked with a bashful look.

"It's okay, I don't need it for the time being..."

Brad didn't say anything. He just raised his head and bottomed up that vial of all-purpose medicament.

"After resting for half an hour, we will evacuate..." Zhang Su issued an order after taking a look at the watch on his wrist.

Everybody knew what did the word "evacuate" mean. Therefore, they all let out a deep sigh.

It was indeed the time to evacuate. Based on the moving speed of demonized puppets, the vanguard of demonized puppets corps would enter the south of Kalay Mountain Range by the next sunrise.

After issuing the order, Zhang Su leaned against a rock and started to gnaw his pressed meat.

After fighting over 2 months in Kalay Mountain Range, the entire squad understood that they had to keep their minimal battle force so as to survive themselves no matter how many demonized puppets were in front of them. With the minimal battle force, they should at least be able to handle super iron-armored demon squads or escape. Compared to those demonized puppets, the iron-armored demon squads were real tricky forces of the super demon corps. Sometimes, iron-armored demon squads were mixed in demonized puppets; sometimes, they acted independently. Therefore, they were very tricky.

Over the past two months, Zhang Su's beard had been as long as 3 cm. His skin became a bit swarthy. Besides, he turned thinner than before. His combat uniform was so dirty that its color could almost not be identified while releasing a dense smell. All the other members of the elite squad were like him. They had not taken off their clothes during the past two months at all. Fleas could be seen on them while their hair contained white flea eggs. Even immortals would look like beggars after fighting over 2 months in such an environment.

All the elites looked like savages and beggars. However, they became more capable and vigorous than before.

By this chance, the members of the squad started to catch fleas

and insects by fingernails. They would squeeze those fleas and insects to the death. Although his eyes were closed, Zhang Su always heard faint claps "Pah" "Pah" "Pah" "Pah" beside him.

It became this squad's only interest to squeeze fleas and flea eggs by their fingernails when they were relaxing themselves during the past two months.

Only after less than 10 minutes, they had heard two cries of chickadees from afar.

The moment they heard that had all of them sprung up at once and entered the combat mode. After seeing Zhang Su's gestures, they silently formed a combat formation and moved towards the far while lowering their bodies...

...

Zhang Su and his team members ambushed behind a thorn bush at the end of the reeds on the riverside. Everybody held their breath and watched the swaying reeds silently...

Some living beings were moving towards here from the reeds. As there was a supply point in the nearby, if the arrivers were also an elite squad of Hurricane Corps, they should have sent a secret signal so as to confirm their status in case of misunderstanding.

However, there was no secret signal.

Having just cut off more than 0.5 kgs of flesh from his shin, Brad seemed to forget about the pains. Narrowing his eyes, he licked his lips and grasped tightly the black matte long sword. Meanwhile, he faintly lowered his body and prepared for launching the fatal attack towards his target.

According to the swaying reeds, they realized that the opponents might contain 5-10 living beings.

...

When the first person drilled out of the reeds, all the onlookers



became stunned.

Six people drilled out of there in total, instead of being iron-armored demons or demonized puppets. In combat uniforms, they all looked extremely fatigued.

Zhang Su's squad didn't rush towards them; instead, they just observed them in the hidden place...

A thin and short guy raised his head and sniffed forcefully before murmuring something. The other 5 people with collars over their necks then became intense at once as they prepared for defense.

"We're demon hunting squad of Guang Republic, I'm Lieutenant Colonel Prague, the head of the squad. Can the surrounding friends show yourself? As we're all humans, please give way to our brothers." A tall, tough guy muffled as he kept glancing around with shrewd eyes and ax in hand.

After making a gesture, Zhang Su and the other members stood up one after another.

"We're the 27th squad of the special elite squad of Hurricane Corps, Huaiyuan Palace, Jinyun Country. I'm Zhang Su, the head of this squad..."

Out of military etiquette, Zhang Su also revealed their background as he stood up.

Watching Zhang Su and the surrounding guys and hearing their background, those guys became reassured at once as they hushed and put away their weapons.

"Son of a b\*tch. One of your squads set a fire in the mountain over 600 miles from here. Thankfully, we ran faster than those demonized puppets; otherwise, we've long been charred flesh!" The tough guy with ax swore as he gazed at that supply bag at Zhang Su's waist and forcefully swallowed his saliva.

Zhang Su directly threw that supply bag to him, which still contained some pressed meat.

That tough guy instantly caught the supply bag and opened it. He then shared some pressed meat with his brothers. After that, he put one piece into his mouth and chewed it.

"Any more?" The tough guy asked unclearly as he chewed forcefully.

Zhang Su threw a glance at the other two team members. Two more supply bags flew towards them.

"What about your partners?"

After hearing this question, those guys became silent for a second as they stopped chewing. The tough guy replied with red eyes, "They've gone!" After that, he started to tear off his pressed meat while gritting his teeth...

Zhang Su and his team members became silent too. Over the past two months, far more than these guys of Gung Republic had sacrificed in Kalay Mountain Range...

In less than 2 minutes, those guys had eaten up their pressed meat as they looked a bit more spirited.

Watching them finishing the food, Zhang Su opened his mouth, "Where are you going? Back to Gung Republic?"

Lieutenant Colonel Prague became silent for a second before replying, "One month ago, our demon hunting squad received a piece of domestic information for the last time when Gung Republic was experiencing a large-scale riot. The president disappeared overnight. The greater part of the congressmen had escaped away. I'm afraid that Gung Republic has already perished. Since the riot broke out, our supply has been cut off. Therefore, we don't know where to go. As human fighters, we've already been conscientious and responsible. The demons will break through Kalay Mountain Range in two days. We just want to leave out of this motherf\*cking place..."

Watching their frustrated faces, Zhang Su suddenly asked, "Do

you want to join Hurricane Corps?"

"Do you want to keep fighting here?" After exchanging a glance with the others, Lieutenant Colonel asked.

"No, we will also evacuate from here. We've tried our best. We will go back to Huaiyuan Prefecture!"

"What about the future? Do you plan to fight demons to the death or leave Waii Sub-continent?"

"Leave first. We will have a chance to fight demons in the future. The holy war has just come to a start!" Zhang Su replied without any hesitation.

Prague threw a glance at his partners. After exchanging a glance with each other, they faintly nodded.

"Well, we're in!"

"After joining Hurricane Corps, the corps will make an investigation about your background. If you're innocent, you will be the official soldiers in active service of Hurricane Corps. After that, you will take the positions which could match your abilities. However, now, we have to leave out of here. You have to follow my command for the time being. Am I clear?"

"Do we have food?"

"Of course, enough food!"

"If we encounter demons, who will fight?"

"Together, I will bring up the rear!"

"I agree!" The Lieutenant Colonel Prague gave a salute to Zhang Su solemnly. Zhang Su gave one salute to him too.

After making brief introductions to each other, the two squads converged into one and evacuated towards the south...

"By the way, how did you find us just now?" Zhang Su asked Lieutenant Colonel Prague.

"Jessie, his nose has saved us more than once in Kalay Mountain Range!" Prague patted the short guy's shoulder.

...

At midnight, after 8 hours of rapid march, Zhang Su finally led the 10 people out of Kalay Mountain Range.

The moment they left Kalay Mountain Range had they felt something flying over their heads. Closely after that, they heard rumbling thunders...

All of them raised their heads as they saw six colorful meteors colliding in the sky...

'Knights' combat?' Zhang Su instantly led all the others to a hidden place as they held their breath and watched the fierce battle in the sky with widely opened eyes...

The 6 meteors were fighting in two groups, 3 ones in one group. They moved so fast just like two groups of triangles which constantly changed its shape. The colorful knight's battle qi and battle skills shot into the sky, making all the stars lose their brilliance...

After one hour, the two groups of meteors separated from each other. One group moved towards the north while the other became a bit stagnated before moving towards the south. However, when the three meteors flew above the heads of Zhang Su and the other guys, one of them suddenly lost its brilliance...

Before Zhang Su and the others realized what happened, the meteor had already appeared right a few meters above them.

"Ahh, fight them to the death!" After knowing that he was discovered by a knight, Prague became stiff all over as he was going to pull out his saber. However, he was stopped by Zhang Su at once.

In the next second, all the members of special elite squad of Hurricane Corps including Zhang Su walked out of the woods and

gave a salute to the knight, "Corps leader!"

'Corps leader?' All the other guys who had just joined Hurricane Corps were so shocked that they widely opened their mouths.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could see Zhang Su here. Therefore, he became reassured. As he descended and watched those elites of Hurricane Corps like savages and beggars, he gave a solemn salute to them.

"Well done. The No. 7 evacuation point is not far from here. There's an airship waiting for you. The 27th squad is the last batch of Hurricane Corps in Kalay Mountain Range. Hurry up. As I'm here, demons and wing demons would not arrive here for the time being. You can have a good sleep in the airship tonight!"

After hearing that Zhang Tie was going to bring up the rear for the elite squad of Hurricane Corps in the south edge of Kalay Mountain Range, all the elites became moved, including Zhang Su. With red eyes, they felt something rolling in their throats; however, they could not say it.

Everybody gave a military salute to Zhang Tie once again before continuing to evacuate towards the south.

Since the beginning, Zhang Tie and Zhang Su exchanged a glance with each other.

Zhang Tie saw them off...

With a sound of the wind, Elder Lan of Lan Clan who had met Zhang Tie in Selnes Theater of Operations and an elder of Ou Clan had arrived at Zhang Tie's sides.

They both watched Zhang Tie with a dubious look.

The two elders also noticed the squad of soldiers downside here just now; however, they didn't understand why Zhang Tie came down here.

Zhang Tie revealed a smile towards the two elders, "Zhang Su,

my cousin was here. I came to greet him and let them go back as soon as possible!"

Although it was not difficult for a knight to identify people downside there; however, Zhang Tie did it when he was in a 3-in-1 state. It was amazing.

Elder Lan and Elder Ou found an amazed look from the opponent's eyes.

"The vanguard of demonized puppets would enter the south of Kalay Mountain Range tomorrow. After staying in the south edge of Kalay Mountain Range for over 2 months, it should be the last night we stay here. Two squads of Lan Clan are still inside. I'm afraid they've already sacrificed. After tonight, we will go back to Jinyun Country and arrange Lan's corps to evacuate from Waii Sub-continent. We should leave out of here sooner or later!" Elder Lan let out a sigh.

Elder Ou faintly nodded, "As we've lost the support of humans, we should leave out of here as soon as possible."

Watching the gloomy Kalay Mountain Range in the far, Zhang Tie faintly frowned as he nodded. Over the past two months, the situation in the southern human countries had been deteriorating. When the vanguard of demonized puppets corps entered the south of Waii Sub-continent tomorrow, it would be the last straw which crushed the camel...

Zhang Tie didn't know what would happen after tomorrow. There was one point that he was sure of that more and more people would die after tomorrow...

# Chapter 798: Secondary Mutation

---

Zhang Tie and the other two knights of Jinyun Country had already encamped on the south edge of Kalay Mountain Range for over one month.

At such a critical moment, as knights on Waii Sub-continent, although they would not fight demon corps and demon general to the death, they also had a lot of things to do. They could at least prevent some knights of demons and Three-eye Association clans from passing over Kalay Mountain Range and threatening southern human countries in a period.

As the demon general had suffered losses twice from humans in front of Nein City and Upton City, it chose to steadily push forward with demonized puppets as the vanguard of the corps this time. Besides, the knights of demons and Three-eye Association became relatively prudent in actions. As a result, the knights of humans and the knights of demons and Three-eye Association had been in a stalemate for over one month.

As the demon general felt that he would definitely win the battle this time, he didn't expect to risk dangers with precious knights and soldiers of demon corps in case of falling in the trap of humans once again.

In the eyes of the demon general, the corps of about 200 million demonized puppets could overwhelm everything. Therefore, the minimal cost for them to occupy Blackson Humans Corridor was to have its elites follow the demonized puppets corps.

For human knights in southern countries, few of them would like to fight the knights of demons and Three-eye Association clans to the death.

If not because of the special honor and responsibilities of knights, most of the human knights might have left Waii Sub-continent.

On September 4th, the vanguard of demonized puppets had exited Kalay Mountain Range completely, which indicated a worse situation facing southern countries...

Right on the same day, Zhang Tie and the other human knights started to evacuate from the south edge of Kalay Mountain Range...

After retreating hundreds of miles, Zhang Tie, Elder Lan Yuchen and Elder Ou Geqing finally boarded a fury-level airship and returned to Jinyun Country.

Like how knights of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace used the character " 穆 1 " as the exclusive middle character of their official appellations, knights of Lan Clan of Banxin Palace used " 玉 2 " as the exclusive middle character of their official appellations while knights of Ou Clan of Chuixue Palace used " 戈 3 " as the exclusive middle character of their official appellations. None of the other clans' knights could use characters "穆", "玉" and "戈" as the middle characters of their official appellations.

Although Zhang Tie could fly all the way to Jinyun Country, he was not that stupid to expose such a shocking ability to the public at this moment.

The airship which would carry the three knights back to Huaiyuan Prefecture was waiting for them in Silverpine City, the capital city of Riska Duchy, a small country in the south of Kalay Mountain Range. When they left Silverpine City by that airship, the entire city had become empty except for the 40,000 city guards.

When the airship lifted off, all the 40,000 city guards then saw off this airship while chesting out and giving a salute to the airship.

Standing on the deck of the airship, Zhang Tie watched the city guards in Silverpine City with complex moods.



These city guards had to sacrifice themselves here. They stayed here to fight demons to the death so that their family members could have a chance to leave Waii Sub-continent.

Each one who stayed here could have 5 of their family members leave Waii Sub-continent. There were 20 days'grains left in this city for these city guards. As long as they blocked the demonized puppets for 7 days, they could escape.

Many soldiers saw a faint hope of "7 days". Actually, as Zhang Tie had experienced the battle in Selnes Theater of Operations, he knew that these city guards could at most stand 3 days even if they used the city-defense facilities of Silverpine City to resist demons, not to mention 7 days. Therefore, these guys could barely survive themselves. Additionally, they could only stop a small part of the total demonized puppets. More demonized puppets would continue marching southwards while ignoring the existence of this city.

All the other human cities in the south of Kalay Mountain Range adopted the same simulative policy to encourage their soldiers to stay in their cities to fight demons even in the previous two holy wars.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether this policy was fair or not. All those human soldiers who stayed here to fight demons had common family conditions. None of the rich or powerful guys would like to stay to fight demons to the death. Additionally, policymakers had to make a decision when not everyone could leave out of here safe and sound. In such a critical moment, they had to follow the purest survival of law by exchanging lives for lives. It was icy yet realistic. No sacrifice, no new lives. Everything complied with the simplest numbers game—as one soldier could at least eliminate 5 enemies with the advantage of city-defense weapons and city walls, they could have 5 of their relatives leave.

Those commoners or their family members, who would not like to stay to defend cities, would have a rare chance to survive

themselves if they wanted to leave Waii Sub-continent. They would be killed by demons or had to escape to the wilderness which was not marked on the map or had not been explored by humans for good luck.

The so-called phrases like priceless life or life's dignity became especially ridiculous at this moment.

In holy wars, humans realized that lives could be bought at the lowest prices. The poorer the humans were, the cheaper their lives would be.

As a knight who grew up from a grassroot, Zhang Tie couldn't recover his composure for a long time when he realized that numerous grassroots were destined to be killed by demons.

"Come on in the cabin. It's their own choice. Even though we are knights, we can do nothing for them. An individual's strength is too trivial in the holy war. If you want to master more people's fates, you have to be more powerful!" Elder Yuchen persuaded Zhang Tie in a low voice as he seemed to have sensed Zhang Tie's complex moods.

Tightly clenching his fists, Zhang Tie took a deep breath. Closely after that, he entered the cabin together with Elder Lan.

'If you want to master more people's fates, you have to be more powerful!'——Zhang Tie kept this word deep in mind.

After entering his own berth cabin, Zhang Tie instantly entered elements realm to start his cultivation.

...

After 3 days, the fury-level airship landed in a city for supply. At midnight, Zhang Tie suddenly heard a rustle outside the airship. Therefore, he exited the elements realm. After that, he pushed open the hatch and walked out to take a look.

Almost at the same time, Elder Lan Yuchen and Elder Ou Geqing also ended their cultivation and walked out of their own cabins.

The three knights then exchanged a glance with each other.

"Let's take a look on the deck!" Elder Geqing suggested.

When they came to the deck, they saw the night was tinged with a glow of flames. The entire city was in a chaos while a riot and a killing spree were fermenting in the night. Like fangs of poisonous snakes, they stabbed into the nerve center of this city while injecting their venom in it, causing everything to go berserk.

The captain of the airship hurriedly rushed to the deck with a solemn look.

"Sir, a riot is breaking out in Xinwu City. More and more mobs were gathering outside the airship base!"

"How long will it take the airship to finish its supply?" Zhang Tie asked.

"1.5 hours!"

"Tell the crew to prepare for the attack. Finish the supply and set off as soon as possible!" Zhang Tie issued the order.

"Yes, sir!" The captain gave a salute to Zhang Tie. Closely after that, he rushed back to convey Zhang Tie's instructions.

"Sometimes, humans are more terrifying than demons!" Elder Ou Geqing shook his head as he watched the grim flames in the distance.

"Many people would die in each holy war. In the second holy war, 1/5 of the total number of corpses were from humans. Greed, fear, desire, hatred, all this made humans more terrifying than demons!" Elder Lan Yuchen said with full wisdom, "Facing demons, if humans don't have a cohesiveness, the greater part of them will kill each other before the arrival of demons!"

"Therefore, we have to go back to Taixia Country!" Ou Geqing put it straight, "This young generation is not qualified to cooperate with."

Elder Lan Yuchen nodded.

Narrowing his eyes, Zhang Tie watched the flames outside the airship base silently...

...

One hour later, before the airship finished its supply, the periphery of the airship base had been broken through by mobs. When the walls were pushed down, over 10,000 mobs poured in with torches and weapons.

Under the leadership of a commissioned officer, a team of soldiers blocked those mobs.

Watching these full-armored soldiers, those mobs became stagnated.

"Outsiders are forbidden in this prohibited military zone..." a commissioned officer in glasses shouted towards those mobs. Closely after saying this, he turned around and issued an order to his subordinates, "These people are citizens of Xinwu City. They are not demons. You're not allowed to move without my consent!"

Those armored soldiers with spears exchanged glances with each other.

The mobs slowed down; however they still kept moving closer towards these soldiers.

"There are airships and we also have the right to leave..." A leader of the mobs shouted to instigate others to swarm up.

"You can leave. However, this airship is not available to you. You have no right to use it..." That young commissioned officer in glasses reproached with a solemn look, "Please stop, don't move closer!"

"We just want to survive ourselves. We're the citizens of Xinwu City. We're also entitled to leave out of here..." The leader of mobs tore off his buttons and exposed his chest. Closely after that, he

patted his chest and kept moving forward, "You've not even killed one demon. Do you think it is reasonable to let us bleed for you? Come on! Kill me! Kill us! We're all citizens of Xinwu City. Come on! Kill us..."

"Repeat. Please stop. This is the prohibited military zone..." The young commissioned officer in a pair of glasses shouted once again with sweat all over his forehead. He attempted to make more people hear his words. Watching those mobs moving closer, those soldiers behind him became restless.

When they were only a few meters away from each other, the young commissioned officer in glasses still stretched his arms and shouted...

"Take easy, easy. As the demons have not arrived here, you also have a chance to leave. Xinwu City should not be chaotic at this moment..."

With weird eyes, the head of mobs suddenly sprung up with a dagger in hand. In the next 0.1 second, he forcefully stabbed into the commissioned officer's heart. Widely opening his eyes, the commissioned officer watched that mob, who patted his chest with a generous look and had just stabbed into his heart with a dagger with widely opened eyes, spurting out blood.

Although the young commissioned officer wanted to say something, he failed to do that.

With an extremely grim look, the head of mobs drew out his dagger and stabbed into the neck of that young commissioned officer, who didn't allow soldiers to attack him just now. He then fell down together with that commissioned officer.

Blood spurted out of the commissioned officer's neck and sprayed over the face of the head of mobs. Watching someone launching the attack, all the other mobs swarmed up and covered those soldiers in the airship base all of a sudden.

In such a short distance, as long as the soldiers who were holding spears lost their initiative, they were destined to experience a miserable loss facing the mobs whose number was many times more than that of theirs.

...

After stabbing dozens of times over the body of that young commissioned officer in glasses, the face of the head of the mobs was completely covered with the blood from the neck of that young commissioned officer.

The mob head got up and broke the pair of glasses into pieces by his foot. After that, he wiped off the blood over his face. He then drew out the sword from the waist of that young commissioned officer before roaring, "Go get them. As long as you get the airships here, you will leave. Keep the crew alive and have them serve us. Kill all the others!"

The head mob raised his arm as numerous citizens rushed towards those airships.

...

Standing on the high deck of one airship, Zhang Tie just watched the chaotic scene in the far. He saw how that young commissioned officer was killed and fell down in front of those people whom he wanted to protect.

Zhang Tie's face gradually turned gloomy...

...

The huge body of fury-level airship looked outstanding among all those small and medium-sized airships in the airship base.

At the sight of fury-level airship where Zhang Tie was in, some head mobs' eyes brightened. After exchanging a glance with each other, they ran towards here at once.

The retinue of that airship had formed a cordon around that

airship.

This airship was the war airship of Hurricane Corps, which was the exclusive traffic tool of the corps leader. Each one of the crew was a powerhouse. There were many fighters above LV 10 inside the airship. Sensing those guys' iron-blood battle qi and shiny weapons, those mobs who ran over here became stagnated at once.

"We're citizens of Xinwu City. This city has been taken over by the Citizens Committee. We will expropriate your airship!" The head mob watched that beautiful fury-level airship with greedy eyes as he slowed down.

"Stop!" A black-face commissioned officer shouted icily.

"I've told you, this place has been taken over by our Citizens Committee..." The head mob shouted as he moved forward with greedy eyes.

"Ready!" The black-face commissioned officer of Hurricane Corps just raised his arm and ordered those soldiers to get ready for the coming combat.

With a sound of "Huala", all the soldiers around that airship strode one step forward and targeted their bright weapons towards those mobs who were moving towards them.

At the sight of this, those mobs stopped.

"What? You want to slaughter the citizens..." The head mob kept urging in the same trick as he tore off his clothes and exposed his chest, "Come on, come on, come on..."

Those mobs echoed.

Elder Lan and Elder Ou then looked at Zhang Tie...

With a glassy-eyed look, Zhang Tie just raised his hand while a battle qi flew off his finger and blew up this head mob into pieces.

Zhang Tie issued an order icily, "As they are influencing the supply of the airship, kill those within 50 m range of the airship!"

Soon after Zhang Tie's words, those soldiers of Hurricane Corps had charged towards those front mobs like how a tiger entered a flock of sheep. In a split second, those leading mobs had been chopped off their heads.

In less than 2 minutes, all the mobs being less than 50 m away from the airship had been swept while their corpses covered the periphery of the airship. All the other mobs just cried and ran away. When they found those guards of that airship didn't chase after them, they started to watch those dead partners who had turned into corpses within 50 m of that airship. Nobody of them dared approach that airship again...

After half an hour, the airship finished its supply. All the crew and guards boarded. Under the gaze of those mobs, The fury-level airship left for Huaiyuan Palace...

...

After passing by Kalay Mountain Range, the demon corps rolled towards the south like a fierce flood...

As a result, human cities were collapsed one after another; human countries perished one after another. The entire Waii Sub-continent quivered under the overwhelming attack of demons. Men and beasts were involved in calamities...

The Hurricane Corps in Huaiyuan Prefecture started to evacuate by batches...

By the latter part of October, the greater part of countries and regions in the south of Kalay Mountain Range had collapsed.

By the end of November, some major Hua clans in the north of Jinyun Country had evacuated completely...

Zhang Tie had also made preparations for the final combat.

...

On November 23, in the temporary palace of the corps leader of



Hurricane Corps...

"The 1st company of the vanguard of the demon corps has already arrived at the north bank of Yuanjiang River one hour ago..." The director of the temporary palace hurriedly came to the office of the corps leader and reported it to Zhang Tie calmly.

Zhang Tie put away his remote-sensing crystal. Just now, he had contacted his elder brother. His family members were concerned about him very much. In the late month, Zhang Tie's mom requested Zhang Tie's elder brother to contact Zhang Tie three times a day for the sake of Zhang Tie's safety.

"The garrisons of Hurricane Corps boarded right away. Be ready to leave in 2 hours..."

"Yes, sir!" The director of the temporary palace gave a salute to Zhang Tie before turning around quickly.

Zhang Tie stood up and glanced over this office for the last time as he prepared to leave...

Right then, Heller, who had not contacted him for a long time, uttered in Zhang Tie's mind, "Castle Lord, there's a news I think you should know!"

Zhang Tie kept walking forward as he asked Heller in mind, "Go ahead?"

"The mutated ptomaine miasma that you sent in Castle of Black Iron last time has already accomplished its secondary mutation..."

Zhang Tie was shocked as he stopped his footsteps...

# Chapter 799: Leave and Return

---

It was quiet and solemn at the piers of Yiyang Harbor. Besides the last batch of soldiers of Hurricane Corps, tens of thousands of citizens of Yiyang City would leave by the fleet. After leaving, the entire Yiyang City and the three cities in Huaiyuan Prefecture would almost become empty.

If demons could arrive here, it meant that the entire Waii Sub-continent would collapse by then. Zhang Tie felt that it was meaningless to see over 100,000 people die in the three hopeless cities only to consume a few times more demonized puppets. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't arrange "volunteers" to safeguard the three cities. He had all of them transported away.

A row of huge ships which varied from 10,000 tons to 1 million tons were anchored at the piers while passengers were walking towards their targeted ships silently.

After all of them boarded, the ships left for the east with whistles.

In front of some 1 million-ton huge ships, passengers were boarding in long queues. They were not holding tickets which had certain prices; instead, each one of them was holding a contract in Hua and Hebrew languages with their fingerprint on it. In this contract, they agreed to give up a part of their freedom and rights, to live in some lower provinces or remote places on the Eastern Continent and follow the partial arrangement of Party A.

Everything had two sides. Although it was a disaster for Waii Sub-continent, it was the best chance for numerous major clans, business groups, even local governments in lower provinces and remote places of Taixia Country to gain labor resources at the cheapest price and carry out fundamental development in their wild and barren land.

This policy was called "serving the border areas" in Taixia

Country.

As a national policy in Taixia Country, in each holy war, Taixia Country would gain a lot of foreigners from other Sub-continents. These foreigners would be used to reclaim their wastelands.

Most of the wastelands were in lower provinces of Taixia or more primitive, wild provinces.

Taixia Country had already formulated a complete package of laws and mechanism so as to ensure the smooth implementation of this national policy.

In holy wars, the labor force was also a special, powerful resource. Those foreigners who headed for border areas of Taixia Country might not be able to fight on battlefields; however, as long as they were alive, they would be valuable by doing labor work or delivering babies.

In Taixia Country, whenever the holy war broke out, "serving the border areas" would become a big business. Those major clans which were ambitious to expand their clans' territories in Taixia Country and make a pile would focus on these foreigners.

When they arrived at Taixia, although these foreigners were not slaves, they were only one level higher than slaves. They were inhabitants in border areas of Taixia Country.

It was a trade for these foreigners to become inhabitants in border areas of Taixia Country. Those major clans and business groups took them away from dangerous sub-continents and avoided them from being killed by demons. As a compensation, they needed to serve those people on the contract as members of the "serving the border areas" contingent in Taixia Country. They would contribute their loyalty, sweat, wisdom even lives to Taixia Country.

Since the start of this holy war, those huge ships had been constantly arriving at Yiyang Harbor to do the business of "serving

the border areas". Half a year ago, this phenomenon reached its climax. They left Yiyang Harbor each day with 10,000-100,000 non-Hua people towards Taixia Country for "serving the border areas".

About 700,000 non-Hua people were transported to Youzhou Province of Taixia Country from Huaiyuan Palace. Most of them were talented workers, technicians, engineers and handicraftsmen.

Over the past half a year, as the corps leader of Hurricane Corps, Zhang Tie's most important responsibility was to ensure that those "serving the border areas" ships could return with full loads smoothly.

Those "serving the border areas" ships had made agreements with Huaiyuan Palace. In this business, Huaiyuan Palace made great profits.

Zhang Tie's responsibility was to save as more people as possible while ensuring the interest of Huaiyuan Palace.

Not everybody could serve the border areas of Taixia Country as they would. In such a critical moment, it became an extravagant desire, a welfare which could save their lives and a special treatment for many commoners to become inhabitants in border areas of Taixia Country. Those who could have the access to serve the border areas in Taixia Country were those whose family members were left to resist demons in their own cities. These people hated demons; meanwhile, they knew that it was a rare chance for them to leave Waii Sub-continent. Therefore, they would especially treasure the chance to serve the border areas of Taixia Country. For those people, they would be satisfied as long as they could arrive at Taixia Country and live steadily and safely with the protection of Taixia Country, the most powerful human country in this age.

Compared to those commoners displaced by the war, the hard

work that they should do in the border areas of Taixia Country was nothing serious at all. They had long deleted the words "hard work" and "tired" from their life dictionary.

As long as they boarded the "serving the border areas" ships, the kids would be separated from their parents. Take a 1 million-ton huge ship Flyingwhale as an instance, the moment the ship set off, those kids would be taken into different classrooms in different sizes. Each kid would get an exercise book and a pencil when they entered the classroom. A 60-year-old black-skinned teacher in glasses with gray hair wrote two Hua characters on the blackboard by chalk——太夏!

After experiencing so many troubles with their family members, these kids were maturer than those of the same age. Although hundreds of kids were in this classroom, it was pretty quiet.

After writing down the two characters, that black-skinned teacher turned around and watched those kids whose age ranged from 7 to 15 years old and spoke in Hebrew.

"When the ship sets off, each inch of the deck and cabin in this ship belongs to Taixia Country. You're already standing on the land of Taixia Country. Taixia has become your homeland. From today on, you have to learn everything about Taixia Country from me before you disembark. After disembarking, you will find that the more Hua words you learn, the better life you will have than others in the future and the faster you will upgrade from your current class to the mainstream society of Hua people and gain more social respect and approval. I hope you to upgrade from your current status as inhabitants in border areas to the official citizens of Taixia Country. I hope you could expand broader space for your families and your kids in the future." That teacher said as he watched those kids. He knew that these kids might not understand his words for the time being. However, they would understand it sooner or later. He then turned around and pointed at the two characters on the blackboard by his pointer, "Read after me——

TAIXIA..."

"TAIXIA"—Hundreds of kids read after him in a non-fluent way.

"This is where we're heading for. The greatest and most prosperous human country in this age and the only human country which could defeat demons. Without Taixia Country on the back, there would be no human. If you left Taixia by chance in the future and if someone asked you which country did you come from, you could tell him loudly that you come from Taixia Country. Read after me——TAIXIA"

"TAIXIA"

This time, these kids had a more accurate pronunciation.

After half an hour, the teacher started to check the two Hua characters "太夏" on their exercise books. The one with the best characters and the most accurate pronunciation would gain an apple as a reward.

Watching that red apple, all the kids' eyes brightened up.

...

At night, the last huge ship where Zhang Tie was in left Yiyang Harbor, which meant that the entire Yiyang City was deserted.

Standing on the deck, Zhang Tie watched this city which was going to be occupied by demons with a strange eye light.

...

After the fleet had set off Waii Sub-continent and sailed 3 days on the vast ocean towards the Eastern Continent being escorted by Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie knew that the fleet would not be raided by demon knights anymore. Therefore, he declared his decision to the commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps.

After declaring this decision, Zhang Tie revealed a smile towards the confused and shocked commissioned officers, "I've already

contacted the other elders of Huaiyuan Palace and told them about my decision. It was my honor to be the corps leader of Hurricane Corps these couple of years and stick to the end on Waii Sub-continent with you. Your performance is perfect. Honestly, I don't think that I'm a good corps leader. Thankfully, I'm reassured after taking you out of there. When you arrive at Youzhou Province, you will have a new corps leader and a new start. I have one sentence for you, "With your fists, you could launch a more powerful strike tomorrow!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie stood up and gave a military salute to all the commissioned officers of the corps.

Facing the silent gaze and solemn salute, Zhang Tie put his tiger-shaped military plate of Hurricane Corps on the table of the conference room before turning around to leave.

After leaving the conference room, Zhang Tie found Donder who was also in this huge ship and told Donder about his plan, as a kind of farewell.

After hearing Zhang Tie's decision, Donder sprung up at once. Being driven extremely furious, he directly pointed at Zhang Tie's nose with a red face and swore him regardless of Zhang Tie's current noble status, just like how he blamed Zhang Tie in Blackhot City as Zhang Tie's boss, "Do you know how many knights do demons and Three-eye Association have? Do you know that the demon general could kill you multiple times by just one hand? Do you really think that you're unrivaled after becoming a bullsh\*t knight? Do you think you're the incarnation of the savior or what? Or do you think that you've already formed 3-5 chakras? How could this father have such a stupid student like you? How could you make such a stupid choice?"

Zhang Tie wiped off the saliva that Donder sprayed on his face and gave a big hug to Donder. As a result, Donder could not even move. He then forcefully patted Donder's shoulder and told him in a low voice, "Don't worry. I will not die. I've not even seen my

wives and kids on the Eastern Continent yet. How could I die on Waii Sub-continent?"

"Why do you..."

"Trust me!"

Watching Zhang Tie's face seriously, Donder finally let out a sigh, "If you really want to go back, I have one sentence to tell you. You'd better always keep it in mind!"

"What's that?"

"If you die, another man would definitely make love with your women and have your kids!"

Zhang Tie's face twitched as he replied, "Why not say something good?"

"Good words cannot hurt your soul!" Donder said with a solemn look.

F\*ck——

Zhang Tie almost wanted to give up his plan after hearing Donder's words. However, after struggling for a while, Zhang Tie finally stuck to his plan. 'I have to do this.'

Nobody else knew that Zhang Tie would leave except for Donder and those senior commissioned officers of Hurricane Corps...

After leaving the fleet, Zhang Tie returned to Waii Sub-continent without any concern...



# Chapter 800: The Reappearance of Gorath

---

The winter grew increasingly colder. In late December, it was snowing heavily. The river in the upper reach of Yuanjiang River in the territory of Qilan Country had already been frozen. The cold wave spread over Blackhot Humans Corridor. Additionally, the demonized puppets corps which had wandered in the south bank of Yuanjiang River for over one month finally stepped on the frozen river and rushed into the territory of Qilan Country like black locusts.

When the first batch of demonized puppets rushed over Yuanjiang River, the demon general was standing on a hill in the south bank of Yuanjiang River. The bloody cape of demon general flew in the chilly north wind and sounded like fierce flames, which looked terrifying. The snowflakes had been vaporized by its invisible battle qi before falling on its body...

Watching more and more demonized puppets crossing over Yuanjiang River, the demon general became extremely ambitious.

He finally conquered this sub-continent.

The current situation was not the best one as was designed by the demon general. According to the best design, at least over 300 million humans were preserved on Waii Sub-continent at this moment. Under the rule of Three-eye Associations, the 300 million humans would release a great war potential. Under the rule of demon general, the demon corps and those Three-eye Association clans would constantly occupy the entire Waii Sub-continent and all the nearby human territories and countries; turn this sub-continent into a fortress that could constantly confront humans and consume humans' strength on the ground.

However, all these illusions vanished at this moment.

Everything had to be paid.

The price of gaining 200 million demonized puppets was to overdraft and consume the war potential across this sub-continent under the rule of demons and Three-eye Association.

Demonized puppets were the best gears of war. However, they could not be created without humans as raw materials or deliver to babies. To put it straight, they could not even match the lowest-end beasts. By contrast, humans had endless creative thoughts and imaginations which were what demons lacked.

Humans could smelt metals and invent various machines and tools. They could also build cities and make overall yet detailed plans about everything. They could even create poems, music and beautiful drawings. However, demonized puppets could not do it. More than that, demonized puppets could not do many other things that humans could do. All the demons were very jealous of all these instincts of humans.

Through the so-called holy wars, demons and their human agencies would force humans to be their slaves and take humans' wisdom and talents even secrets in their bloodlines and genes whenever they wanted. Only in this way could demons grow brilliant and powerful and restore the honor of their ancestors. This was the most solemn pledge that each demon had made towards the supreme demon god. It was the mission and fate for each knight of demons and Three-eye Association to conquer humans.

The demon general moved its eyes away from Yuanjiang River and looked to the east. Waii Sub-continent was just a beginning of the holy war. The most powerful enemy of demons was on the vast Eastern Continent.

The north bank of Yuanjiang River was just a corner of the southernmost part of Waii Sub-continent. However, as the power that once occupied this corner came from Eastern Continent, it was of a special importance for demons knights and demon corps to occupy this corner.

As for the demon general, only when they could drive all the forces of Hua people away from Waii Sub-continent or exterminate them would they really win the war on this sub-continent and the demon general itself have a sense of achievement and pride.

Like a ritual, it was of a special importance for demonized puppets to cross over Yuanjiang River in the eyes of the demon general.

At this moment, all the major clans of Three-eye Association and the remaining 16 knights of demons and Three-eye Association were standing behind the demon general.

All the clans' heads and major figures of Three-eye Association clans just watched the demon general silently. Although they had long dreamed of this day, they didn't feel happy at this moment.

Compared to rule humans, it was much boring and meaningless to rule beasts. They didn't even regard it as a real victory. As long as they thought that they would only have a few domestic slaves to serve them, even need to use a lot of their own subordinates to do a lot of things, it became an extravagant hope for them to build large-scale luxurious palaces and residences. Their hearts pounded as such a living standard could not even match that before the holy war.

'Is this the so-called power? If there's no servant, what is such power used for?'

"When we consolidate our rule in Waii Sub-continent, we will transport humans slaves from other demon areas and have this sub-continent thrive once again. In only dozens of years, you will enjoy your high position and great wealth once again..." The demon general didn't turn around; however, he knew what these Three-eye Association clans were thinking about.

Those Three-eye Association clans became shocked. Almost at the same time, they all bowed towards the demon general in an impassioned way, "Compared to the great undertakings of the holy

war, such a bit sacrifice and payment was nothing. It would take us less than 100 years to conquer all the humans. By then, we will reach our heyday!"

"Hahahaha..." The demon general burst out into laughter as he turned around and asked, "How many people are resisting us in Qilan Country on the south bank of Yuanjiang River?"

"Qilan Country is much smaller than Jinyun Country. It's ruled by only two major Hua clans. This country only has 11 cities. Among those cities, besides a bit more people left in the capital city of Qilan Country, each of the other cities has about 30,000-50,000 people. They want to consume our strength with the city-defense equipment. Besides Qilan Country, 3 cities of Norman Empire are still resisting on the south bank of Yuanjiang River..." A Three-eye Association clan head bowed and replied.

"What about Huaiyuan Palace? Are there any people in Huaiyuan Palace's cities resisting us?" The demon general released a shrewd eye light.

"Hua people are too cunning. Huaiyuan Palace's strength had been evacuated from Jinyun Country last month. Nobody was left except for some empty cities!"

"Isn't there a young knight of Huaiyuan Palace called Zhang Tie?" the demon general suddenly asked.

"Yes! It's said that Zhang Tie is the youngest knight in Huaiyuan Palace. Because he discovered a tower of time underground Kalay Mountain Range and stayed inside it for a period, he promoted to a knight at a young age! However, after promoting to a knight, this guy seemed to have no achievement. He was just appointed as the corps leader of Hurricane Corps by Huaiyuan Palace. He's always in cultivation. A few months ago, he cooperated with each of the other two clans' elders of Jinyun Country in the south edge of Kalay Mountain Range to block our knights from going southwards. His battle force is common. He's cultivating the "Five-

elements Ground-look Sutra". It seems that he has just entered a stable state. This guy had even been captured by Senel Clan in Selnes Theater of Operations. Later on, he escaped away..." The clan elder who replied to the demon general in a despised way didn't understand why the demon general would care about such a common human knight.

'Common battle force?' The demon general faintly frowned. There was always one concern in its mind. Outside Upton City, its subordinate knight chased after Zhang Tie and had been disappeared from then on. It would never believe that a guy who had just promoted to a knight and cultivated "Five-elements Ground-look Sutra" could kill its man. It was also a miracle for that guy to escape away from a knight. Although its subordinate might be trapped underground, the demon general preferred to believe that the Hua knight called Zhang Tie had some secrets.

'At that time, Zhang Tie had not promoted to a knight. It seemed to be a bit abrupt for him to appear on the battlefield outside Upton City. Additionally, he seemed to be excessively powerful than he looked.' The demon general didn't know whether that guy had gained the special treatment from Huaiyuan Palace. As Hua people had so many trump cards, even demons were afraid of that. Not knowing why, every time Zhang Tie came to its mind, the demon general would feel fretful.

The demon general's fret finally turned into a killing intent. Its eyes instantly turned bloody. Watching his subordinate knights, he pointed at the south bank of Yuanjiang River and issued his destructive order, "There're 14 human cities resisting us. Today, we will sweep over those human cities and draw a period for the battle on this sub-continent!"

Those knights behind the demon general exchanged a glance with each silently. Closely after that, they shot into the sky and flew towards the south bank of Yuanjiang River.

With three demon knights in one group, they flew towards the

capital city of Qilan Country. The remaining 13 Three-eye Association knights flew towards different human cities respectively.

In the eyes of the demon general and all the other knights of demons and Three-eye Association clans, they would win the last victory smoothly. Based on the battle forces of knights, each knight could conquer a human city which was only defended by tens of thousands of common soldiers. Additionally, it was time for the knights of demon corps and Three-eye Association to lose their temper which had accumulated over the past half a year. In order to prevent from being raided by Gorath, all the knights under the rule of demon general moved in a relatively conservative way over the past half a year; especially those knights of Three-eye Association, who had been driven mad by Gorath. If not lose their temper at this time, they might even shake their conviction.

'Gorath!' The demon general gritted his teeth as he thought about this name...

Over the past half a year, Gorath didn't appear anymore. Based on Gorath's style, everybody guessed that Gorath had long left Waii Sub-continent after realizing that demons had destroyed the entire north territory of Waii Sub-continent and had poured in the south.

So did the demon general.

The demon general made his decision that he would definitely eat Gorath alive if he saw him in the future.

After those knights flew off, the demon general, Three-eye Association clans and that super demon corps slowly crossed over Yuanjiang River. Following after tens of millions of demonized puppets, they just walked towards the first city of Qilan Country like having been the winner.

The demon general didn't know that when his subordinate knights flew towards different cities on the north bank of

Yuanjiang River, a thunder hawk also flew off a mountain range from afar towards the south bank of Yuanjiang River...

In winters, birds would barely find their preys. There were many kinds of eagles hovering in the sky; especially in the wild; therefore, the demon general was unable to trace each bird's movement.

Only after two hours, the demon general was slapped loudly once again; meanwhile, all the Three-eye Association clans became depressed once again...

A knight of Three-eye Association who was raiding Qihai City sent an SOS through the remote-sensing crystal. It met Gorath who was thought to never appear again.

After sending that SOS, the knight of Three-eye Association lost its contact with the demon general...

When they realized that Gorath was always hiding on their side, all the Three-eye Association clans were shocked and looked pale. The demon general roared while snowflakes within dozens of meters flew backward.

At this moment, the demon general acted like a horny beast whose erecting genital was chopped off by someone when it wanted to mate with a female beast. After that, the opponent even sprayed a handful of salt over its wound.

What an extremely insidious, vicious and shameless Gorath...

"I will kill you, kill you..." The demon general shot to the sky. At the same time, he ordered all the other knights of demons and Three-eye Association to hunt for Gorath in all directions...

This time, the demon general swore to tear Gorath into pieces wherever Gorath escaped to...

Even mud men had soil's attributes, let alone the demon general.

After being humiliated and deceived by Gorath for so many

times, the demon general finally had enough.

Very few of people who were standing on the medals podium or in the winner's position could stand being slapped mercilessly at this moment.

After releasing its battle qi completely, the demon general flew towards Qihai City like a burning meteor even in the daytime...

Only after half an hour, before he arrived at Qihai City, the demon general had already received another message sent from his subordinate——soon after Gorath killed the knight of Three-eye Association who raided Qihai City, he had been noticed by the other knight of Three-eye Association who came from Yunzhou Province on his back. Gorath didn't mean to fight the second knight. Being chased by that Three-eye Association knight, he was flying towards the ocean.

After receiving this news, the demon general and all the other knights of demons and Three-eye Association clans became spirited. Taking a vial of medicament in the air, they accelerated once again at the same time...

...



# Table of Contents

## [Castle of Black Iron](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 701: The Three-in-One Strength](#)

[Chapter 702: In the Deep Underground](#)

[Chapter 703: An Unknown World](#)

[Chapter 704: Tower of Time](#)

[Chapter 705: Being Accompanied by Lonely Stars](#)

[Chapter 706: Promoting to a Knight](#)

[Chapter 707: Off the Tower](#)

[Chapter 708: The Battle of Knights](#)

[Chapter 709: A New Start](#)

[Chapter 710: A Shock](#)

[Chapter 711: A Misunderstanding](#)

[Chapter 712: The Mountain of Brightness](#)

[Chapter 713: The Black Iron Effect](#)

[Chapter 714: The Negotiation](#)

[Chapter 715: Picking off Stars](#)

[Chapter 716: Returning to Huaiyuan Palace](#)

[Chapter 717: Elders](#)

[Chapter 718: A Great Plan](#)

[Chapter 719: Rotating Chakra Ceremony](#)

[Chapter 720: A Party in the Old Mansion](#)

[Chapter 721: Innocent Words](#)

[Chapter 722: One Dragon](#)

[Chapter 723: Revenge in Demon Snake Island](#)

[Chapter 724: A Clean-up](#)

[Chapter 725: A Falling Pillar](#)

[Chapter 726: Sword Sage](#)

[Chapter 727: A Hitchhike](#)

[Chapter 728: On the Way](#)

[Chapter 729: Shocking the Ice and Snow Wilderness](#)

[Chapter 730: Protection](#)

[Chapter 731: A Bloodless Battle](#)

[Chapter 732: A Hot Welcome](#)

[Chapter 733: The Gentle Strength-Supreme Protection](#)

[Chapter 734: The Sacred Light Empire](#)  
[Chapter 735: Bet on A Duel](#)  
[Chapter 736: Convergence](#)  
[Chapter 737: Big Figures!](#)  
[Chapter 738: Another Gathering](#)  
[Chapter 739: Take the Bull by the Horns](#)  
[Chapter 740: Decisiveness and Strength](#)  
[Chapter 741: The Arrival of the Airboat](#)  
[Chapter 742: An Encounter between Acquaintance](#)  
[Chapter 743: Gold Power Law](#)  
[Chapter 744: An Encounter between Enemies](#)  
[Chapter 745: Fire](#)  
[Chapter 746: The Will of the God of Brilliance](#)  
[Chapter 747: Whip of the Fury](#)  
[Chapter 748: Force Majeure](#)  
[Chapter 749: Killing the Mace Muling](#)  
[Chapter 750: If I Come](#)  
[Chapter 751: The Power of Belief](#)  
[Chapter 752: Better Men](#)  
[Chapter 753: Arrival](#)  
[Chapter 754: Sacred Iceland Kingdom](#)  
[Chapter 755: The Eve of Coronation \(I\)](#)  
[Chapter 756: The Eve of Coronation \(II\)](#)  
[Chapter 757: Imagination about the Capital City](#)  
[Chapter 758: A Real Piece of God's Star](#)  
[Chapter 759: Double Statuses](#)  
[Chapter 760: Long Sight Peak](#)  
[Chapter 761: Tianfang City](#)  
[Chapter 762: Pushing Open the Door of Knight's World \(I\)](#)  
[Chapter 763: Pushing Open the Door of the Knight's World \(II\)](#)  
[Chapter 764: Decision](#)  
[Chapter 765: The Rotating Chakra Ceremony](#)  
[Chapter 766: Elder Mushen](#)  
[Chapter 767: Bidding a Farewell](#)  
[Chapter 768: Responsibilities](#)  
[Chapter 769: I'm the Leader of the Hurricane Corps](#)  
[Chapter 770: Three Lines](#)  
[Chapter 771: Surprises](#)  
[Chapter 772: Cultivation](#)

[Chapter 773: Shocking Strategies](#)  
[Chapter 774: Motherliness](#)  
[Chapter 775: The Liaison](#)  
[Chapter 776: The Mysterious Suitcase](#)  
[Chapter 777: The Eve before the New Year](#)  
[Chapter 778: Triggering Body-changing Bloodline](#)  
[Chapter 779: Deepening into Enemy's Rear](#)  
[Chapter 780: A Massacre](#)  
[Chapter 781: Setting a Trap](#)  
[Chapter 782: Big Trouble](#)  
[Chapter 783: Killing Unther](#)  
[Chapter 784: Fruits and Butterfly](#)  
[Chapter 785: Digging the Ground](#)  
[Chapter 786: Soul-chasing Butterfly](#)  
[Chapter 787: Being Firm](#)  
[Chapter 788: A Protracted Guerrilla](#)  
[Chapter 789: Will You Continue Your Dig?](#)  
[Chapter 790: A Nightmare](#)  
[Chapter 791: The Changes](#)  
[Chapter 792: A Disaster across the Blackson Humans Corridor](#)  
[Chapter 793: Conference](#)  
[Chapter 794: A Confidential Task](#)  
[Chapter 795: The Smell of Doomsday](#)  
[Chapter 796: The Unspoken Words](#)  
[Chapter 797: Breaking Through Kalay Mountain Range](#)  
[Chapter 798: Secondary Mutation](#)  
[Chapter 799: Leave and Return](#)  
[Chapter 800: The Reappearance of Gorath](#)